

A Practical
DISCOURSE
OF
G O D's Sovereignty :

WITH OTHER
MATERIAL POINTS

Derived Thence ;

V I Z.

<i>Of the Righteousness of God. Of Election.</i>	<i>}</i>	<i>}</i>	<i>Of Redemption; Of Effectual Calling; Of Perseverance.</i>
--	----------	----------	--

By **ELISHA COLES.**

EPHESIANS I. 9.
Who worketh all Things after the Counsel of his own Will.

GENESIS XVIII. 25.
Shall not the Judge of all the Earth do right ?

The **TWELFTH EDITION.**

EDINBURGH:

Printed by T. LUMISDEN and J. ROBERTSON, and sold
at their Printing-house in the *Fish-market.* M.DCC.XLV.

To the Christian READER. iii

THIS excellent treatise containing divers prime points of our religion, which believers souls do live upon every day, and in the lively sense whereof, with application to themselves, they enjoy and exercise sweet communion with God the Father, and his Son Jesus Christ, the mediator of the new covenant; upon those better hopes, and surer promises, of the doctrines here treated of; doth sufficiently commend itself to such as are thoroughly acquainted with, and experimentally exercised in, these things.

I have known the author long (full twenty eight years) to have had a spirit greatly addicted to, and affected with, the savoury knowledge of the truths here deliver'd. And tho' he hath not had the use and help of foreign languages, wherein these points have been mostly written; yet I may say of him (as 1 Tim. iv. 6.) He hath been long nourish'd up in the words of faith and good doctrine; and thereunto he hath so far attained, as to be able to cut the strongest sinews of the principal objections which the adversaries have invaded these truths with: And further, to establish the positive truth, hath back'd and confirm'd the same by solid arguments, and pertinent scriptures genuinely explain'd and open'd. And, which to me is yet more, he hath extracted the most spiritual quickning cordials, which the doctrine of grace and election affords plenty of, whereby to comfort all sorts of believers: Exhorting and directing the whole company and body of them, how to manage their faith between God and their own souls, in point of election; perswading them all to commit and betake themselves wholly to God's carrying on their salvation, in the way of election: And all along hath strewed his discourse with useful exhortations and applications of the doctrines he does deliver; mixing uses for practice, with the rational discussions, and the rugged controversies; which hath been a defect complain'd of in others to the reproach of the doctrine itself, and made an argument that the doctrine is not true, seeing omne verum est bonum, and both are inseparable affections of being. Upon these and like considerations I do heartily commend this treatise to the judicious readers, nothing doubting but that it will satisfy the weakest Christians, as it hath approv'd itself to several divines; hoping also, that this edition will do as much good to mens souls, as the two former have done. The blessing of heaven go with it.

April 21,
1678.

THOMAS GOODWIN.
THE

THE doctrines, in this treatise declared and vindicated, have exercised the thoughts and best abilities of many learned men. The opposition made against them by the *Pelagians* of old, excited divers of the antients to their just defence; whereby they receiv'd that light and establishment, as for many ages the church remain'd in the quiet possession and belief of them; until (of late) the *Jesuits*, *Socinians*, and some others, conspired again to supplant them; and therein had (probably) prevailed ere now, had not the Lord stirred up the spirits of many and great persons to stand on his side, and help to maintain that quarrel of his covenant. It is not unworthy our notice, and deepest resentment, how zealously affected some men are in behalf of such tenets as stand in direct opposition to the grace of God, and their own eternal happiness; how they spare neither arts nor calumnies to disgrace the assertors of those very truths that make up the mystery of godliness, yea, to scandalize and suppress the truths themselves; as if reason and learning were given to no better ends than to vilify religion: And further, how pronely addicted men are (having imbibed the *Arminian* points) to take in those that are of most fatal consequence; so far are those principles from yielding any effectual influence towards holiness or well-grounded peace, notwithstanding their pretended adaptedness to promote them; (which might be largely insisted on, but that the design'd brevity of this address forbids it.) But whatever the ends of *men* are, or their interest, in defaming the wisdom, sovereignty and grace of God, and that in a method more arrogant and daring than persons of the same principles have heretofore adventured to do; the LORD's ends, in permitting them, are holy and good; and we are assured, that he would not have suffered those dangerous errors to reinvade his church, and his glorious truths to be so coarsely, and contumeliously treated, but in order to their further illustration and conquest: And that therefore, as he hath, so he will (of his abundant goodness to the world, and faithfulness to his elect) raise up such as with meekness, light, and power, shall withstand their furious torrent, and transmit to the following generations those blessed and greatly important truths which the world so implacably are bent against, and seek to eradicate.

To the Christian Reader.

It is somewhat perceptible of itself (and so acknowledged by the author) that in writing this treatise he had little or no intercourse with books, but those of the holy scripture: (Which is here mention'd to magnify the grace of God that was with him.) And by this may be gather'd, that a serious and diligent consulting the sacred oracles, with an humble dependence upon God for teaching and success; as they are duties of great importance, so of answerable improvement, the properest and surest means of instruction touching the mystery of his will, with that orderly and harmonious connexion of the divine attributes for recovering apostate creatures from their dreadful lapse, and placing them in a condition transcendently better than their primitive state: All which by the *Pelagian* articles are reduced to nothing. Yea, here are some peculiar advantages which accompany his discourse; 1. That it is founded and built on the testimony of God alone; whose authority and truth are the only unerring rule and immovable basis of divine faith, and its properest touchstone; and the lesser diversion there is to other ways of proof and argumentation (in things of this nature) the more convincing, and free from retortion; and the sooner will our souls be brought to acquiescence and settlement. 2. That the doctrines being declared and vindicated, there is all along an *useful improvement* made of them, to excite and influence our hearts and lives according to the genuine tenor and import of those truths, very much beyond what the contrary doctrines have ever pretended to. It may also be a supplement to other books, where the same truths are worthily contended for, but yet defective in this particular; and so 'tis not only a work of good use in itself, but it also relieves these doctrines from one of the worst aspersions they have been calumniated with. Divers other things might be mentioned, which reflect a worth upon the ensuing discourse, and bespeak an esteem of it, which (for brevity's sake) are referr'd to the reader's judicious observation.

That the book may be entertained by *men* according to the desert of it, and blessed of *God* for the ends it is designed for and suited unto, is and shall be the desire of

John Owen.
S. Annesley.

Extract of a LETTER from a learned DIVINE,
unknown to the AUTHOR.

SIR,

*A*ltho' I be a stranger unto you, yet having read your excellent book (which I did but borrow neither) I thought good to let you understand, with how great delight I did read it, and also how great satisfaction and comfort I receiv'd by it. I have studied these points several years ago, very hard; being then put upon it by a strong adversary, one of subtil wit, tho' otherwise a very mean and plain man. But I have said often, that I was much beholden to him for his opposition; for I would not, for much worldly substance, be without that knowledge, which (I hope) thro' the grace of God, I then attain'd in those great points, by reason thereof. I think that then and since, I have read most of the best books that have been written of those points; but especially that book of books, the BIBLE. Yet, after all those other books, I must confess, that yours hath given me the most content and satisfaction, of all that I have read touching that subject. For you have most nervously and judiciously laid open the truth, and as strenuously refuted the objections. I bless and adore that divine grace of the Lord, who, of his rich goodness and mercy to his poor distressed and distracted church in this nation, hath raised you up, in an especial manner, to be such an instrument of his glory, in the vindicating of his sovereignty, especially in these high and mysterious points of predestination, particular redemption, the efficacy of grace in conversion, and the perseverance of the saints in faith and holiness. As touching the absoluteness of the covenant of grace, I cannot but admire to see how patly you jump with me. I us'd to say often several years ago (what I find now in your book) That, if the covenant of grace were not absolute, salvation would be as difficult by it as by the covenant of works; because it is as hard for a natural man to believe and live, as it is for him to do and live. Well, you have (in my judgment) performed your business most piously, practically, and strongly; and your arguments are invincible, many of which yet I had never met with: And I doubt not but you do return the praise and glory of all unto our great and gracious Lord, who by his mere free grace hath enabled you to perform this work, which is so much for the glory of his holy name. I commend you with your labours to the grace of our merciful Father, and rest

Your most affectionate friend,

Octob. 16th 1677.

W. W.

An Account of the Treatise and Publication.

THE principal heads of the following discourse (generally own'd by the churches of *Britain*) the author was somewhat instructed in from his childhood; having heard ('till a few years since) but little concerning the *general* point: *That* he means, which is commonly so called, as holding the grace of God in Christ to be generally designed and dispens'd alike to all; suspending the whole vertue and success thereof on the human will; without peculiar respect, or assistance afforded, to any, but what is given in common unto men. Which doctrine might rather be termed *general*, as having the generality of men in nature for patrons and abettors of it. Not that he thinks all who hold it to be in their natural state: For as, of most, their judgment is better than their practice; so of some, he hopes, their practice may be sounder than their judgment: But so to hold, and practise accordingly, he cannot but think extremely perillous to the souls of men. Divers conferences (accidentally) he had with those of that way, in all which he found it their drift to insinuate that principle; not caring much to discourse of any point else, how useful soever, and importantly needful to be known; but still diverting into that chanel: Maintaining also their notions, with that confidence of their own, and contempt of the contrary judgment; such uncomely reflections upon their opponents, and slight regard of the scriptures brought against them; as did in nowise become a contending for the faith: (which has made him think that ironical speech of *Job* to his Friends, too applicable to these, *No doubt but ye are the people, and wisdom shall die with you; Job xii. 2.*) He also found their tenets mostly grounded upon words and phrases of a variable construction, as not weighing the scope

of the texts, nor how the sense they gave of them might accord with those of a contrary tenor; still citing such as were plain and express, to be tried by those of a doubtful sound; whereas the contrary course had been more genuine, and nearest to find out the truth. Not that any scripture is doubtful in itself; or inconsistent with others; nor would seem so to us, if scope and context were duly weighed: But the same word being used on different occasions to a different purpose; an heedless attending to the contexture, induces the loss of its proper intendment. That he found among them a general agreement against our doctrine of *election*, is true; and no less true, that they differ among themselves as much as they do from us; only they bear *each other's* dissent more quietly than *ours*. Some of them hold election upon *works foreseen*: Others, That men are elected when they do *actually believe*, and not before: Others of them, That no man is elected, till he hath *persever'd* in believing to the last moment of his life: And others again, That there is no election at all, of *particular persons as such*, but of the entire *species* of men, from eternity. This put him upon searching the scriptures more *setly* touching the doctrine of *election*; wherein the farther he went, the more he was confirmed in what he had first received: And, as he went on, found those other points of *peculiar redemption*, *effectual calling*, and *final perseverance*, so interwoven with that of *election*, and dependent thereon, as very naturally drew on a discussion of these also. And, as preparatory thereto, it seemed expedient to preface the whole with the doctrine of *God's sovereignty*, together with his *righteousness*; the reasons whereof, with its usefulness, ye may find in the treatise itself. It also lay before him, to observe what useful instructions derived from these doctrines above those of the contrary side; which he hopes will not be meanly considerable to those who have their senses spiritually exercised to discern.

Of this work was oftentimes a stop, and laying aside, as resolv'd to proceed no farther: And this, not from the want, but redundancy, of matter which he found in the scriptures for it, but himself much too narrow to comprehend, and to make it out; partly also from the difficulty of reducing his mingling fragments to an orderly consistence. But, by one im-

Treatise and Publication.

12

Impulsive occurrence or other, (among which, the inward delight he had in the work, tho' sometimes intermitted, was not the least) it still revived and went on afresh; until (by degrees) his gleanings grew into a shock, which then he bound up, and design'd it only for private use. But so it was, that some parts thereof (providentially) came to the view and hearing of certain antient and sober Christians; who expressing an hearty good-liking and approbation, somewhat warily advised the printing of it for more general use; as that which might help, at least, to confirm the tenure of those already possess'd of the truth, but still remain subject to sifting. One who had cast a favourable eye on the contrary points, profess'd himself well satisfy'd with what he had found in this, touching the impotency of natural free-will, tho' assisted with general grace; urging also the publishing of it, for that he thought its *plainness* might render it more convincing to some, than scholastick disputes, which are found to obscure and puzzle, rather than illuminate and settle, the judgment of illiterate persons. Another consideration was, the effect it might have to antidote *young professors*, who, being scarce out of the shell of their natural understanding, are prone to be receptive of notions that spring from a covenant of works; which by means of so plain a discourse of nature's weakness, together with the necessity, constant readiness, and invincible efficacy of divine grace, they might happily be armed against.

Repeated instances prevailed, at length, for a willingness to make it publick, in case it should also obtain approbation from approved divines; whose test and judgment he would first submit it unto, and accordingly did: Retaining yet a deep sense of his manifold insufficiency for such a work, and praying that his personal meanness and obscurity may not prejudice the truth.

This being the account formerly given, some later occurrences have induced this farther *addition*. After the first impression, the author was oftentimes encounter'd by some of the contrary perswasion, whereby he came to know more of their spirit and principles than before, but not to his better liking of either: He speaks but of such as himself had conversed with.

Some he found to cry up that excellent creature *man*, and the great things he is able to do: A taking lure! and

con-

consequently the more dangerous to such as are not well settled in principles, because of that marvellous aptness that is in nature to be taken with its own commendation, and to fancy itself considerable in procuring its own happiness; as also from the difficulty of taking up our rest in the will of another, whose wisdom and love we are little acquainted with, nor can be, until we are pitch'd upon it. But, for the *present* ability of this *once* excellent creature we have but verbal report; and must therefore suspend our belief, until they produce some creditable evidence for it. If those that assert it have such a talent, it should not be hid in the Earth; they should still be turning the penny, and the greatness of their stock should be seen by the richness of their effects. 'Tis no point of honour or prudence, to boast of possessions, and all things at will; and yet live at the rate of an underling tenant, who holds his All at the will of another: 'Tis surely a rational thing, that to whom much is given, of him the more should be requir'd. It behoves therefore to ponder those serious questions, *What singular things do ye?* and, *What do ye make more than others?* i. e. What earnings have ye made of those larger talents ye profess to be endowed with? This they should give some tolerable account of, or else they'll be thought to boast of a false gift; for it is not words, but *performances*, must justify abilities, and make out the virtue of principles. Their fellow-christians are *of themselves not sufficient to think*: How then will those answer it, with all those solid endowments, to be found even as they?

And, because scriptural deductions are most pressing, some have a device to put by their force without resistance: What they cannot answer, they will not understand; it must bear the name of *unintelligible* notion. The vanity of which evasion is obvious to any that will but consider it; since the rudiments of any science, which by instruction and use are familiar to one, may be strange and uncouth to another, tho' of more pregnant parts than he, and better skill'd in other faculties.

Another gin is their needles commixing, and consequently perplexing, of *secret* things with those *revealed*: When as they cannot be ignorant, that the *decree* is God's rule, (which cannot be known to us but by the event) the *law* and the *testimony* ours; by which alone all doctrines are to be tried; and

Treatise and Publication.

xi

our whole course, both of judgment and practice, to be regulated here, and judged at last. We all acknowledge *dark sayings* in scripture, and things *hard to be understood*: But the difficulties rise not so much from the word, as a natural unbelief, prejudice, and darkness within; with those crooked, wrinkled, or discoloured *medicines* men commonly look through at spiritual things, which needs must render the objects they look at unlike to themselves.

There is also another snare, as catching as any other, and as worthy to be cautioned against: The doctrine of *free grace* being so illustrious in scriptures, as not to be spoken against; they'll talk as high for it in general terms as any other, and tell us what great pretensions their doctrine hath to magnify *grace*, and that they design nothing more than the honour of *that*; when as, indeed, it is not *grace*, but a *contrary* thing set up with that name: For follow the stream either upward or downward, and as it all rises from, so it all runs into *freedom of will*, and *advancement of self*; as is obvious to any impartial observer.

The last thing I shall take notice of at present, are certain (seemingly accidental) queries, modestly pretended for argument's sake, to clear up obscurities, and accord contradictions; which (tho' a good work in itself, if orderly managed) they follow so far, and in such manner, that they do, in effect, bring principles into question, and craze the very groundwork of religion.

These things are mentioned, not to uncover the weakness of persons, but of principles, and that only as they derogate from the honour of free grace, and tend to subverting the soul; and the end of it is, to prevent such as may be hovering about (as not knowing where to settle) that they may not be caught by the enticingness of words, which is so contrary to the simplicity of the gospel.

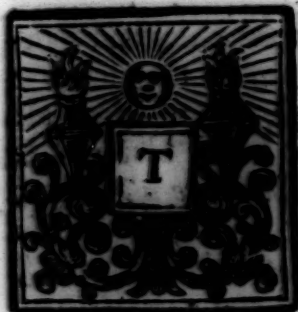
What remains then, but that we bless God, adoring his glorious wisdom and grace, that matters of present duty, and greatest importance to us, are so plainly revealed; and eternal salvation so little concern'd in the present conciliating of seeming discord! There's enough manifested to take up our time and strength; and our living up to *that* we know, is the readiest way

way to know more : *He that will do his will, shall know of his doctrine.* And in the fulness of time those seeming discordances shall have an illustrious reconciliation ; and they that have most firmly believ'd now, against all their carnal reasonings, and unreasonable contradictions, shall have not the weakest reflections and rays of glory from the lustre of that day : And this (I suppose) he had an eye to (a person of no ordinary rank for human accomplishments) who, treating of God's decrees, did freely confess, *That he could not indeed comprehend them, but would captivate reason to the obedience of faith.* With which I close ; subjoining only a word of religious education, viz. That tho' it do not confer grace, it may yet prove (and hath so to many) a good preservative from evils in practice, and errors in judgment, which others (who had not that gracious privilege) have more naturally fallen into. Besides, when God comes to work effectually, those notions of sin, of Christ, and of grace, (of which before they had but the form) have prov'd of singular use to facilitate the work. That the Lord will vouchsafe his blessing with it, is the prayer of his servant,

ELISHA COLES.



A
PRACTICAL DISCOURSE
OF
GOD's *Sovereignty.*



HIS high and tremendous attribute, being an ocean that has neither bank nor bottom, may not lightly be lanch'd into by *any*, tho' ever so strongly built and well-mann'd (much less by so weak a vessel) without a divine compass, and an anchor within the vail. That the author of this discourse came into it, was not of choice or designment, but of course and emergent necessity. Could he have found another basis to repose that doctrine upon, which was (at first) his only intended subject, he had not touch'd upon this: But, apparently to him, no ground would bear the weight of *election*, but that of *sovereignty*; and there it fixed as on a rock: All the lines of its whole circumference running there, and resting there, as in their centre, where also the scripture hath laid it, *Rom. ix. Eph. i. 4, &c.* And, however it be a foundation disallowed of Men, every observing Christian shall find, that without acknowledging divine sovereignty for the original, supreme and unaccountable disposer of persons and things, he shall want a principal means of supporting his faith, and quieting his understanding in the course of *common* providences; much more

14 *A Practical Discourse*

of these *superior* occurrences, and *supernatural* truths, which he is eternally concern'd about.

In this preface I shall treat first of God's *sovereignty*, and then of his *righteousness* as its natural adjunct. The sum of the first lies in this proposition, *viz.*

That the great God, blessed for ever, hath an absolute power and right of dominion over his creatures, to dispose and determine of them as seemeth him good.

That there is such a power, and that this power belongs to God, no other reason needs be assign'd, but that *he is God, and there is none besides him* : There can be no more, because,
 1. There can be but one *Infinite* ; for such a Being fills heaven and earth, and so no place or room for another. 2. There can be but one *Omnipotent* ; for he that is *such* hath all others under his feet : Besides, where *one* can do all, *more* would be impertinent. 3. There can be but one *Supreme*. Supreme power may reside in many ; (as in mix'd monarchies and commonwealths) but, as law-makers and supreme, they are but *one*. 4. There can be but one *first Cause*, from which all things else derive their original ; and that is this blessed *One* we are speaking of ; of *whom, and for whom are all things*, 1 Cor. viii. 6. And, if he be the *author of all*, he needs must have a *sovereign* right and power to *determine all*, both as to their being, order, efficacy, and end.

That sovereign power belongs to GOD, is a truth so natural, and obvious to reason, that other proof seems as needless, as that the sun is the fountain of light : Nor shall I suppose that any who read this discourse can so far forget themselves to be creatures, as to seek a proof of their Creator's sovereignty ; the things that are seen, so loudly proclaiming his eternal power and Godhead. But since, with our easy admitting the *notion*, it is none of the smallest difficulties to own it in our *practice*, and bear ourselves answerable towards him ; since also so huge a weight is born on the shoulders of this *divine* attribute, and our souls are so highly concern'd in the *interest and influence* of it ; it needs must be our duty, and well worthy our time, to look o'er the instances of it, and to mark and consider them well, as things greatly importing
 our

of GOD's Sovereignty.

19

our instruction; whereby we may know something of the greatness of that God in whose hands our souls are, as also of our infinite distance from him, and nothingness to him; and so, with the more humbleness of mind and self-abasement, to also with the more faith and creature-like assiance, submit unto him, and bear ourselves upon him. To this end the scriptures have inrolled several *ensigns* of sovereignty; by which (as by so many footsteps) we are led to the absolute will and power of God, as the supreme cause and disposer of all.

The great act of sovereignty was God's decree for making the world; and of doing, or permitting to be done, whatever should be in it, to the folding of it up. The heavens and the earth, and all the hosts of them, as yet had no being: It was at his pleasure, *whether* he would make them or not; And, if he would, *what* being he would give them; to *what* end, and *how* that end should be accomplished. And that these were all ascertained by the decree, is evident: For, *known unto God were all his works* (which he would do in time) *from the beginning of the world*, Acts xv. 18. The scheme and substance whereof (and I hope without intrusion) may be drawn to this effect: That the great God, most high and holy, being infinitely good, happy and blessed in himself, was also infinitely prompt and well-pleased to communicate thereof to others; to which end, he design'd to rise up creatures, angels, and men: That, for the manifestation of his sovereignty, he would confirm a certain number of those angels in their primitive state; leaving the rest to themselves, who, falling from that state, should be cast down, and reserv'd in chains of darkness unto the judgment of the great day: That, in this lower world, he would set up the first man to be the head and representative of all that should come of him: That this single person should be created in the image of God, fit to enjoy communion with him, and endow'd with power to abide therein: That to manifest the weakness of creatures, and their perpetual dependence upon God, he would thus leave him to his first stock, with a perfect freedom of will, to retain, or lose it at his own choice; but not without setting before him the happiness or ruin that would certainly follow his well or ill using that freedom; and, being

so left, the fallen angel tempting him to disobedience, and also prevailing, both himself and all his posterity should by this revolt fall under the curse: That, for the declaration of his sovereign *grace*, he would (and accordingly did) chuse a certain number of *Adam's* posterity, (in themselves all alike depraved and lost) and ordain them to eternal life; and to make known the power of his *wrath*, and his just displeasure against sin, he would leave the rest in that state of perdition they would bring themselves into: That, of these vessels of wrath, Satan himself (whom they chose to follow) should be the head and ruler, as also over them that were *elected*, for a time, *viz.* until the *Messiah*, their true and proper head, and into whom he had chosen them, should rescue them out of his power: That to this end (and that he might be known to be *just*, as well as *merciful*, in justifying of them) the Son of God should take on him the place of a second *Adam*, and come into the world with a human body; in which he should fulfil all righteousness, and by the infinite vertue and merit of his death should satisfy the law in all its demands, destroy the devil, dissolve his works, and reconcile the *elect* unto God: That he should be raised again from the dead, and invested with all power befitting the captain of their salvation; that so he might effectually minister to them whatever should be requisite for bringing his sons to glory. This I take to be the sum of God's decree, the *great* ensign or *standard* royal of *sovereignty*, whereof all the other are *effects* or *consequents*, and *subordinate* thereto.

The *first* visible ensign of *sovereignty* was *creation*, or God's giving the world an *actual* existence in time according to his decree *from everlasting*; bringing that huge, yet void and formless mass, at first out of *nothing*; and then, this glorious fabrick out of that *confusion*: His hanging the earth upon nothing: His assigning to every sort of creatures such form and station, order, use and efficacy, and impressing on them such laws and instincts of nature, as seemed him good; (but *all* in a regular subserviency to the good of the *whole*) which also was effected by his word. What he would, was *done* with that *immediate* suddenness, as if the things themselves had proceeded with his *breath* (a). The instant production of
light

light (b); the waters separating from the other elements, and gathering into a body, and their going up and down to the place he had founded for them (c), with many others, (of which ye have an index in the first of *Genesis*) are witnesses of it: As also, his so fixing this 'stablishment, that *they continue this day according to that ordinance* (d).

Consequent to this, as a *second* ensign of *sovereignty*; is that *universal providence*, by which the creation is *sustain'd*, and all inferior causes guided to their designed end; and this notwithstanding all supposable accidents, which might possibly happen to obstruct or divert them. And that the creatures have, at times, deviated from their first rules and settlement, is no derogation to the doctrine of God's sovereignty, but rather an illustration of it; as shewing, that the creatures are still in his hand, as clay in the potter's. Hence we find their innate propensions to be sometimes suspended; otherwhiles acted *beyond*, and at times again quite *contrary* to, the law of nature: And this, not casually, nor by the force of created powers, nor yet for any private or self-concern; but to serve some special and superior end, which their Lord had to be done. To instance a few; and,

1. Of creatures *without life*: As the windows of heaven opening, and the fountains of the great deep breaking up (notwithstanding the firmament above, and the bounds beneath) to drown the world of ungodly men (e). The Red-sea's dividing and standing up as a wall, to make a way for his people's escape (f). The sun and moon's standing still till they were avenged on their enemies (g). The stars to the same end fighting against *Sisera* (h). The sun's going back in *Abaz's* dial, to help *Hezekiah's* faith (i). The fiery furnace devouring those at a distance, who cast in those holy confessors; and not so much as touching them that were cast into it (k). The winds and the seas, which are such impetuous (and, one would think, even lawless) creatures, they stir not, nor breathe, but to fulfil his word (l).

2. Of *living* creatures, that have not the use of reason: How readily went they be pairs into *Noah's* ark, at God's

B

ap-

(b) *Gen* 1. 3, & 9. (c) *Psal.* 104. 8. (d) *Psal.* 119. 91. (e) *Gen* 7. 11. (f) *Exod.* 14. 22. (g) *Job.* 10. 13. (h) *Judg.* 5. 20. (i) *2 Kings* 20. 11. (k) *Dan.* 3. 22, & 27. (l) *Psal.* 148. 8. *Mark* 4. 30, & 42.

appointment (m)! The frogs, lice, locusts, &c. with what supernatural boldness did they assault and perplex the Egyptians! that the magicians themselves confessed, the finger of God was in it (n); and as strangely withdrew, when their work was done (o). Witnessed also by the dumb ass's reproving the prophet's madness (p). The lion's killing the seduced prophet for breaking God's command, yet not eating the carcass, nor tearing his ass (q). A ravenous bird bringing *Elijah* food in his solitary condition (r). The whale's receiving *Jonah*, and at God's command casting him on dry-land, without harm (s). The lions also not hurting *Daniel* in their den, yet greedily devouring his accusers (t). It must needs be a sovereign power, which thus intends, restrains, inverts, the course of nature at his will.

Thirdly, Another ensign, asserting God's supremacy and rightful dominion, is the general vote and subscription of men, especially the most knowing, and such as best understand him.

1. They own it in their practice or actions. *Abel* offers the firstlings of his flock to God (u). *Abraham* leaves his native country at God's command, to go he knew not whither (x). He also offers his only and innocent son *Isaac*, in whose life and posterity all nations were to be blessed (y). *Job*, when strip'd of all, falls down and worships (z). When his two sons were destroyed by fire from heaven, *Aaron* held his peace (a). *Eli*, when that tingling sentence was denounced against his house, says, *It is the Lord, let him do what seemeth him good* (b). *David*, when driven from God's sanctuary, and his throne usurped by *Absalom*; *Behold, here I am, let him do to me as seemeth good to him* (c). The men of *Nineveh*, their destruction was pronounced peremptorily, of which they had no promise of remission, and consequently no visible ground of hope; yet they believed God, fasted, lay in sackcloth, and turned from their evil way (d).
2. They likewise own it in their confessions and attestations. *Melchize-deck* and *Abraham* do both stile him, the most high God, possessor of heaven and earth (e). *Job* professeth, that tho' he

(m) Gen. 7. 8, & 9. (n) Exod. 8. 19. (o) ver. 13. (p) 2 Pet. 2. 16. (q) 1 Kings 13. 26, & 28. (r) 1 Kings 17. 6. (s) *Jonah* 1. 17. with *Comp.* 2. 10. (t) Dan. 6. 22, & 24. (u) Gen. 4. 4. (x) Gen. 12. 4. (y) Gen. 22. 2, & 10. (z) *Job* 1. 21. (a) Lev. 10. 2, & 3. (b) 1 Sam. 3. 18. (c) 2 Sam. 15. 26. (d) *Jonah* 3. 5, 8. (e) Gen. 14. 19, & 22.

he were righteous, yet, if God will contend with him, he will not answer, but make supplication to his judge (f). The Lord hath made all things for himself (g). For his pleasure they are and were created (h). We are the clay, and thou our potter (i). He worketh all things after the counsel of his own will (k). He giveth not account of any of his matters (l). In his hand is the soul of every living thing (m). He is the God of the spirits of all flesh (n). All nations before him are less than nothing and vanity (o). He stills the tumult of the people (p). If it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it (q). The counsel of the Lord, that shall stand (r). The lot is cast into the lap, but the whole disposing thereof is of the Lord (s). The kingdom is the Lord's, and he is governor among the nations (t). Nebuchadnezzar, that proud and potent monarch, whose greatness reached unto heaven, and his dominion to the end of the earth: All nations trembled before him; whom he would, he slew; and whom he would, he kept alive; who said in his heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God, I will be like the most High; And who is that God that shall deliver out of my hand? Yet even he, this child of pride, is made to confess One higher than himself, and to bow before him; proclaiming to the world, That the most High doth according to his will, in the army of heaven, and among the inhabitants of the earth; and none can stay his hand, or say unto him, What dost thou? And those that walk in pride he is able to abase (u). It might further be instanced in Cain, Pharaoh, Balaam, and other wicked men; how they were even constrained to acknowledge the sovereignty of God; as appears by comparing Exod. v. 2. with Ch. ix. 27, 28. & Numb. xxii. 18. Darius also in Dan. vi. 26, 27, 28.

Fourthly, Another evidence, or witness, we have from the angels, who are great in power: Notwithstanding which, they do perfectly own and submit to the sovereignty of God. Where subjects are numerous, wise and magnanimous, and withal perfectly submit to the will of their Lord, it argues their

B 2

(f) Job 9. 15. (g) Prov. 16. 4. (h) Gen. 1. 11. (i) Isa. 64. 8. (k) Eph. 1. 11. (l) Job 33. 3. (m) Job 12. 10. (n) Numb. 16. 22. (o) Isa. 40. 17. (p) Psal. 65. 7. (q) Acts 5. 39. (r) Prov. 19. 21. Psal. 33. 11. (s) Prov. 16. 33. (t) Psal. 22. 28. (u) Dan. 4. 22. Ch. 5. 19. Ch. 3. 15. Ch. 4. 34. 35. 37. Isa. 14. 13, 14.

A Practical Discourse

their Lord is an absolute sovereign: And *such* subjects are the angels. [1.] The *elect* or good angels: These shew it by their ready submission to any service their Lord is pleased to appoint them. They are his *intelligences* in this lower world (a): Not that he needs their advices, but to shew a little of the majesty of his kingdom. They are also his *messengers*; he sends them on his errands, to negotiate his affairs among men, and to reveal his purposes both concerning his church, and the world (b): They are his *chariots* (c), his *reapers* (d), the *executioners* of his judgments (e), and Christ's attendants at his coming (f).

[2.] The *apostate* angels or *wicked* spirits: Tho' the testimony we have from these is not from love or good-will, yet it is as great an evidence of God's sovereignty as any other; in that, being enemies to God, proud and imperious, they are yet *over-awed* and compelled to submit. And hence it was that the devil dared not to answer again, when that fatal sentence was pronounced upon him for seducing our first parents (g). We have him also presenting himself before the Lord, to give account of his actions: And touch *Job*, or any thing he had, he durst not without leave from God; nor vary a jot from the rule prescribed him (h). In the evangelists are many instances of Christ's commanding them forth *with authority*; yea, a whole *legion* at once (i). Nor could they so much as enter into the swine, without his leave (k). And, which is more, they were subject to the *apostles*, who had but a *delegated* or second-hand power committed to them (l).

Fifthly, We have the *Lord himself* asserting his *sovereign* prerogative. In how lofty a stile, and with what imperial authority, doth he utter himself to *Pharaoh*! And in very deed for this cause have I raised thee up, for to shew my power on thee (m). The apostle quotes the place to prove, that God may raise up men, and appoint them to what use and service he will (n). *Who hath made the seeing, or the blind? have not I the Lord* (o)? *I kill, and I make alive* (p).

I

(a) *Zech.* 6. 5, 6, 7. *Job* 2. 1. (b) *Dan.* 2. 19. & 8. 13, 16. *Ch.* 1. 21. *Ch.* 11. *Ezek.* 1. 4. (c) *Psalms* 68. 17. (d) *Matth.* 13. 39, & 49. (e) *2 Sam.* 24. 16. *2 Kings* 19. 35. (f) *Matth.* 25. 31. (g) *Gen.* 3. 25. (h) *Job* 2. 1, & 6. (i) *Luke* 8. 30, 33. (k) *Mark* 5. 12. (l) *Luke* 10. 17. (m) *Exod.* 9. 16. (n) *Rom.* 9. 17. (o) *Exod.* 4. 6, 11. (p) *Deut.* 32. 39.

I will shew mercy on whom I will shew mercy (q) I am the first, and I am the last; and besides me there is no God: And who, as I, shall call, and shall declare it, and set it in order before me? since I appointed the antient people, and the things that are coming and shall come (r). My counsel shall stand, I will do all my pleasure (s). My word shall accomplish that which I please; it shall prosper in the thing whereto I send it (t). And if the prophet be deceived, I the Lord have deceiv'd that prophet, and I will destroy him (u). A remarkable story is that of the lying spirit, and the effectual commission he had from God, to perswade, and also to prevail (x). How should we tremble before God at the hearing of such a word! But yet I do not reckon the last two as acts of pure sovereignty, but rather of his justice; as punishing one sin by leaving to another; according to that in *Rom. i. 21, 28. Because that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, nor liked to retain him in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind. And yet there is here an impression of sovereignty, in that he deals not so with all, who are alike obnoxious to it.*

Sixthly, Another ensign of sovereignty is form'd of those several acts and institutes, which cannot be derived (at least not so immediately) from any other attribute as that of sovereignty. I shall instance a few, viz. The putting of man's everlasting condition upon his eating or non-eating the fruit of such a tree (y). In not destroying Adam presently upon his disobedience; and in the free promises of a Saviour, unsought unto for it (z). In protecting Cain, when he had forfeited his life to justice (a.) In preserving Ham from the deluge, tho' as wicked as those that perished (b). In ordering the blessing to Jacob, who sought it unduly; and denying it to Esau, who sought it diligently, and to whom it belong'd of natural right (c.) In the sudden turning of Esau's heart to love Jacob, whom he had inveterately hated, and came with full purpose to destroy him; yet in a moment his heart is melted, he weeps on his neck, and offers himself and soldiers to be his convoy (d). In causing a fear to fall on the

B 3

Anno-

(q) *Exod. 33. 19.* (r) *Isa. 44. 6, 7.* (s) *Chap. 46. 10.* (t) *Isa. 55. 11.* (u) *Ezek. 14. 9.* (x) *1 Kings 22.* (y) *Gen. 2. 17.* (z) *Gen. 3. 15.* (a) *Gen. 4. 15.* (b) *Gen. 7. 13.* (c) *Gen. 27. 19, 34, 38.* (d) *Gen. 27. 41. with Chap. 32. 6, & Chap. 33. 4, 12.*

Amorites, that they did not pursue *Jacob*, when highly provoked by his son's cruelty on the Men of *Sechem* (e). In sending a message of peace to *Sihon*, whom he had determined to destroy; and to that end had hardened his spirit, and made him obstinate (f). In causing those nations to destroy one another, who came leagued to destroy *his people* (g). In destroying *Esau's* mount *irreparably*, and *for ever*; when as *Israel*, whose land also was full of sin, shall not be forsaken (h): Especially considering, that these were the several effects of his *loving* the one, and *bating* the other, and that *before they had done either good or evil* (i). In sending *Ezekiel* to a rebellious house that *would not hear*, and *not sending him to them that would* (k). In *hiding* the mysteries of his kingdom from the *wise* and prudent, and *revealing* them to *babes* (l); and speaking in *parables* to the *multitude*, *lest they should be converted* (m).

It is further manifest, by the Lord's punishing (sometimes) *lesser* trespasses, and that *severely*, and *in his own*; while winking at those of a *greater* magnitude in *other* men. *Moses* is excluded *Canaan* for a *hasty word*, tho' smartly provoked (n); when *Jonah* is but mildly reprov'd for passionately *expostulating* (o). *Uzziah* dies for but *touching* the Ark (p), when the *Philistines* bore it away in *triumph* (q). *Hezekiah* but shews the ambassadors from *Babylon* his house and treasures, and for this his sons and all must go into captivity (r). Not that any sin is little in itself, or punished beyond its demerit; but the Lord is pleas'd thus to do, partly to shew his displeasure against sin, and that he will not bear with it even in those that are *dearest* to him: But partly also (if not chiefly in such like cases) to set forth his *sovereign greatness*, and the *uncontroulableness* of his matters (s). The 73d Psalm is full to the same purpose. *That* also of *Job*, and the manner of God's dealings with him, is much to be remark'd: He had lived a very strict and holy life; (*not a man like Job in all the earth*; the Lord himself seems to glory in him) unto which all outward blessings were promised, and freedom from such

suf-

(e) *Gen.* 35. 5. (f) *Deut.* 2. 26. (g) *2 Chr.* 20. 1, 22. 23. (h) *Obad.* ver. 9, 16, 18, 21. *Mal.* 1. 4. (i) *Mal.* 1. 2, 3. *Rom.* 9. 11, 13. (k) *Ezek.* 3. 6, 7. & *Matth.* 11. 21. (l) *Matth.* 11. 25. (m) *Mark* 4. 11, 12. *Acts* 16. 6, 7. (n) *Deut.* 32. 51, 52. (o) *Jonah* 4. (p) *1 Chron.* 13. 9, 10. (q) *1 Sam.* 5. 1. (r) *2 Kings* 20. 13, 17. (s) *Job* 33. 13.

sufferings; and, when bereft of all, *beld fast his integrity* (t): Yet the Lord goes on to afflict him, and leaves him wholly (saving his life) in Satan's power. Had he been a *wicked man*, (as his friends objected) those sufferings had evidenced the justice of God; but *now his sovereignty*; which also seems to be intended by that speech of God to Satan, *I'hou movedst me against him, to destroy him without a cause*,

Seventhly, There are yet other footsteps of sovereignty, by which that high and holy attribute is farther illustrated to us; as namely, *the Lord's over-ruling the designs and actions of men, to bring his own counsels to pass*; albeit improper in their own nature, yea *disservient* thereto, and sometimes (by men) contrived on purpose to *prevent* them. The project of buliding *Babel's* tower to keep that rebellious rout together, it turn'd to their utter dispersion (u). *Jacob's* dissimulation, and palpable abuse of his father's infirmity, it proved a means to obtain his blessing, and that contrary to his settled intendment (x). *Laban* dealt hardly with *Jacob*, to keep him low, and to serve himself of him; but God takes occasion thence to give him *Laban's* substance, and that by *Laban's* consent and agreement (y). To obviate *Joseph's* dreams, his brethren sell him into *Egypt*: And by this means the Lord keeps them all alive, and accomplisheth that honour to *Joseph*, which they *serly* intended to *prevent* (z). *Pharaoh* lays insuperable burdens on the people to *diminish* them, and the Lord *multiplies* them under it; *the more they were oppressed, the faster they grew* (a). *Moses*, a keeper of sheep, a man slow of speech, and one that had no mind to the work (b), yet he shall be God's ambassador to *Pharaoh*, the proudest and most inflexible monarch upon earth) and bring *Israel* out of bondage. And who shall be his commander in chief, to deliver his people from their potent oppressors, but *Deborah*, a woman (c)? At another time *Gideon*, whose family was poor in *Manassih*, and *be the least in his father's house* (d): And tho' he had a numerous and powerful enemy to deal with, and (one would think) had need of all the hands he could make to fight them, yet his army of two and thirty thousand

B 4

must

(t) *Job* 1. 8. and *Chap.* 2. 3. (u) *Gen.* 11. 4. and 8. (x) *Gen.* 27. 18. to 29. (y) *Gen.* 29. (z) *Gen.* 37. 9, 20, 28. *Ch.* 41. 47. *Ch.* 42. 6. *Ch.* 50. 18, 20. (a) *Exod.* 1. 12. (b) *Exod.* 4. 10, 13. (c) *Judges* 4. 9. (d) *Judges* 6. 15.

A Practical Discourse

must be reduced to *three hundred men*, and they have no other arms but *trumpets and lamps* in their *pitchers*; and by *these* he delivers them from that huge host (e). And much like unto this was *Shamgar's* killing six hundred men with an ox-goad (f), and *Samson* a thousand with the jaw-bone of an ass (g). It may farther be traced, in his producing *contrary* effects by the *same* cause; and then again, the *same* effects by causes *contrary* (h). So *Daniel* and his fellows, they had a fairer countenance with pulse and water, than those who eat of the king's own provision (i). It is further evidenced by his causing the wrath of man to turn to his praise; which, in the nature and tendency of it, is to destroy them that praise him (k). By his catching the wise in their own craftiness, and causing them to fall by their own devices (l); witness *Ahab* (m) and *Haman* (n). The persecution of the saints at *Jerusalem* was designed to suppress the doctrine of Christ; which yet was thereby *dispersed* into many countries, and caus'd to grow *mightily* (o). So the preacher's *imprisonment* proved to the *furtherance* of the gospel (p). And, since the scriptures were finish'd, human stories, and our own observation, do abundantly prove the matter in hand. Do but consider how it prevailed to the dethroning of Satan, and turning the world upside-down and this by means the weakest and most unlikely (to reason) that could be pitched upon: Not the sword and spear, the bow and battle-ax, the barded horse, and the martial heroes of the earth, but by the bare word of God: And this, not by the hand of the *learned scribes* and *Pharisees*, *lawyers*, *doctors*, *poets*, *philosophers*; but by poor *illiterate fishermen*, *carpenters*, *publicans*, *tent-makers*. And who shall be the subjects and party militant of this never to be conquered kingdom? not the *wise* and *prudent*, *mighty* and *noble*; but *babes*, the *poor*, *weak*, *base*, *despised*, and *things that are not*; and by these he confounds the things that are (q). And by what arms? *patience*, and *faith in the blood of the Lamb* (r).

Consider also the *constant persecution* of the church, and that by men of all sorts, especially those of greatest power and

(e) *Judges* 7. 3, 6, 7. (f) *Judges* 3. 31. (g) *Ch.* 15. 15. (h) *Exod.* 4. 6, 7. (i) *Dan.* 1. 15. (k) *Psalms* 76. 10. (l) *Job* 5. 12, 13. *Psalms* 5. 30. (m) *1 Kings* 22. 20, 22. (n) *Esther* 7. 10. (o) *Acts* 8. 1, 4. (p) *Phil.* 1. 12, 14. (q) *1 Cor.* 1. 27. (r) *Rev.* 12. 11, *Ch.* 14. 12.

and policy; the *barbarous devastations* that have been made upon it; and with what *implacable enmity* the world is edged against it; and that yet it *stands invincible*, and is still *getting ground*: Ye cannot but acknowledge the evident footsteps of *sovereign power*; that the most High beareth rule over all(s); and as for the counsels of the wise, he turneth them backward (t)-

Eighthly, An especial ray of this glorious power shines forth in God's *actual predominating* and *subduing* the spirits of men, in *calling* and *converting* whom he will. One would think that a *rational being* should better discern his own interest, and, out of choice, comply with the will of his maker, as who must needs best know what is best for his creature, and who in reason can have no other design upon him but his own good: But we find it otherwise; the best things degenerated turn the worst, and are hardliest reduc'd. Of all creatures, man fallen doth most avert, impugn and resist, when God would turn him out of his natural course: Notwithstanding the forest of evils do attend his present state, and all desirable happiness would apparently follow his change; yet, so wedded he is to his lusts, and headstrong in his own Will, that none of these things move him: But on he goes, and on he will, yea tho' an incensed angel with a drawn sword should withstand him. To crush them to nothing, or break them in pieces, were easily effected; a little of divine power would do that: But to *humble* a proud and *lofty* spirit; to *soften* and *melt* an *obdurate* heart; to *tame*, *meeken*, and *reconcile* a *sanguinary rebel*; to change the very *inwards* of one *habituated in sin* and *enmity* against God, and make him pliable to *divine impressions*: This highly proclaims the *exceeding greatness* of his power; 'tis a glorious trophy of *divine sovereignty*. Which is also farther conspicuous, and greatly illustrated, in *maintaining* the work begun, and bearing it on through all oppositions: For there needs the same almightiness of power to preserve the new creation, as at first to raise it. The way of God being altogether upwards and supernatural, there's a great proneness in creatures to revolt from it, (like a rolling stone on the steep of a hill.) The remains of old nature would, torrent-like, bear

() Dan. 4. 25, 26. (t) Isa. 44. 25.

bear down *all*, if sovereign power did not bar up the one, and sustain the other. For a *spark of divine nature* to live in the breast of a *lapsed creature*, is as great a miracle, and as high an effect of sovereign power, as all the instances before enumerated, and more.

Ninthly, The *sovereignty of God* proclaims itself with a yet more astonishing glory, in his eternal disposure of mens everlasting condition. To *shew or not to shew mercy* to persons equally dignified (or rather indignified) in themselves: To make of the same lump, one vessel to honour, and another to dishonour, is the sublimest act, and most apparent demonstration, of *sovereign power* concerning men. The reason of which (and that to satisfaction) *might* have been given, and *would*, had it befitted the *greatness of God*, or the trust and reverence we owe to him: But for the present he is pleased to give none other but that of his *right*; he may do what he will with his own, *Rom. ix. 18.*

Lastly, Most transcendently glorious, and for ever adorable, is the sovereignty of God, in his ordaining the Man *JESUS*, who was *holy, harmless, undefiled, and separate from sinners*, and was also united to the *second person*, to make *his soul an offering for sin*. That the *Lord of glory* should be made *sin*, and a *curse*; that was such a tremendous act of divine sovereignty as never shall be parallel'd, and should therefore for ever seal up our lips from replying against God, about his disposing of *sinful worms*; which thing, whenever we hear or think upon, we should put our mouths in the dust.

Before I come to the inferences, I would add a caution or two, to prevent those sinister deductions which our deceitful hearts may be ready to draw from this sovereign truth.

Caution 1. See that you make not *God* the author of sin, by charging his sacred decree with mens miscarrages, as if *that* were the *cause or occasion* of them? which we are sure it is *not*, nor *can* be, any more than the sun can be the cause of darkness. Be it always remembred, that the Lord's rejecting of men puts nothing of evil into them, nor necessitates the will; it only leaves them to their *own ways*, which they freely chuse: Yet *banking* them in, and *stopping* them up, as
he

he did the fountains of the great deep, lest they deluge the world with Sin.

Caution 2. Go not about to palliate, nor think to extenuate your sin, by arguments fetch'd from God's decree. That sin of the Jews, in crucifying the Lord of glory, was in nowise lessened, because the counsel of God had determined the thing to be done; for they perpetrated it with wicked hands. Nor is mens unbelief e'er the less culpable, from God's eternal disposition of their conditions: For it is not upon that consideration that they stumble at the word, or turn the deaf ear to it, or resist it; but from their own natural blindness and enmity against it.

And so I come to the inferences of this greatly important doctrine: And,

First, From the scriptures so copiously holding it forth, I infer, That the doctrine of God's sovereignty is a very teaching doctrine, and full of instruction; and consequently that it is both a duty, and much for our profit, to be well acquainted with it. And great confidence I have, that the farther ye go in an humble fiducial disquisition and contemplation of it, the clearer will be the reason thereof, and the more usefulness will still appear to be in it. Let reason but keep its own place, (that is, let it go by the rules of right reason) and nothing will be more consonant thereto, than that the most High should bear rule over all, and do according to his will; and that men, who are atoms of clay animated by his breath, should own him for their sovereign Lord, and accordingly submit to him; yea, tho' so it were that our own personal welfare were not concerned in it, it will be of singular use and moment to us in the whole of our lives. Nothing like this will allay those carnal reasonings, which are so unreasonably prone to put in their verdict of spiritual things, (which yet carnal reason hath no cognizance of) and will indeed be silenced by nothing else: The apostle, therefore, thinks them not worthy a further reply, whose captious enquiries the sovereignty of God will not satisfy (a). O that the glory of this high attribute might hide pride from men!

A second inference, which naturally flows from this doctrine, is that of the psalmist; *Oh come let us worship, and bow down,*
and

() Rom. 9. 19, 20, 21,

and kneel before the Lord our Maker (b). Let us give him the glory of this great attribute, by a real and practical owning that indispensable bond of obedience which it lays upon every creature : We are highly obliged by it, both in point of subjection and in point of faith.

1st, In point of subjection ; to his laws, ordinances, providences.

(1.) For the laws of God, and his appointments. These we are to attend, observe, obey ; I cannot say, *For the Lord hath need of them* ; for neither can our righteousness profit him, nor our wickedness impair him (c) : *He is the Lord thy God, and worship thou him* (d). This is that strong reason by which he hath backed both commands and prohibitions ; *I am the Lord thy God* (e). Thou shalt do thus : And thus thou shalt not do ; *I am the Lord* : This he sets in the front of all ; and with this he closeth the rear, and guards them on every side. Moses brings it in as a convincing reason why we should love God with our whole heart, and keep his commandments, namely, because he is the Lord, and he only, Deut. vi. 4. No one, therefore, may pretend to a right of giving laws to men, or to an interest in their love and obedience, save with respect to God, and the authority they have from him. And tho' he sometimes is pleased, (and it is a great condescension in the great God) by arguments taken from our own good, to draw us to obedience ; *Do it, for it is your life* (f) ; yet, in our spirits, that of his sovereign glory should have the preference. To cast out Ishmael, was a thing grievous to Abraham ; but, being commanded of God, he debates it not, nor delays to do it. Therefore hold on your way, tho' never so great obscurity be upon it at present : Mind your duty in the midst of discouragements : Do as Peter, who, tho' they had labour'd all night and caught nothing, yet says, *Master, at thy command I will let down the net again*, Luke v. 5.

(2.) Be subject to his ordinances. If he please to command the using such means as have no natural vertue towards such an effect, as in Moses stretching his hand over the sea, and smiting the rock with his rod ; to water in baptism, bread

(c) Psalm 25. 5. (c) Job 22. 2, 3. chap. 34. 7. (d) Psalm 45. 12.
e) Exod. 20. 2. (f) Deut. 42. 47.

and wine in the Lord's supper: Presume not to say, *What is there in these?* Godliness is a mystery, which only faith can understand: There is no divine institution but hath meat in it that you know not of, which, if rightly used, will speak for itself. If he please to make clay of dust and spittle, condemn it not, but submit to his will and way, and be thankful for thy cure. *Samson's* hair was an ordinance to him; which when he slighted, the Spirit of God left him, and he became as other men, and recovered not until it was grown again, *Judges* xiii. 5. with chap. xvi. 19, 22.

(3.) As touching the *providences* of God; *observe* them, and *submit* to them. Look not on them as *empty* things: The *least* may yield you instruction, as also the *most unlikely*. *Out of the eater comes forth meat, and out of the strong sweetness*: Tho' the thing be a *riddle* to an heart uncircumcised, plow with his *beifer* and ye shall find it. Neither look on them as things *impertinent*; but say rather, *Is there not a cause*, tho' I see it not? The Lord does nothing in vain. Neither yet look on them as things *contingent*: A sparrow falls not without his will, and *the hairs of your head are all numbred* (g). *David* was dumb, and opened not his mouth; Why? *Because thou, Lord, didst it* (h): And *Shimei's* cursing he bears patiently on the same account, *The Lord hath bid-den him* (i).

There may be such a mixture and confusion of things, and your expectation so delayed and frustrated, that your froward untamed heart may be ready to wrangle it out, *Why falls it alike to all? why to the just according to the work of the wicked, and to the wicked according to the work of the righteous* (k)? or, *why one event to them both?* This is not to enquire wisely: You should rather conclude, *The Lord hath need of them*; that is, he hath occasion to use such a providence to fulfil a word or purpose, and that of greater importance than to satisfy your private concern, or present expectation. If ye would cast so as to ly by your mark, this attribute of *sovereignty* gives you the best ground. Search and observe as much as you will, so you take faith along with you, without which ye can do nothing warrantably. Faith

is

(g) *Matth.* 10. 29, 30. (h) *Psalms* 39. 9. (i) *2 Sam.* 16. 10, 11.
(k) *Eccles.* 8. 14.

is a sworn officer to the great King, and has a key for every lock that is fit to be opened : It forces nothing ; but, where it cannot enter, it stays without, and waits a better season. Let faith also be chief speaker in all your debates ; and then the result will be, that carnal reason and present sense (tho' very tenacious and stubborn) shall yield the cause and let you go.

The Sum of all is this, That tho' you be not conscious to yourself of any particular cause or miscarriage, besides what is *common* to men, (which was the case with *Job*) *Lay your hand upon your mouth*, as *Job* did (l). *The most High doth according to his will* : This even the proudest of kings acknowledged (m) *when his understanding returned to him* ; and so will you. And know, that, if your spirit be out of frame in your present condition, it would not, at present, be better in any other.

2dly, Our *faith* also is highly concerned in the *sovereignty* of God : For it both obligeth to believe in him, and also *affords matter* for faith to work upon. To these ends the Lord holds it forth to *Abraham* ; *I am the almighty God ; walk before me, and be thou perfect* (n). This was it enabled him to believe he should have a son ; even while the deadness of his own body, and of *Sarah's* womb, wrought strongly against it (o). This also was that made him so readily assent to the offering up of his son, when he had him. He had as much to say against it as could well be supposed : For the promise was, That in *Isaac* all families of the earth should be blessed ; which promise, and this command, *Abraham's* reason could not reconcile. The contradiction would surely have run him down, had not his faith in this great attribute held fast and guided the reins ; suggesting to him, That he who gave *Isaac* a being from a withered stock, was able also to raise him from the dead (p). *Abraham* therefore disputes it not, stands not so much as to consider upon't ; but up he gets him early to do it (q) : And hence he obtained that honourable title to be called, *the friend of God* (r).

Ye have seen now, what *Abraham* did ; go ye and do likewise : Take hold of God's sovereignty as *your own* engag'd by a covenant of grace, and so to be exerted for your good

(l) *Job* 40. 4. (m) *Dan.* 4. 34, 35. (n) *Gen.* 17. 1. (o) *Rom.* 4. 19. (p) *Heb.* 11. 19. (q) *Gen.* 22. 3. (r) *Jam.* 2. 23.

good. *Faith* gives a *propriety* in any attribute it looks upon, and draws out the virtues thereof for itself. And therefore, whatever difficulties are in your way, be not disheartened by them; but call in this sovereign power, by faith, to your help. Remember the ready subjection which all creatures do pay to his word; by which alone (without creatures service) he can level the mountains, and make crooked things straight; restrain, alter, invert, and turn upside down, the very course of nature: So that *that* which is death in itself, shall be life to you. New cords and wythes, when touched by his word, are as flax and tow when touched by the fire; iron shall be as straw, and brass as rotten wood. Therefore, *lengthen* the cords, and *strengthen* the *stakes* of your faith; you cannot believe for greater things, or better than God can do for you. Even sin itself, which is the great (and really the only) evil, it is his enemy as much as yours: And you may be sure, he would not have suffered its being in the world, if he had not a power to correct and curb it, yea, and to destroy it too, at his Pleasure: Take hold of his sovereign strength, and your work is done.

But here also a caution or two may be seasonably added, for such reasons as are mixed with them.

1. If death in the pot hath once been healed, and your borrowed ax-head (sunk once past hope of recovery) brought again to your hand (s); see that remissness grow not upon it, lest at another turn the handle drop after the head. Gather not wild gourds a second time (t), lest your prophet be absent, or meal denied you. Presume not to dally with temptations, (as *Samson* did) and then think to go out and shake yourself as at other times (u). The divine power is too great a thing to be trifled with, or made to serve with the follies of men.

2. Never look on this great attribute of sovereignty without your *Mediator*. As without him it cannot but be matter of *terror* and *amazement* to sinners, it is *he only* can render it *propitious* to you. As nothing is pleasing to God, but in and thro' Christ; so nothing in God is comfortable to men, or for their eternal good, but as it comes to them *through him*: As waters out of the sea immediately are not potable, unless they

(s) 2 Kings 6, 6. (t) 2 Kings 5, 39, &c. (u) Judges 16, 20.

A Practicall Discourse

they be first decocted by the sun, or pass through some vein of earth, to make them congruous to our nature.

I shall here mention two particulars of nearest concernment to us, wherein we are, in a special manner, to have respect unto the sovereignty of God.

1. As touching your own condition, (*your everlasting condition*) submit to *mercy*, to *sovereign* mercy; that is, yield yourself to God, without capitulating, or making terms with him. Those *Syrians* well understood the meaning of this; they put ropes on their heads, and themselves in the conqueror's hands, upon an uncertain conjecture, [*peradventure they will save us alive*] (x). So do ye, altho' ye have but a [*may be*] *we shall be hid* (y). Mind your duty, and leave the issue to God: Believe above hope and against hope: Follow God in the dark, as your father *Abraham* did, not knowing whither he would lead him: Thus to do is to *give glory to God*. Therefore *fear the Lord, and obey the voice of his servant*, even then, *when ye are in darkness, and have no light* (z), (namely, of his *special* favour and love to you in particular.) And tho' never so great discouragements are before you, from the guilt of sins committed, the power of indwelling corruptions, and your present averfeness to believing; and hear withal, That *faith* is the *great commandment*; let your heart answer, Is it my duty, [*my DUTY*] to believe? Nay, then I must. Remember his greatness, his absolute dominion, the uncontrollableness of his matters; that *he hath concluded all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all* (a): (that is, That the salvation of those who shall be saved, might appear to be of mercy, and to be so acknowledged.) To him therefore commit your cause, and commit it to him as your *sovereign Lord*, and so leave it with him; and see that you take it not out of his hand again, by your doubting the issue of it: And know, that then is your soul nearest to peace and settlement, when brought to this submission; *Be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live* (b).

But let not the word be misconstrued; I do not mean by [*submission*] that you should be satisfied under a denial of mercy, on the account of God's *absolute dominion*. I cannot think

(x) 1 Kings 20. 31. (y) Zeph. 2. 3. (z) Isa. 50. 10. (a) Rom. 11. 32.
(b) Heb. 12. 9.

think *that* a necessary term or qualification in your treating with God for salvation : For, 1. I do not find, that God requires such a submission, as the condition of obtaining mercy ; nor that he hath made any promise to give such a submission, in order to that end ; nor any instance in Scripture of the saints having or endeavouring such a frame of spirit in that business ; nor yet, that men are anywhere tax'd for not attaining to it. They are blamed indeed, and that worthily, for not submitting to the righteousness of God ; (that is, for not renouncing their own, and fleeing to that of Christ) and this blame-worthiness you cannot escape, if, finding yourself lost and undone, you will not presently run to Christ, without first finding in yourself something that may seem to commend you to him. 2. Such a submission seems repugnant to God's revealed will : For, if this be the will of God, *even our sanctification*, that we should believe on his Son, and love him with our whole heart ; then it cannot be his will, that we should be willing to remain in an unsanctified state, in unbelief and enmity against him, which are the inseparable conjuncts of willingness to be separated from God. 3. Because the promise of ease and rest is made to the weary and laden, *coming* to Christ ; not to a *contentedness* to be divided from him : And the promise of satisfaction is to your *hungering and thirsting after righteousness* ; not to the cessation of your desire, without the thing which only can satisfy. 4. Because, to be satisfied without obtaining mercy, is to be satisfied with an utter incapacity to glorify the *grace* of God, and to enjoy communion with him ; which are the principal end and duty of men. 5. It is cross to the genius and con-created principle of the reasonable creature, which is, to seek its own happiness ; in any thing short of which it ought not to acquiesce. 6. Such a submission cannot be requisite in preparatory work ; because that would suppose the highest pitch of *grace* attain'd (if yet it be a *grace* and attainable) before you believe ; and consequently, that it is not a *grace* out of Christ's fulness ; for ye are supposed to have it before ye go to him. And therefore, when I say, Ye must submit without capitulating, or making terms ; my meaning is, Ye are not to treat upon terms of your own making, nor propound any thing to God, but what sovereign mercy propounds to

you, as the way and means of obtaining your great end And great reason ye have for this submission; for herein lies your interest, those being (in truth) the only terms by which a lost and sinful creature can be rendered salvable, or capable of being saved; as will further appear in the sequel of this discourse.

I think (with humble submission) that, if any point of time may be supposed before the decree, it was *then* that *absolute dominion* bore sway; but, even since *election* came in, it is *grace* that reigns: Not that *sovereignty* is *ceased*, but *transferred*. Before it was in power, but *now* in *grace*: In *grace*, as touching the *elect*; and in *justice*, respecting the *rest*. *Grace* is the attribute God delights to honour, and all the *other* are (if I may so speak) as subjects of *this*: Even Christ himself was made a servant, to perform the pleasure of his grace ^a. So then, *that* you are to submit unto, is the good pleasure of God's will, as held forth in the covenant of *grace*, undertaking for, and perfectly able to save you; and as having his sovereign power engag'd to make it good. Which seems the scope of that passage in *Moses's* prayer for the people, when they had highly provoked God; *Let the power of my Lord be great, according as thou hast spoken, &c.* ^b. It was to pardon, and still to own them for his people. And to this agree all those scriptures which hold forth the power of God as the ground of faith, as that by which he is able to pardon sin, to subdue iniquity, and to hold your souls in life. You are therefore directed, if you will have peace with God, *to take hold of his strength* ^c: Which cannot be meant of a contentedness in having that strength put forth to destroy, but as being perfectly able and engaged by his covenant to save you. As to the *time* when the Lord will manifest his love to you, as also the *manner* and *measure* of his dispensing it, the good pleasure of his will is expressly and with all quietness of spirit to be submitted unto; but, as to the thing itself, you ought not to be said *nay*: But do as he did, who had power with God, and prevail'd; *he wept and made supplication* ^d; but still resolved, *I will not let thee go, except thou bless me* ^e.

2. As

^a Isa. 42. 1, & 49. 3. ^b Numb. 14. 17, 18, 19. ^c Isa. 27. 5. ^d Hos. 12. 4. ^e Gen. 32. 26.

2. As for the other nearest concernment touching your *children*, deal in like manner for them, by submitting them to the same mercy. It is true, that, next to your own personal salvation, there cannot be a greater evidence of God's love to you, than to chuse your children after you; nor any thing more desirable to you: Therefore *command them*, and *instruct them to keep the way of the Lord*¹, that he may bring on them the blessing you most desire for them: But be not over solicitous and cast down, because you see not yet the marks of election upon them. The Lord doth not indeed bind himself to take *all* a believer's children, nor doth he limit himself from taking any others. There is nothing declared touching his purpose to take *all* the one, lest they should thence take occasion to be remiss in their Duty (which, till conversion, is very natural to us;) nor doth he exclude the children of others, for that might discourage and weaken their hands to that which is good. In this various dispensing of his everlasting love, he is pleased so to reserve his liberty and sovereign prerogative, that he greatly manifests his love to *believers*, in so frequent chusing of their seed; and the freeness of his *grace*, in not rejecting *wholly* the seed of others.

Infer. 3. How happy and sovereignly blessed are those who have an interest in this great and sovereign Lord! Be the earth ever so unquiet, and the tumult of it ever so boisterous and unruly; the Lord is above them. He sits on the waters (as a prince in his chariot) guiding all as he will; he is that great *dictator*, whose word is the law indeed: If he but say, Come, go, do this, there needs no more. Who would not be the subject of such a prince? and much more his favourite? And yet, this high privilege every soul is blessed with, that has in truth taken hold of his covenant: For *that* takes in *all* between the two eternities, and eternity itself withal; and the spirit of strength of the whole lies in those few (but very compendious) words, [*I will be your God*]. When the Lord would comfort his people to *purpose*, and put on their eagles wings, what a glorious narrative doth he make of his power and sovereign greatness! in *Isa.* xl. from v. 12, to v. 26. And then tells them, that all this is *theirs*, v. 27. And, if God be *yours*, all things are *yours*. Who, or where is he, that

can supplant you of his blessing? *You* may rejoice in his *highness*, the thoughts whereof are matter of terror to *other* men. After the rehearsal of all the happiness and glory that men or angels are capable of, it shall be comprised in this, as the original thereof, and sum of the whole, *Happy are they whose God is the Lord*, Psalm cxliv. 15.

Infer. 4. We may see here the reason why God doth sometimes defer to answer the doubts and queries we stick at, and most desire to be resolv'd about: It is not only to shew his sovereignty, but to bring our hearts to a practical acknowledgment of it. *Moses* was very unwilling to go on his message to *Pharaoh*; many pretences he had to put it by; when as the danger he might be in for killing the *Egyptian* was the *bottom-objection*, tho' he speaks it not out. Indeed, the men who sought his life were now dead; which, if he had known afore, all those excuses had probably been spar'd: But the Lord was pleased to conceal it from him until he had brought him to a full compliance with his will, and then reveals it to him *unmask'd*². So likewise, he would not take off his hand from *Job*, until he had well learn'd him this lesson³. Say not therefore, (because you have not returns so soon as you would) *The Lord hath forsaken me, my Lord hath forgotten me*¹: But follow that good resolution recorded of old, *I will wait upon the Lord, who hideth his face* (at present) *from the house of Jacob, I will look for him*⁴.

Infer. 5. Let no man then, who will say, *The Lord be is God*, presume to intrench on his sacred royalty, by seeking a *reason* of his decrees, beyond, or besides, the good pleasure of his will. Even *sovereigns of dust* will not admit it in subjects, tho' of the same mould with themselves. It is an imperial secret, *the chief of the ways of God*; it belongs to himself alone to know it, and the knowledge thereof would not profit us *now*. Besides, there is enough reveal'd of great importance to us at *present*, on which to employ the utmost of our time and strength. By overgrasping we may sprain our hands, and unfit 'em for service otherwise within their compass, but we gain nothing: Therefore go not about to fathom this *great deep*. Who, but one of shallow understanding, would

¹ Exod. 3. 11, & 4. 10, 13, 19. ² Job 42, 2, &c. ³ Isa. 49. 14. ⁴ Chap. 8. 17.

would think to measure the sea by handfuls? or to give a demonstrative reason of its various and convertible courses! Remember that you *magnify* his work ¹, but lessen it not by pretending to *comprehend* it ^m. *Sanctify the Lord in your hearts, and fear before him* ⁿ.

Infer. 6. This gives a reason, why men of the largest capacity, for learning and natural understanding, are so mightily puzzl'd and labyrinth'd in spiritual matters; particularly the doctrine of election: Why they do so strongly oppose it, and are so hardly reconciled with it. They are not (in truth) subdu'd to the doctrine of *God's sovereignty*: And therefore, while, in discussing those points of faith, they judge as their natural optick represents them, they lose both themselves and the truth; which yet, in some degree, is made known unto babes, men of low stature to them, whose spirits the Lord hath subdued, to rest contented with what their Father is pleased to tell them: And for the rest, (as namely, the manner and reason of *God's* dispoſements and dispensations) they live by faith in his righteousness, waiting for the day that shall reveal all things; when the tabernacle of *God*, which yet is in heaven, shall be let down among men, or they taken up into it, and these *hidden* things of sovereignty shall be more *openly* known among them.

Lastly, This doctrine of *God's absolute* dominion clears away all that made-ground and rubbish, which the principles of free-will-grace do found their election upon; and shews us the *only* true and proper foundation of scripture-election, with those other important truths which hold upon it, or are consequents of it: All which have their head in the sovereignty of *God*, and are derived thence, as rivers are from the sea; as, thro' his blessing and *grace*, may appear afterwards. And so I shall close up this first part of the preface with that holy rapture of the psalmist; *Be thou exalted, Lord, in thine own strength, so will we sing, and praise thy power* ^o. *The Lord hath prepared his throne in the heavens, and his kingdom ruleth over all. Bless the Lord, ye his angels that excel in strength! Bless the Lord, all ye his hosts; ye ministers of his, that do his pleasure! Bless the Lord, all his works, in all places of his dominion! Bless the Lord, O my soul* ^p.

C 3

O F

¹ Job 36. 24. ^m Eccles. 8. 17. ⁿ Isa. 8. 13. ^o Psal. 21. 13. ^p Psal. 103. 19. 22.

Of the Righteousness of GOD.

HAVING founded this discourse on the *sovereignty* of God, as the best and most natural ground of satisfaction (or captivation) to reason, touching *election*; now, as a means to qualify our spirits, and reconcile them with the doctrine of *sovereignty*, it seemeth expedient to annex that of his *righteousness*: And, I think, there is not a more rational proposition, or more obliging to submission, than,

That there is no unrighteousness with GOD.

This is the natural adjunct of divine sovereignty, which, as we are indispensibly bound to believe, so, to be well grounded in the faith of it, will be of exceeding great usefulness to us in every condition; especially under those darker administrations, of which we do not see at present the cause, reason or tendency; when matters of great importance seem to be confused, or neglected, when all things in view fall out alike to all, and you cannot know either good or evil by all that is before you. I shall therefore collect *some* of those considerations, from which you may find some light and influence in a dark and cloudy day; and by which (as a means) I myself was drawn in, and guided to this determination, before I had searched the scriptures expressly concerning this subject: And they may serve, both as *arguments* to demonstrate the *proposition*, and as *antidotes* against those poisonous *contradictions* which *carnal reason* and *unbelief* will be too often forging and flinging in upon us. And,

Arg. I. is founded on that infinite blessedness which the most high God was possessed of in himself, before the world or any creature was made. He did not make them for any need he had of them, but for his *pleasure* (a): And, if he needed them not, there could be no need or reason why he should make them *such*, or to *such* an end as not to be *wisely* over-ruled, and their end attained, without doing wrong

(a) Rev. 4. 12.

wrong to any. The motives by which men are swayed to wrong-doing are chiefly two; 1. *To obtain something they have not.* Ahab slew Naboth for his vineyard (b); and Abaliab all the seed royal, to get the throne (c). Or, 2. *To secure what they have.* Pharaoh oppressed the people, lest, growing mighty, they should shake off his yoke, and get them out of his service (d). Jeroboam set up his calves, to keep the people at home, and firm to himself (e): And the Jews they put Christ to death, lest the Romans should come and take away their place and nation (f). These two have shared the parentage of all the oppression and wrong-doing that have been in the world. Neither of which is compatible with our great and blessed God: For all things are his already; he possesseth the heavens and the earth, and all the hosts of them, with an absolute power and right to dispose of them. And as for securing what he hath, of whom should he be afraid? For (1.) *There is no God besides him;* the Lord himself, who needs must know it if there were another, professeth solemnly, that *he knows not any* (g). And, (2.) As for creatures, they are all more absolutely under his subjection, than the smallest dust under our feet is to us. *The nations are to him less than nothing and vanity* (h). He need not so much as touch them, to bring them down. 'Tis but gathering to himself his spirit and his breath, and they perish together (i); if the Lord but withhold his sustaining influence, they fall of themselves: But he remains the same to all generations.

Arg. II. Another argument is founded on the infinite perfection of his nature. This those seraphick heralds proclaim under the notion of *holy, holy, holy* (k). Its reduplication imports the highest perfection. And Moses (who of all mortals had nearest access to God) puts it in the front of his triumphal titles (l), *glorious in holiness*. It is that whereby all the divine excellencies are summarily express'd. The righteous Lord will do no iniquity: He is of purer eyes than to look upon it. 'Tis an high demonstration of his excellency, that he cannot deny himself; that is, he cannot do any thing that is in the least degree contrary to his

C 4

holy

(b) 1 Kings 21. (c) 2 Kings 11. (d) Exod. 1. 10. (e) 1 Kings 12. 27, 28. (f) John 11. 48. (g) Isa. 44. 6, 8. (h) Isa. 40. 17. (i) Job 34. 14, 15. (k) Isa. 6. 2. (l) Exod. 15. 11.

holy nature; nothing that needs to be retracted, or to alter his mind about it. His will is the rule of righteousness, and righteousness is the rule of this will. The saints of old were perfectly of this mind, *Shall not the judge of all the earth do right* (m)? And the apostle puts it as a question not to be answered, that, if God were unrighteous, *how then shall he judge the world* (n)?

Arg. III. 'Tis also apparent from the constant rule and measures of God's dispensements, which are not done fortuitously, nor rashly, but with deliberation and exactness. He lays judgment to the rule, and righteousness to the plummet (o). He will not punish without a cause, nor more than is deserved. Touching the sins of Sodom; *I will go down* (says God) *and see whether they have done [altogether] according to the cry of it* (p). He renders to every one [according] to their deeds (q); and gives them [a just] recompence of reward (r). He will not cast away the perfect man, nor help the wicked (s). Eliphaz puts the question with great confidence, (as well he might) *Who ever perished being innocent* (t)? His righteousness is such, that it even holds his hands until the innocent be out of danger. The angels were straitly commanded not to begin the execution of God's wrath on the wicked world, *until his servants were marked out* (u): And, when the Lord came to destroy Sodom, he hastens righteous Lot to Zoar, with this only argument, *I cannot do any thing until thou be come thither* (x).

Arg. IV. It is further evidenced by the laws he hath given unto men, the sum of which is to do righteously; and the end of them, the good and welfare of the creature. After a thousand years experience of these, compared with the issue of mens inventions, they are acknowledged to be right judgments, good statutes, and laws of truth (y). What an admirable catalogue have we in *Rom. 12. 12, & Gal. v. 22*!

1. Of such as concern our duty towards himself immediately, this is the sum, *Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve* (z). There is nothing more equal and just than to worship and serve him, whose we are: To love and live to him, from whom we have our life and breath; especially considering that *his commandments are our life* (a).

2. Such

(m) *Gen. 18. 25.* (n) *Rom. 2. 6.* () *Isa. 28. 17.* () *Gen. 18. 21.* (q) *Rom. 2. 6.* () *Heb. 2. 2.* () *Joh. 8. 20.* () *Joh. 4. 7.* () *Rev. 7. 3.* () *Gen. 19. 22.* () *Neb. 9. 13.* (z) *Matth. 4. 10, & Deut. 10. 18, 19.*

2. Such as refer more immediately to ourselves, as temperance, chastity, moderation, sobriety, &c. These (as is evident to all) do greatly conduce to our outward welfare, both in point of health, estate, posterity, &c. And what evil consequents do attend the contraries of those virtues, might be every day's observation; more especially such as relate to our spiritual state and welfare: Of which more particularly under the next argument.

3. Such commands also as respect our duty towards men; as to do *justly*, to shew *merry*; to follow *peace* with all men; every one to mind his *own* business, and not intermeddle with others: So, to be subject to the powers that be; and to pray for those in authority; (the neglect of which duty may be a cause of our disquietment from them, at least it may prove an eclipse of our joyfulness in suffering under them, &c.) The sum of this kind of duties we have in that standing uncontrollable rule, of *doing to others as we would they should do unto us*. On the contrary, there is nothing forbidden but what tends to our hurt; as, if it were needful, might be demonstrated by instances innumerable.

4. To this also might be added the strict injunctions that God hath laid upon the subordinate dispensers of his law; as (namely) to *judge the people with just judgment*; not to *wrest judgment, nor respect persons* (b); *Yea, he curseth them that pervert judgment* (c), and *will surely reprove them that accept persons* (d), &c. And shall *mortal man be more just than God* (e)? Will he under such penalties command men to do thus, and not much more do so himself?

Arg. V. Another beam of the righteousness of God shines forth in his putting the matter of our duty into such a way and method as renders it more facile, and mostly conduceth to our *chief end*.

As, 1. *To remember our Creator in the days of our youth* (f). For the work of conversion and turning to God must needs be much easier *then*, than when *habituated* in an evil course: For long impenitency (besides the provocation it is to God) estranges the mind more from him; makes the spirit more inflexible, and harder to be wrought upon; it multiplies our work, and subtracts our strength: For one accustomed

(b) *ibid.* (c) *Ch.* 27. 19, (d) *John* 13. 1 (e) *Ch.* 4. 17. (f) *Ecc.* 12. 1,

ed in evil to learn to do well, and for a blackmoor to change his skin, are things of a like possibility: 'Tis a very rare and difficult thing for a man to be born again when he is old.

2. To watch against and suppress the *first motions* of sin, and to avoid whatever might be an *occasion*, or have tendency towards it. And, in order thereto, to *take heed to our spirit* (g); to *keep the heart with all diligence* (h); to *abstain from all appearances of evil* (i); to *hate the garment spotted by the flesh* (k); and to *make a covenant with our eyes*, as *Job did* (l): (For the professed practice of some saints is *directive* to others, and equivalent to a command). To keep an enemy from rising, is much easier than to quell him when he is up; yea, to nip sin when 'tis young, is the ready way, not only to *keep it low*, but to *kill it*; as the continual plucking off buds from a tree or plant, destroys the root.

3. Not to do any thing, the lawfulness whereof is *dubious* to us; which, as it is a sin in itself (as every thing which is *not of faith* (m)), so it tends to obscure to us the true sight of other things, and emboldens to farther attempts. Yea, further, not to mind only the *lawfulness* of things, but their *expediency* (n); the not heeding of which proves often an occasion of sin to others, whereof we cannot be guiltless: So likewise to cherish all motions to good; not to quench the Spirit (o); and to hearken, or listen diligently, what the Lord God will speak (p); who oftentimes delivers his mind with a *still* and a *small voice* (q), which doubly obligeth our attention.

4. In his pressing with so much weight and necessity those great duties of faith, love, patience, self-denial, &c. (1.) *Faith*, which consists in submitting to the *righteousness* of God, taking hold of his *strength*, and following the *conduct* of his *wisdom*: And, in order thereto, shewing us our own *sinfulness*, *weakness* and *folly*, with the *vanity* of all created *bottoms*, which have always failed at the greatest need; and so drawing our hearts to lean on himself only, in whom alone we have *righteousness* and *strength* (r). (2.) *Love*: This is a powerful, active, candid and obliging principle; it *bears all things*; *thinks no evil*; *takes all in good part* (s); makes that

(g) *Mal.* 2. 15. (h) *Prov.* 4. 23. (i) *1 Thess.* 5. 22. (k) *Jude ver.* 23. (l) *Job* 31. 1. (m) *Rom.* 14. 23. (n) *1 Cor.* 6. 12. (o) *1 Thess.* 5. 19. (p) *Exod.* 15. 26. (q) *1 Kings* 19. 17. (r) *Isa.* 45. 24. (s) *1 Cor.* 13. 5.

of the Righteousness of GOD. 43

that both portable and pleasant, which, without love, would be both harsh and burdensome. (3.) *Patience and meekness of spirit*: These mitigate the dolour of any suffering, and often prevent or allay the storm that is rising; *A soft answer turneth away wrath* (r). It also breeds experience; 1. That any affliction may be born thro' him that strengthens (u). 2. That afflictions are all for our profit (x). 3. That we could not well have been without them (y). 4. It also gives to understand the Lord's meaning in them, which the noise of tumultuating passions would drown in us. And, as a means to work this patience, the Lord sets before us, 1. That there is a *cause* of every chastning; and that *cause* is from ourselves; and therefore no *cause* to complain. 2. That he afflicts not willingly, but only when there is need, and no more than needs must. 3. That he hath many gracious ends in afflicting: As, 1. To humble for sin committed; as in *Joseph's* rough dealing with his brethren (a). 2. To purge out dross, as in the case of *Manasseh* (b), and the whole church (c). 3. To prevent sins we should otherwise fall into: Thus he kept *Paul* from being exalted above measure (d). 4. To wean us from the world; this he expected from *Baruch* (e), and this effect it had upon *Asaph* (f). 5. To exercise our graces; as *Abraham's* great faith, by his various temptations; and *Paul* was much under infirmities, that he might magnify the power of *Christ* (g). 6. By *lesser* temptations, and deliverance from them, we are fitted for *greater*, and our faith strengthened, both to bear and to get thro' them; which *greater*, had they come *afore*, might have overturn'd us. (4.) *Self-denial*: This is a duty of nearest concernment to us, since we have no such enemies as self-love and fleshly lusts to war against our souls. These things considered, will shew that *David's* conclusion is right and genuine; *Good and upright is the Lord, therefore will he teach sinners in the way* (h). Even reason itself might tell us, (to be sure *sanctified* reason and experience will) that thus to command and direct, is to lead in the right way; and it highly commends to us the righteousness of God.

Arg.

(r) Prov. 15. 1. Judges 8. 15. (u) 2 Cor. 12. 9. (x) Heb. 12. 10. (y) 1 Pet. 1. 6, 7. (a) Gen. 42. 12. (b) 2 Chron. 33. 11, 13. (c) Isa. 27. 9. (d) 2 Cor. 12. 7. (e) Jer. 45. 4, 5. (f) Psalm 73. 25. (g) 2 Cor. 12. 9. (h) Psalm 92. 13.

Arg. VI. The righteousness of God is farther made out, by his affixing rewards and punishments to good and evil works respectively, according to what is the proper result and natural product of them: Whatsoever a man sows, that shall he reap (i). Every seed shall have its own body (k). He will give to every one according to his ways, and the fruit of his doings (l). Holiness hath in it a natural tendency to life and peace: It is a tree of life (m). Grace and glory grow from the same root: Salvation is the end of faith; the flower that grows upon it (n). The work of righteousness is peace, and the effect thereof quietness and assurance for ever (o). It is sometimes called, the way of life (p); sometimes the fountain and well-spring of life (q). And it tendeth to life (r): For, if the root be holy, the branches cannot be otherwise (s).

'Tis so likewise with sin: Death follows sin, not only as a punishment for delinquency, but as its natural off-spring (t). Original corruption is the root; sin the stalk that grows next upon it; and death the finishing, or full corn in the ear (u). If there were no justice to revenge sin, sin would be vengeance to itself: Sinners lie in wait for their own blood (x). It is their own wickedness that corrects them (y). The way of sin inclineth to death, and its footsteps to the dead: Its steps take hold on hell (z). Unbelief may be an instance for all, as out of which all sins else are derived: This was the root of Adam's apostasy (*); of all that people's rebellions in the wilderness (†); of the Jews rejecting the Messiah (**). Faith is that which holds the soul to God, its life and blessedness; unbelief its departing from him, or letting go of its hold; the loosing of the knot, upon which the soul falls off of its own accord: And the first step from God, sets in a way of death; as a branch breaking off from its stock dies of itself. This was Adam's unbelief: In all men since, it is a refusing to return.

Arg. VII. This doctrine is further confirmed by the general unanimous consent and affirmation of those best able to judge,

(i) Gal. 6. 7. (k) 1 Cor. 15. 38. (l) Isa. 3. 10, 11. Jer. 32. 19. (m) Prov. 3. 18. (n) 1 Pet. 1. 9. (o) Isa. 32. 17. (p) Prov. 12. 28. (q) Ch. 14. 27. (r) Prov. 19. 23. (s) Rom. 11. 16. (t) Prov. 23. 29, 30. (u) Jam. 1. 14, 15. (x) Prov. 1. 18. (y) Jer. 2. 19. (z) Prov. 2. 18. & 5. 4. (*) Gen. 3. (†) Numb. 14. 11. (**) John 19. 7, 12.

of the Righteousness of GOD. 45

judge. (1.) They assert it. *Job*, a man of great wisdom and integrity, (not his like in all the earth) ^a, and none so sorely afflicted; yet says *Elihu* to him, by way of counsel (as what himself would do in the like case) *I will ascribe righteousness to my Maker* ^b; and, *Surely God will not pervert judgment* ^c. *God is known* (i. e. he is known to be God) *by the judgments which he executeth* ^d. *The Lord is upright; there is no unrighteousness in him* ^e. *He loveth righteousness, and hateth iniquity. The sceptre of his kingdom is a right sceptre* ^f. *Righteousness and judgment are the habitation of his throne* ^g. That true and righteous are his judgments, is the voice of those in heaven ^h.

(2.) They submit to it, even then when most provoked by mens injurious dealings with them for his sake, and when the Lord's own hand hath been most severe towards them. *Aaron* held his peace ⁱ. *It is the Lord* (saith *Eli*) *let him do what seemeth him good* ^k. *Hezekiah* also, *Good is the word of the Lord* ^l. Yea, they have done thus, when by the light of natural reason they could see no reason for it: Witness *Job*, who, when plunder'd of all, because he feared God, and eschewed evil, and could justify himself to the height as to any hypocrisy; yet, says he, *I will make supplication to my judge* ^m. Look on our Lord and Saviour himself, and see his confession; *Our fathers cried unto thee, and were delivered; but, tho' day nor night I am not silent, thou hearest me not*. How does he close his complaint? Not, *Thou dealest more hardly with me who less have deserved it; but [Thou art holy* ⁿ.] *Jeremiah* indeed began to object, because the way of the wicked prospered, and they were happy that dealt treacherously: But he presently bethinks himself, withdraws his plea, and yields the cause; *Righteous art thou, O Lord, when I plead with thee* ^o. I might instance the suffrage, even of wicked men, and of the most obdurate among them; whose consciences, at times, have enforced their confession of this truth; and the testimony of an adversary proves strongly. *Pharaoh* subscribes to it; *The Lord is righteous, I and my people are wicked* ^p. As also doth *Adonibereck* and

^a *Job* 1. 8. ^b *Ch.* 36. 3. ^c *Ch.* 34. 12. ^d *Psal.* 9. 16. ^e *Psal.* 92. 15.
^f *Psal.* 45. 6, 7. ^g *Psal.* 97. 2. *Deut.* 32. 4. ^h *Rev.* 16. 2. ⁱ *Lev.*
 10. 3. ^k *1 Sam.* 3. 18. ^l *2 Kings* 20. 19. ^m *Job* 9. 15. ⁿ *Psal.* 22. 1.
 3, 4. ^o *Jer.* 12. 1. ^p *Exod.* 9. 27.

and Saul ^a. (3.) The saints triumph in the righteousness of God (as well they may) and call upon others to do the like; *The Lord reigneth, let the earth rejoice* ^r. *Oh let the nations be glad and sing for joy; for thou shalt judge the people righteously* ^r. *Let the heavens rejoice, and the earth be glad before the Lord: For he cometh, for he cometh to judge the earth* ^r, Sec. And hence it was that Paul, and the rest of them, tho' the present sense of their sufferings was grievous, yet they gloried in them, and rejoiced greatly, in hopes of that glory and crown of righteousness, which God, as a righteous judge, had prepared for them ^u.

Arg. VIII. The righteousness of God is yet further illustrated by the issue and event of his darkest dispensations. *The consumption decreed shall overflow with righteousness* ^x, and nothing else shall be in it. His people, tho' long under oppression, he brought them forth at last with the greater substance. His leading them about in the wilderness, as it were in a maze, forty years together; and bringing them back to where they had been many years before; yet proved it to be the right way ^y, and it was for their good in the latter end ^z. David's long persecution by Saul made him the fitter for the kingdom, and adapted him for the office of principal secretary to the great king; opportunely acquainting him with all the affairs of the heavenly state and council, that are fit to be known upon earth: And by his hand and experience they are confirmed to us; and this amongst the rest, *Blessed is the man whom thou chastenest, and teachest him out of thy law* ^a. We see it also by the end the Lord made with Job; he brought him forth like gold, and doubled his Blessings upon him ^b. The basket of good figs were sent into captivity for their good ^c. Paul's afflictions turned to his salvation ^d. Even the temptations, sorrows and sufferings of Christ himself, which were such as never were known by men, were intended to, and accordingly did, perfect and enable him for his office of Mediator ^e.

Arg. IX. Another great instance and evidence of the righteousness of God appears in the manner of his procedure in reference

^a Judges 1. 7. ⁱ Sam. 24. 17, 19. ^r Psal. 93, 97, 99. ^s Psal. 67. 4.
^t Psal. 93. 11, 13. ^u 2 Tim. 4. 8. ^x Isa. 10. 22. ^y Psal. 107. 7. ^z Deut.
 3. 16. ^a Psal. 34. 12. ^b Job 42. 10, 12. ^c Jer. 5. ^d Phil. 1. 12
^e Heb. 2. 17, 18.

ference to the elect. Those precious souls, whom he loved from everlasting, and determined to bring to glory; yet, having sinned, not one of them shall enter there, without satisfaction made to his justice; even *those* he will not justify, but so as to be just in the doing of it ^f. The mercy-seat being sprinkled with blood ^g, was evidently a shadow of it: For the glory of God does not consist only in shewing mercy, but to do it in such a manner as not to clash with his justice. ^Tis a part of his name and glory, that *he will by no means clear the guilty* ^h: But who then shall be saved, *since all the world is found guilty before God* ⁱ? Yea, there is yet a way to shew mercy (which is for ever adorable) and therein is shewn the manifold wisdom of God, as well as his righteousness, in the contriving a way for mercy and truth to meet together ^k; which was done by transferring the guilt of his *chosen* upon another, who was able to bear it, and to give a more adequate satisfaction to his justice than they ever could have done by their personal sufferings: This also was typified by the law of the scape-goat, *Lev. xvi. 8, 10, 26.*

Arg. X. Consider especially that great instance of Christ himself, the first elect and head of all the family, and the compact made with him: Who, tho' he were a Son, *his beloved Son, in whom his soul delighted*; yet, if he will undertake for sinners, he must stand in their stead. *All their sins must meet upon him*, and he must bear the punishment due to them ^l. It was not possible that cup should pass from him: No, tho' he fought it with strong cries and tears; and that of him that was able to save him from death, who also loved him as his own soul: He was not, he might not be released until he had paid the utmost mite. For albeit that grace is perfectly free to men, in pardoning and saving of them; yet justice must be satisfied, and Christ was bated nothing. This last unparallel'd instance of incomparable justice doth highly illustrate the point in hand, namely, *That our great and sovereign Lord cannot but do right.*

Inferences from the righteousness of GOD.

Infer. 1. May this doctrine prove an eternal blast to the vain and

^f Rom. 8. 3, 26. ^g Lev. 16. 14. Heb. 9. 12, 21. ^h Exod. 34. 7. ⁱ Rom. 3. 19. ^k 1st Jsa. 85. 10. ^l 1st Jsa. 53. 4, 5.

and presumptuous confidence of impenitent sinners; who, *because vengeance is not speedily executed, have their hearts fully bent and set in them to do evil* ^m. Because the Lord (at present) holds his peace, they think he is like themselves ⁿ, &c. Let them certainly know, that he is able to deal with them; and further, that his *righteousness obligeth* him to vindicate himself: He will by no means clear the guilty, nor be *always* silent: *Tho' slow, yet sure*; and strikes home at last ^o. *He will arise to judgment, and set their sins in order before them*, and reckon with them for all the hard speeches, which they, ungodly sinners, have uttered against him: The sight whereof shall strike their trembling souls (notwithstanding their stoutness *now*) with horror and amazement, and make even all their bowels ready to gush out. *He will wound the hairy scalp* (the proud and presumptuous head) *of every one that goes on in his wickedness* ^p: *A dart shall strike through his liver* ^q, and down with him to hell, the nethermost hell, in a moment. Why then will you *run against the thick bosses of his bucklers* ^r? *and set briars and thorns in array against a devouring flame* ^s? Can dried stubble dwell with *everlasting burnings*? Did ever any *harden himself against God, and prosper* ^t? No, nor never shall. Where will his hope be, when God taketh away his soul ^u! Therefore take up betimes, leave off, and know that he is God ^x.

Infer. 2. Let this doctrine for ever vindicate the holy and good ways of God (both those he walks in towards us, and those he commands us to walk in towards himself) from all those senseless imputations of *harshness, moroseness, nicety, preciseness*, or whatever else the profaneness or ignorance of men can tax them with. For, as it is said, so it is found by the certain and sober experience of all that fear him, (and against such experience no reasoning is to be admitted) I say, 'tis a general infallible experiment, that *all the ways of wisdom are pleasantness to him that walks in them* ^v: Which argues, that those who think otherwise are ignorant of them, and therefore not competent judges. 'Tis granted, indeed, that those whose hearts are in these good ways of God, have their steps

100

^m Eccl. 8. 11. ⁿ Psal. 50. 21. ^o Psal. 2. 9. ^p Psal. 68. 21. ^q Prov. 7. 23. ^r Job 15. 26. ^s Isa. 33. 14. ^t Job 9. 4. ^u Chap. 27. 8. ^x Psal. 46. 10. ^y Prov. 3. 17.

too often turned aside, and go haltingly in them: But, in truth, the fault is not in the way, but in the men. There is some fracture in their bones, dislocation of joints, or evil tumour; something is out of order, and needs looking to. A cripple will limp in Solomon's porch (on the smoothest pavement) when one that is sound in his limbs will walk with delight on rougher ground. The law and our hearts were once at perfect agreement; the discord came in by our free-will deviations, and swerving from our first make. Therefore admit not the least motion that looks but awry on the commands or dispolements of God; but justify them to the height, and take shame to yourself, as Paul himself did, *The commandment is holy, but I am carnal* ^a.

Infer. 3. If the Lord cannot but do right, then let us all (and every one) take heed of sin, which the holiness and justice of God are so inexorably bent against: He will not pardon without satisfaction. Yea, beware of little sins (little, I mean, in esteem with men, or in comparison of some others.) Your nearness to God will not excuse you; for you have I known, [therefore] you will I punish ^a. Even Moses his servant, for once speaking unadvisedly, was shut out of Canaan ^b: And tho' he would fain have gone in to that good land, and solicited the Lord much about it, as if he would have no denial; yet the Lord would not hear him: *Speak no more to me of this matter* ^c. To make light of the least sin, because grace abounds, is to sin against your own soul, and to make the precious blood of Christ a common thing; (the least is the price of blood.) Altho' he love thee, and that so as never to take his loving-kindness from thee; yet he will not let thee go altogether unpunished: Yea, the Lord may hide from thee the sense of his love, and make thee feel his displeasure, even to the breaking of thy bones, &c. For he must discountenance sin, and that for our good, as well as to vindicate the honour of his righteousness.

Infer. 4. You that acknowledge God's uprightness, and profess to be his children, convince the world of the truth of your principles by your practice. Shew yourselves to be his offspring by your likeness to him: *Do justly, love mercy, walk humbly. To be blameless and harmless, and without rebuke,*

D

^a Rom. 7. 11, 24. ^a Amos 3. 2. ^b Numb. 20. 10, 12. ^c Deut. 3. 26.

buke^d, is your best argument to refute the world's calumnies, and to prove yourselves to be the *sons of God*. Shew it also by your justifying God, even while *he wraps himself in a cloud*^e, and his footsteps are not known^f. He that owns not God's hand in every dispensement, disowns his sovereignty; and he that repines, denies his righteousness: Acquit yourself in both.

Infer. 5. Then let none *stumble* at present administrations, nor admit of a *sinister* or *suspicious* thought touching this holy Lord God. The reason of his ways may be *unknown*, but cannot be *unjust*: He sees thro' the dark cloud, tho' you and I cannot. We know the Lord doth not afflict willingly^g; and his people are in heaviness but for a season, and if need be^h: Then surely 'tis meet to be said unto God, *I have born chastisement*; (i. e. my sin procured it for me, and I have no cause to complain) *I will offend no more*ⁱ. Acknowledge his uprightness, and he will be gracious unto thee^k. And do it when thou canst not see the reason of his judgments, nor their tendency; taking it still for a rule, *That all the ways of God are perfect*: Nothing can be put to them, nor any thing taken from them^l. 'Twas a good resolution in Job, *That tho' he were righteous, yet would he not answer God; but make supplication to his judge*^m; and tho' he would *slay him*, yet will he *trust in him*ⁿ: And this he would do, even while he thought he might maintain his own ways before him.

Be patient therefore: *The coming of the Lord draweth nigh*^o, who will judge the world with righteousness^p. Let neither the wicked's prosperity, nor the daily chastnings of his own people, be an offence to thee: Go up into the *sanctuary of God*^q; there thou shalt know their end. It shall not always be carried thus; there will be a reckoning for the good things they had in their lifetime; when those that have lived in pleasure will wish that their souls had been in thy soul's stead, under all its pressures: And it shall be no grief of heart to thee, to remember thy *mortal and momentary sufferings*^r, when thou seest such *peaceable fruits of righteousness brought forth thereby*^s: When thou shalt be wrapt up with an holy

amaze-

^d Phil. 2. 15. ^e Job 22. 13, 14. ^f Psal. 77. 19. ^g Lam. 3. 33. ^h 1 Pet. 1. 6. ⁱ Job 34. 31. ^k Chap. 33. 24. ^l Eccl. 3. 14. ^m Job 9. 15. ⁿ Chap. 33. 15. ^o James 5. 7. ^p Psal. 9. 8. ^q Psal. 73. 17. ^r Rom. 8. 18. ^s Heb. 12. 11.

amazement, and shalt say in thy heart, *I lost my children, and was desolate; a captive, and removing to and fro; (had no abiding place) who hath begotten me these ?!* Whence came they! What root sprang they from! My *light afflictions* were not worthy to be compared with this glory ^u! He'll never repent that he sowed in tears, who brings home his sheaves with such joy. But as you go along to this your blessed home, and sweet place of eternal rest, it may be worth the while to ruminate on such scriptures as these, *'Tho' a sinner do evil an hundred times, and his days be prolonged, (he goes unpunished;)* yet surely it shall be well with them that fear God: But it shall not be well with the wicked ^x: Verily, there is a reward for the righteous: Verily, he is a God who judgeth in the earth ^y, and his judgment is according to truth ^z; and blessed are they that wait for him ^a.

Infer. 6. Lastly, All the objections that are brought against the doctrine of election's *absoluteness, personality and eternity;* the *peculiarity* of redemption; the *efficacious predominance* of grace in calling; and believers *invincible perseverance* in faith and holiness, would all be disbanded and sent to their own place, were this one truth (which none in words will deny) but truly believed and received in love, viz. *That God hath an absolute right of dominion over his creatures, to dispose and determine of them as seemeth him good; and that, in the doing thereof, he cannot but do right.*

And so I come to the matter first intended.

^t Isa. 49. 21. Chap. 60. ^u 2 Cor. 4. 17. ^x Eccl. 8. 12, 13. ^y Psal. 58. 11. ^z Rom. 2. 2. ^a Isa. 30. 18.



Of ELECTION.

THE doctrine of *election* containeth the whole sum and scope of the gospel; and our minds, if *honestly* subdued to the doctrine of God's *sovereignty*, cannot be employed about a more excellent subject. It is called the

D 2

founda-

foundation of God, not only because of the *supereminency* of it, but as a foundation of *his own* laying, which *God himself* is the author of, and he *alone*; and the *basis* whereof is *himself*: It is that foundation which standeth *sure*, and keeps them all *sure* who stand upon it.

ELECTION is the pitching of *everlasting love*, or the *good pleasure of God*, *choosing and decreeing to eternal life*: It is the *great charter of heaven*, *God's special and free-grace deed of gift* to his chosen ones, made over in trust unto *Jesus Christ*, for their use and benefit. Now, in deeds of *gift* (to make them authentick) there must be inserted, the name of the *donor*, or person that *gives*; the name of the *donee*, or person to *whom*; the *quality and extent* of the *thing* that is *given*; the *time* when it was done; the *consideration that moved therto*: And, in case of *impotency*, it is usual and necessary to ordain some friend, as *feoffee in trust*, who is to stand sealed or possessed of the *gift* for the *donee's* use. All which are evidently found in scripture-election, and may be summed into this proposition;

Prop. *That there is a peculiar people, who were personally chosen of God in Christ, according to his own good pleasure, and ordained to eternal life, before the world began.*

Before I come to downright proof of the proposition, I shall first explain the terms, and then produce some instances of a *lower* kind of election, *scil.* to matters of a lower concern, than *that* of eternal life, which yet may be reckoned a type and shadow of it.

I. For explanation. This word [*peculiar*] denotes the *exemption* or *privileging* of a person or thing from the power of another, in whose jurisdiction it was, or seemed to be: It sometimes signifies *riches* or *substance*, which is of a man's own proper getting, by labour and industry: It is also used to denominate such part of a man's inheritance as he *keeps in his own hands*, which our law calls his *demesne* lands. In all which respects, the *elect* are aptly termed a *peculiar people*. For, (1.) Tho' *Satan* be prince of the world, and rules on every side; yet, as touching the *elect*, it is but an usurped and

and temporary jurisdiction that he hath over them. They do, indeed, belong to another Prince, to whom their chief Lord hath given them; who therefore (in the appointed time) will rescue them from that usurpation. (2.) They are the Lord's *treasure* or *inheritance*, obtained by labour indeed, with sweat and blood; than which nothing is more a man's own, nor hardlier parted with. Such was the portion bestowed by *Jacob* on his beloved *Joseph*, even *that* which he got with his *sword* and with his *bow*, Gen. xlviii. 22. And, (3.) They are the Lord's *domestics*: He keeps them in *his own* hands, tenders them as the *apple of his eye*, and will not betrust them in the hands of *others*; no nor of their *own selves*.

[*Chosen* or *elect*ed:] The proper import of the word is, to select, or make choice of one or more out of a greater number. [*Personally*] chosen, *i. e.* they were singled forth, or pitched upon *by name*; and chosen *in Christ*, or into Christ, as their Head and Mediator; that, being in him, all the grace and glory they were chose unto might be rightfully theirs, and accordingly applied to them.

[*To ordain*] is the same here as to *predestinate*, *appoint*, *prepare*, *decree*, or *fore-determine* of things to come; which was in such a manner done, that the event always has, does, and ever shall, justly succeed, according to designment. In this sense men cannot be said to predestinate, because they cannot, with any certainty, determine of things not yet in being: But all things were present with God from eternity, and his decree the cause of their after-existence.

By [*eternal life*] I understand, not only the saints actual possession of blessedness and glory; (which consists in their perfect conformity to God, and union with him, according to the 17th of *John*) but also whatever is *requisite* thereto, by way of *right preparation*, or otherwise: Wherein are comprised the *mediation of Christ*, *effectual calling*, and *final perseverance* in faith and holiness; which are indeed but so many parts or subdivisions of election. Ye have them all conjoin'd in one verse, both as appropriate to the *same* persons, and as being inseparable; in *Isa.* lxii. 12. where those for whom the high-way is cast up, are termed, *the holy people*; there's their *election*: The *redeemed of the Lord*; that is plainly *redemption*: They are also said to be *sought out*;

which imports their *effectual calling* : And a city not to be forsaken, which implies not less than *perseverance*. And they are here put in succession, as they fall in order of time : *Election* is therefore call'd, a *preparing unto glory* ^a.

[*Before the world began.*] The same thing for brevity's sake is commonly called *eternity*, and in scripture-phrases *from everlasting*.

[*According to his own good pleasure.*] This shews the root of election ; the great bottom-ground on which it is founded, exclusive to all things else, as being any way *causal*, *contributory* or *motive* thereto.

II. For *instances* of a *lower* kind of election : Consider here, God's chusing or destinating certain persons by *name* (and some of them *before they were born*) to signal and eminent service in the world ; wherein they were patterns of the *election* we are treating of, and may well be accounted a collateral proof and evidence of it.

Abraham was pitched upon to be the root and father of God's peculiar people, whom he would own and honour above the nations of the world ; and that in him *all families of the earth shall be blessed* ^b : Which contains a promise, that the *Messias*, or Saviour of the world, should come of his posterity ; a wonderful high honour ! But, what was there in *Abraham*, that might move God thus to prefer him above the rest of his kindred ? Was *he* any thing more to God, or had he serv'd him better, than other idolaters with whom he liv'd ? No, in nowise ; and yet the Lord *singled* him forth, and called him *alone* ^c. And, in truth, no other reason can be given for it, than what is given for his love to *Abraham's* posterity ; *He lov'd them because he lov'd them* ^d. Nor was he pitch'd upon to be *the father of many nations*, nor *Sarah* to be the *mother* of them, for any natural fruitfulness in them above others : For *Abraham's* body was now dead, and *Sarah*, besides her natural barrenness, was past the age of child-bearing ; which occasion'd her to laugh at this promise : For who, indeed, would make choice of a dry'd stock and barren soil to begin his nursery with ? In such materials there is nothing to induce to it.

The same course he was pleas'd to take with *Abraham's*

^a Rom. 9. 23. ^b Gen. 12. 1-3. ^c Isa. 51. 2. ^d Deut. 7. 7, 8.

immediate seed : he takes not *all* of them ; but, *In Isaac shall thy seed be called* ^c. Thus *Isaac* was taken, and *Ishmael* left. And tho' *Abraham's* prayer was heard for *Ishmael*, so as to have him blessed with outward things ; yet, as to the main thing, God rejects him, and resolves to *establish his covenant with Isaac* ^f, who was yet *unborn*.

The like also he doth by *Isaac's* children. *Jacob* he loved, but *Esau* he hated ^g ; which is both the prophet's and apostle's exposition of those words, [*The elder shall serve the younger*] ^h. And this difference was put before they were born ; yea, and entail'd also upon their posterities. The one are the people of his wrath, against whom he hath indignation for ever ⁱ ; *Their captivity shall not return ; when the whole earth rejoiceth, they shall be desolate, &c.* ^k : But for *Jacob*, the Lord will bring them back to their own land, and plant them, and build them assuredly ; and do them good with his whole heart ^l. But let it be observed, it was not *Jacob's* more worthy demeanour, whether foreseen or acted, that procured him the blessing. *Esau* did more for it than he, and more sincerely : He hunted for venison, and for true venison, such as his father loved ; which he also makes ready, and brings with speed, big with expectation of his blessing ; which also he seeks importunately, with tears and bitter crying ^m. Now, what good thing does *Jacob* do to inherit the blessing ? 1. He goes about to invade another's right ; for the blessing belong'd to the first-born. 2. He seeks to pervert the known intention of his father, which was to bless *Esau*. 3. He abuseth his father with counterfeit venison. 4. He takes the name of God in vain, to make his dispatch the more probable ⁿ. 5. He seeks it by fraud and downright lying : He clothes his neck and hands with the kid's skin, and roundly affirms himself to be *Esau* ; (very improper means to obtain a blessing.) It need not be asked, which of the two's deportment was most deserving ? One would easily conclude the blessing to be *Esau's* : But see the event ! he that carries himself unworthily, carries away the blessing ; he that behaves himself dutifully, to obtain it, is dismiss'd without it : And tho' his father,

D 4

blessed

^c Gen. 21. 12. ^f Ch. 17. 9. ^g Mal. 1. 2, 3. ^h Rom. 9. ⁱ Gen. 25. 23. ^j Mal. 1. 4. ^k Ezek. 35. 3, 14. ^l Jer. 31. 37, 44. ^m Gen. 27. 4, 5, 28. ⁿ Gen. 27. 28.

bleſſed *Jacob* unwittingly, and by miſtake, yet, when he came to know it, he was ſo far from *reverſing* what he had done, that he earneſtly *affirms* it; *I have bleſſed him, yea, and he ſhall be bleſſed* °. Would we know, now, the reaſon of this ſtrange and (according to men) irrational event? It was, *That the purpoſe of God according to election might ſtand*; (the elder muſt ſerve the younger) *not of works, but of him that calleth* ¶. And 'tis wonderful to obſerve how God ordered the whole courſe of this tranſaction, as intending it a full and pregnant example of *eternal election*: For it holds forth plainly, the *ſovereignty of God* over his creatures, in taking whom he will; the *freeneſs of his grace*, in chuſing thoſe that are *leſs deſerving*; the *ſure effect* of his purpoſes, with his wiſe and *certain* ordering of things relating to his end; as alſo his uſing of means and inſtruments therein, quite beſides the *natural ſcope* of them, and contrary to their own intendment.

Then for the *Iſraelites*: This people the Lord choſe in *Abraham* 400 years before he publickly own'd them: They are expreſſly term'd, *an elect nation*, as being ſeparated from the reſt of the world; *an holy, ſpecial, peculiar people unto God*. He took them for *his own portion, the lot of his inheritance*: Read his own words, (for they are precious words with thoſe to whom they appertain) *Ye ſhall be holy unto me; for I have ſepered you from other people, that ye ſhould be mine* ¹. *The Lord thy God hath choſen thee to be a ſpecial people unto himſelf, above all people that are on the face of the earth* ². *The Lord this day hath avouched thee to be his peculiar people, and to make thee high above all nations* ³. *The Lord had a delight in thy fathers to love them, and he choſe their ſeed after them, even you above all people* ⁴, &c. But were they as far above other nations in *goodneſs, greatneſs, or excellent demeanour*? Had they better improv'd their part in the common ſtock? And was *that* it which entitled them to this honour? No ſuch matter; as appears, (1). By the reaſon there aſſign'd; *Ye ſhall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people, [for all the earth is mine]* ⁵. It is as if the Lord had ſaid, There is no difference between you and other nations;

° Gen. 27. 33. ¹ Rom. 9. 11. ² Lev. 20. 26. ³ Deut. 7. 6, ⁴ Ch. 26. 18, 19. ⁵ Ch. 10. 15. ⁶ Exod. 19. 5.

tions; all the earth is mine, and I may take where I will; I am not tied to any; I might take of them, and discard you; they cannot carry it more unworthily than you have done, and will do: I looked from heaven, and considered their works and yours; I see that your hearts are fashion'd alike. And, (2). Their after-demeanour did abundantly verify it; and the Lord foresaw it: *I knew that thou wouldst deal very treacherously, and wast called a transgressor from the womb; that thou wouldst be obstinate, thy neck an iron sinew, and thy brow brass; and that thou wouldst do only evil from thy youth**, &c. What then was the cause or motive of God's chusing them above others? It was his undeserved love and favour to them; *he loved them, because he loved them*†.

Come to *David*: God had provided himself a king among *Jesse's* Sons, and *Samuel* must go to anoint him; but it must be *him whom the Lord should name to him*: Not the eldest or goodliest person; and therefore, says he, (when they pass before him) *The Lord hath not chosen this, nor this, nor these*, but *David*. 'Tis true, the Lord did not mention *David's* name to *Samuel*; but he did what was equivalent: For, when *David* comes in, he tells him, *This is he, anoint him*‡. And observe, this [he] was the youngest, the meanest and most unlikely; scarce reckon'd as one of the family, for he was not brought in among the rest. Then, note his circumstance; his employment was to keep the sheep; his exercise, what was it but such as is reckon'd effeminate? he addicted himself to musick. See also his complexion, or constitution of body, white and ruddy; no promising character of a martial spirit: And yet this man (or rather this lad and stripling) thus qualified, and thus educated, he must be the captain of the Lord's host; who yet had the greatest enemies to deal with, and therefore had need of a man of courage and conduct to be over them. Well, let *David's* birth, complexion, employment, education, be what it will, never so unlikely in all human respects; yet this *David* is, and must be, the man whom the Lord will honour to rule his people, to fight their battles, and to do exploits. In this choice the Lord was pleased to set by whatever is taking with men:

* *Isa.* 48. 4, 8. *Jer.* 32. 30. † *Deut.* 7. 8. & 9. 4. ‡ *1 Sam.* 16. 1, 12.

men: *He seeth not as man seeth*; i. e. he regards not men for their natural accomplishments: If for any thing, it must be (probably) for some excellent endowment of the *mind*; and that of *wisdom* is of as weighty consideration in the choice of a prince, as any other: But this is no inducement or motive to God; *he respects not any that are wise in heart*^a: And, if he did, it was not here to be had; *David* had no princelike qualities above his brethren, until afterwards; as is plainly intimated in these words, *The Spirit of the Lord came upon him [from that day forward]*^b.

Then for *Jeremiah*: The Lord ordains him to be a prophet, sets him over nations and kingdoms, commissions him to root out and pull down, to build, and to plant, &c. Why? what had *Jeremiah* done, that the Lord should call him to so imperial a work? Sure no great matter; for this he was ordained to before he was born; *Before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee; I sanctified thee, and ordained thee a prophet*. It also appears by his own confession, how unmeet he was for such a work, and unwilling; *I cannot speak, for I am a child*^c.

Another instance may be *Cyrus*. This man was decreed to a great and noble work: It was, in brief, to destroy the golden monarchy; to break in pieces the hammer of the whole earth; to release God's people out of captivity, and to build his temple; and this was prophesied of him more than an hundred years before *Cyrus* was born. The Lord styles him, his *anointed*, his *elect*, his *shepherd*, and one that should perform all his pleasure: And he calls him by his name too; which is twice repeated as a thing to be remark'd: And, to enforce it the more, he adds a note of narrower observance; *I have called thee [even thee] by thy name*^d.

Was *Cyrus* thus chosen, because he would be a puissant prince? or did the Lord make him puissant and victorious, because appointed to such a work? Hear what the Lord himself (who best knows the ground of his own designation) says of him; *Thus saith the Lord to his anointed, to Cyrus, whose right hand I have holden, (i. e. I gave him strength, and taught him how to use it) I will loose the loins of kings,*
and,

^a Job 37. 24. ^b 1 Sam. 16. 13. ^c Jer. 1. 5, 6. ^d Isa. 44. 28. & 45. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 13.

and open to him the two-leaved gates; I will go before him, — I will break in pieces the gates of brass, and cut in sunder the bars of iron, &c. But what shall Cyrus have done; that the great God should do him this honour? He did not so much as know the Lord; which also is twice repeated, as a matter worthy our observation, *Isa. xlv. 1, to 5.*

Lastly, *Paul*: The Lord from heaven commissionates him his preacher general among the *Gentiles*; to bear his name before kings; to mawl and ransack the devil's kingdom; and to turn the world upside down: Witness his doings at *Ephesus, Athens*, and other places. And this he was called to, even while in the heat of his persecuting fury against that name, which now he is sent to preach: And that there was no motive on *Paul's* part, himself is witness; where, speaking of that his call, he ascribes it to the pleasure and power of God, as much as he doth his natural birth, *Gal. i. 15.* the original of all which is couched in that word, *He is a [chosen] vessel unto me, Acts ix. 15.*

I might also bring in the stories of *Samson, Josiah, John Baptist* and others, to the same effect, but that time would fail. Now, these instances may not be valued as historical relations only, (that would be too narrow a meaning for them) but according to the scripture-way of inferring, and improving to spiritual uses; and so they will be a good preparatory proof of the business in hand. For if there be an election personal unto things of less eminent concernment, and that so long before some of the persons were in being; if also there be an absoluteness in God's decrees concerning these; how much more in matters of eternal weight! And if the Lord did not look out of himself for the moving consideration on which he selected those persons to their several honours and achievements, (and, if he had, he should have found none) much less can election to eternal salvation, and union with himself, be founded in the creature. Doth God take care for oxen? From the less to the greater is the scriptural way of arguing, and proves strongly.

I come now to a more direct and positive proving the proposition; wherein my present scope is not so much to prove, *That there is an election*, as *what this election is; viz. How it is qualified and circumstantiated*: And this respects the ob-
jects

jects of election, with the *manner, time* and *motives* of it. And yet, as introductive to *these*, it may be expedient to touch on the *other*: And so (for the clearer discussion thereof) I cast the proposition into six branches.

- I. *That there is an election of men to salvation.*
- II. *That this election is absolute.*
- III. *That it is personal.*
- IV. *That it is from eternity.*
- V. *That the elect were chosen in Christ.*
- VI. *That election is founded upon grace.*

These being made good by positive scripture, or arguments taken thence, it will not much concern us what is alledged to the contrary. They are of the deep things of God, and discoverable only by scripture-light, and therefore in vain are they brought to any other touch-stone; for who hath known the mind of the Lord, or can, but as himself hath been pleased to reveal it?

I. *There is an election of men to salvation.*

That is, there are *some*, a certain remnant, that shall be *saved*; and this by vertue of *election*.

This is clearly implied in those noted and compendious sentences, *vessels of mercy, afore [prepared] unto glory* ^e; *The [election] hath obtained* ^f; *The Lord added to the church such as [should be saved]* ^g; And as many as were [ordained] to eternal life believed ^h; But more expressely in *Rom. xi. 5. There is a remnant according to the [election of grace:]* *1 Thess. v. 9. God hath not [appointed] us unto wrath, but [to obtain salvation:]* and *2 Thess. ii. 13. God hath from the beginning [chosen] you to salvation, &c.* And *these* are called *the election*, or party of elect ones; as those *circumcised* are called the *circumcision*; and the angels that *stood*, are distinguished from *those* that *fell*, by the title of *elect*. They are also said to be *chosen vessels*, and *vessels of mercy*; as those that are *left*, *vessels of wrath*, and *sons of perdition*. The scripture still sets them forth by distinguishing characters.

I. As

^e *Rom. 9. 23.* ^f *Rom. 11. 7.* ^g *Acts 2. 47.* ^h *Acts 13. 48.*

1. As a party separate from the world. I (says Christ). have chosen you out of the world ⁱ: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me ^k; and, they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world ^l: Unto [you] it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God; but unto [them without] all things are done in parables ^m. Of Jacob and Esau, (who were an evident type of this separation) it is said to Rebekah, Two nations are in thy womb, and two manner of people ⁿ: And of Jacob's posterity, The people shall dwell alone, and shall not be reckoned among the nations ^o: And, This people (says God) have I formed for myself ^p: These are the people of his holiness: The rest are adversaries ^q.

2. As men of another race or kindred, and as springing from another root. We are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness ^r, or in that wicked one, as their root and head: He that is of God, heareth God's word; ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God ^s. The one party are said to be children of light, the other of the night ^t: The one of God, the other of the world ^u: The one is from above, the other from beneath ^x: God is the Father of the one, the devil of the other ^y.

3. As men subject to another head. We are thine, (says the church to God) thou never barest rule over them ^z: All that the Father giveth me (saith Christ) shall come to me ^a: My sheep hear my voice; I know them, and they follow me; and a stranger they will not follow ^b: And this because one is their master, even Christ ^c. Of others, he saith, that they will not come unto him ^d. The one party are followers of the Lamb, the other of the prince of darkness, led captive by him at his will.

4. As belonging to another world. The good seed are the children of the kingdom ^e; and they are distinguished from the children of this world, as a party accounted worthy to obtain the world to come ^f: And accordingly we find, that none are admitted into the new Jerusalem, but whose names were found

ⁱ John 15. 19. ^k Ch. 17. 9. ^l Ch. 17. 16. ^m Mark 4. 11. ⁿ Gen. 25. 23. ^o Numb. 23. 9. ^p Isa. 43. 21. ^q Ch. 63. 18. ^r 2 Pet. 2. 9. ^s 2 John 5. 19. ^t John 8. 47. ^u 1 Thess. 5. 5. ^x 1 John 4. 4, 5, 6. ^y John 8. 23. ^z Ch. 8. 41, 42, 44. ^a Isa. 63. 19. ^b John 6. 37. ^c John 10. 3. ^d Mat. 23. 8. ^e John 5. 40. ^f Mat. 13. 38. ^g Luke 20. 35.

found written in the book of life ^b; and whose name soever was not written there, was cast into the lake of fire ^h. On the same account Judas is said to go to his own place ⁱ, and the elect into the kingdom prepared for them ^k. I shall bring but one only argument for proof of this branch, (and it is of that weight, that there needs not another) viz. That, except the Lord had thus reserv'd a remnant, no flesh had been saved: The whole world would have been as Sodom, Isa. i. 9.

II. Election is absolute.

In this are two things of great import, *irrevocableness* and *independency*. The decree is *irrevocable* on God's part, and *independent* as to human performances. The Lord will not go back from his purpose to save his people; nor shall their own unworthiness, or averfeness, make void, or hinder his most gracious intendment. And hence those various expressions of the same thing (viz *Predestinate*, *ordain*, *prepare*, *appoint*) have nothing subjoin'd that is like a conditional. There is indeed a kind of conditions (or rather qualifications) that must, and always do, percede the final compleatment of election; as *repentance towards God*, and *faith towards our Lord Jesus Christ*: Which therefore may be called conditionals of *salvation*, but not so to *election*.

Election is the great *fundamental institute* of the Gospel: It is that which in human states is called the *supreme law*; which is both *irreverfible* in itself, and requires that all inferior administrations may be *accommodated* thereto. So the salvation of God's elect, being the highest law of the heavenly state and kingdom, must on the same (and firmer) ground remain *inviolable*. It is that for which all things else have their being; the plot whereby God designs to himself the *highest glory*, and for which he hath been at such cost, that, should his designment miscarry, the whole creation could not countervail the damage. He could not therefore (for God cannot deny himself) I say, he could not so contrive the grandest design of his glory, as that it should ever need to be revoked or altered: Nor could he leave it obnoxious

to disappointment; as it must have been, if ventured on a created bottom: Yea, it behoved him, as *supreme law-giver*, so to determine and subjugate *all*, that the great end of all might remain *infrustrable*. And thus any prudent founder of a state would do, if the utmost of his skill and power would extend to it: But, from their defectiveness in those, the best founded states upon earth are subject to mutation: Princes die, and their thoughts perish; their minds alter and depart from their first intendments; successors drive a contrary interest; unlook'd-for accidents intangle them; foreign enemies inroach upon them and obstruct their work: Or the people's own folly may be such, as to mar and defeat the best laid designs for their own good. Human affairs are exposed to a thousand incidents, which human prudence can neither prevent nor provide against. But with God it is not so: No event can be new to him: *He declares the end from the beginning*¹: His judgment and purpose cannot alter: *He is of one mind, and who can turn him*^m: He is also *immortal*, and the thoughts of his heart stand fast to all generationsⁿ: No creature can seclude itself from his government; *in his hand is the soul of every living thing*^o: Yea, the most *casual* (to us) and *opposite* emergencies are by his power and wisdom reducible to his purpose, and cannot resist their being made subservient to his will. And this may be one reason why election is so often said to be *from the beginning*, and *from the foundation of the world*, viz. to shew, that whatever should be in time should be *subordinate* to election; which is all one as to make it *absolute*. And further, this *absoluteness* may be evinced by such arguments as these.

Arg. I. If election were not absolute, it would be but after the covenant of works; which being *conditional*, how soon was it broken, even by one who had power to keep it! And, if man in that honour did not abide in it, how should he now, when so strong a bias is grown upon his heart, that he runs counter ever since^p? If there had been a law given that could have given life, righteousness should have been by the law^q: Which shews, that the new covenant does

¹ Isa. 46. 10. ^m Job 23. 13. ⁿ Psal. 33. 11. ^o Job 12. 10. ^p Gen. 6. 5. ^q Gal. 3. 21.

does more for us than the *old*; for it giveth *life*; and then it must give the *performance* of the *condition* which that *life* depends upon: It also shews that the *first covenant* did not give *life*, and that it *fail'd* because it was *conditional*. The law shews our duty, but gives not wherewith to perform it: The *new covenant* doth *both*, by writing the law in the heart. All under the *covenant of works* are *without God, without Christ, and without hope*; and this because strangers to the *covenant of grace, or grace of election*. If therefore the elect shall be in a *better condition* than before, their election must be *absolute*: And, that it might be *so*, the *new covenant* was made with *Christ* on their behalf, and is *that grace given us in him before the world began* *.

Arg. II. Election must be *absolute*; because whatever can be supposed the *condition* of it, is a part of the *thing itself*: Much like that promise of God to *Abraham*, *To thy seed will I give this land* *. In which promise the Lord undertakes as well to give *Abraham* a seed to inherit that land, as that land to his seed: And accordingly we find that the next head of that seed was born by virtue of the *promise* ^u. So the whole course and series of things conducing to the final accomplishment of election is included in it, and ascertain'd by it; and that with such firmness and security, as if the end itself had been attain'd when the decree was made; as (namely) redemption from sin, effectual calling, and perseverance to glory; (of which more fully under those heads:) Which also seems to be the meaning of the apostle, where he makes *eternal life* itself to be the substance of the *promise* ^x.

Arg. III. It must be *absolute*, because by such an election only can salvation be *insur'd*. *This* bottom *Adam* had not in his primitive state: He was made upright, but his *continuing* in that state depended upon his well using of what he had, without any additional help. In him may be seen the *utmost* that *created grace*, of itself, can do, even in a state of *perfection*; unto which being left, how soon did he degenerate, and come to ruin? And all his posterity would have run in the

* *Eph.* 2. 12. ^s *2 Tim.* 1. 9. *Tit.* 1. 2. ^t *Gen.* 12. 7. ^u *Gal.* 4. 23; 28.
^x *1 Pet.* 2. 25.

the same course, if placed in his stead; as we know they have done (one by one) notwithstanding all the helps which are given in common unto men: And 'tis no wonder, since now they have so strong a bent unto evil, which *Adam* had not. And, if there be any advantage cast in, (which some do affirm, and, call it the *new covenant*) the more is our doctrine confirm'd: For the more helps they have, if yet they fall short, (as they do) the more evident it is, that nothing short of *such* an election will secure them. An example of this we have in the old world, who by all their natural ingenuity, and long lives to improve it, together with *Noah's* sixscore years preaching, and the Spirit's striving, were not led unto God, but still grew from bad to worse, until all the imaginations of their hearts were *only* evil, and that continually ^v. And this was not the case only of *some*, but of the *whole* race universally: *All flesh had corrupted his way* ². It is true, that *Noah* was found righteous; and as true it is, that election was it that made him so. *Noah* found grace in the eyes of the Lord ³, in the same sense that *Paul* obtained mercy ^b; *scil.* by mercy's obtaining, or taking hold of him. It may also be seen in the people of *Israel*, who, over and above their *common* or *natural* grace, had many helps and additions that others had not: *The Lord dealt not so with any nation as with them* ^c; and yet the generality of them so bad, that they justified their sister *Sodom* ^d.

The first covenant thus failing, such was the grace of our Lord (foreseeing it) as to determine of a *second*, or *new* covenant; by which he would fix and secure a remnant, and that infallibly. And hence it is termed, the covenant of grace, as not depending at all upon works; and this is that grace that saves, and reigns to eternal life ^e. And these are the sure mercies of *David*, recorded in the 55th of *Isaiah*: It is the absoluteness of it that maketh it a better covenant.

Arg. IV. There is the same reason for the absoluteness of mens election, as of *Christ's*. That man, or human body, which the second person was to assume and unite to himself, was not ordained to that union upon any condition whatever; as namely, if he should fulfil all righteousness, destroy the

E

devil,

^v Gen. 6. 8. ² Ch. 6. 12, ³ ver. 8. ^b 1 Tim. 1. 16. ^c Psalm 147. 19, 20. ^d Ezek. 16. 51. ^e Rom. 5. 21, Eph. 2. 5, 8.

devil, dissolve his works, and make atonement for sin; for these he could not have done without that union. And that his ordination thereto was *absolute*, appears by *Heb. x. 5. A body hast thou prepared me.* And, *Luke i. 35. That holy thing which shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God.* *Mat. i. 21. He shall save his people from their sins.* In which places the *absoluteness* of the decree for that man's being united to the Son of God, is evidently set forth. And that our election (as to this circumstance of it) holds proportion with that of *Christ*, ye will see more fully afterwards. Take only, at present, those gracious words, which, doubtless, he uttered with great satisfaction to himself in the 17th of *John*, *Thou hast loved them, as thou hast loved me*, Ver. 21.

Arg. V. It was requisite that election should be *absolute*, because of the *absoluteness* of God's decree touching the death of his Son, unto which he was fore-ordained *unrepealably* ^f: And all that were saved before he suffered, were saved on the credit of that decree ^g. The scripture also says plainly, that *he was the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world* ^h, and that it was *not possible* that cup should pass from him ⁱ. And if it be a thing below the prudence of *men*, to lay down the price without securing the purchase; then, surely, the wisdom of God *could* not determine the death of his Son for mens salvation, and yet leave the salvation of those very men at an *uncertainty*; which it must have been, if their election were *not absolute*.

Arg. VI. Lastly, It might also be argued from the nature of divine *promises*, which are *patterns* or declarative *copies* of the decree. Now, the *promises* touching spiritual blessings are *absolute*. They are of that word which is *for ever settled in heaven* ^k. See the *promises* of sending *Christ* to be a Redeemer ^l; the Holy Ghost to sanctify and lead into all truth ^m; to sprinkle clean water upon them; to give them a new heart; to cause them to walk in his statutes; and that he will be their God, and they shall be his people, and shall not depart from him ⁿ; that, if they sin, he will chastise them with the rods of men, but his everlasting kindness he *will not* take from them;

^f 1 Pet. i. 20. ^g Rom. 3. 25, 26. ^h Rev. 13. 8. ⁱ Mat. 26. 39, 42.
^k Psal. 119 89. ^l Gen. 3. 15. ^m John 16. 13. ⁿ Jer. 24. 7. Ezek. 36. 26.

them ^o; and that at last he will *present them faultless before the presence of his glory* ^p. These all, with others of like tenor, are delivered in positive and absolute terms, without any shew of reservation, proviso, or condition. And if *these*, which are *transcripts* of the decree, be *absolute*, it follows, that the *decree* also is the same: And on this ground it is the Apostle stands, when he challengeth all the world to nullify God's election ^q; which he could not have done, had not election been *sovereignly absolute*.

III. *Election is personal*: And,

IV. *It is from eternity*.

These two I put together in proof, because they are frequently joined in scripture. It was not the whole lump of mankind that was the object of election; neither was *election* (as some speak) a *decree* to elect such as should happen to be *thus* and *so* qualified: But certain determinate persons were chosen by *name*, or singled out from among the rest, and ordained to eternal life. Our Saviour styles them the *men that were given him* [out] of the world ^r: And they were given him by *name*, as well as number; and by those names he knows them ^s. It is not unworthy our deepest resentment; how the Lord takes notice of the *names* of his people; as intending it (doubtless) as a signal token of the special regard he hath to their persons. He therefore tells *Moses*, *I know thee by name* ^t. It is an appropriating of them to himself; *Isa. xliii. 1. I have called thee by thy name, thou art mine*. Sometimes also, when he calls to those he eminently owns, he doubles their name by repetition. Thus to his friend *Abraham*, *Gen. xxii. 11. to Moses* his servant, *Exod. iii. 4.* and others. But I find no instance of his speaking so to *other* men: And these, I suppose, are recorded, as worthy of special remark; and that 'tis no light matter, (much less to be scoffed at, as it is by some frothy spirits) that the elect were chosen by *name*, and that their *names* are written in heaven. And that it was transacted *from eternity*, is evident from *John xvii. 23, 24. Eph. i. 4. Rev. xiii. 8. and xvii. 8.* and other scriptures.

E 2

The

^o *Psal. 89 30, 34.* ^p *Jude, v. 24.* ^q *Rom. 8. 33, 34.* ^r *John 17. 6.*

^s *Chap. 10. 3, 14.* ^t *Exod. 33. 17.*

The *personality* of election, with its *eternity*, may be evinced by such arguments as these.

Arg. I. From the example of *Christ's* election. It was not a person *uncertain* that was to be *Lord* and *Christ*, but the second person in human nature; and this capacity he sustained from *everlasting* ^u. Nor was it *any* body which he might assume, but that very same numerical body that was *prepared* for him ^x. And *this very person* he loved before the foundation of the world ^y. It is worthy observation, how *particular* the decree was, even in things *circumstantial* to our Lord *Christ*; as that he should come of *Abraham's* stock, of *Judah's* tribe, of *David's* lineage, be conceived in a virgin, born at *Bethlehem*, and this when the sceptre was departing from *Judah*; that he should be buffeted, scourged, spit upon, hanged on a tree, his hands and his feet pierced; that gall and vinegar should be given him to drink; that a bone of him should not be broken (even while on both sides of him others were;) that his garments should be parted, and lots cast upon his vesture; as also that he should rise again the third day, &c. And that these were *all decreed*, appears by the prophecies of them; which are the decree *exemplified*, or drawn out of the register. As touching his resurrection, it is said expressly in *Psal. ii. 7. I will declare the decree*. And the same is as true of all the rest. And if the election of the *head* was *personal* and from *eternity*, why not *theirs* that should make up his *body*, since *they* did as really exist *then*, as the *human nature* of *Christ* did? Besides, it was very agreeable that he and they should both be appointed *together*; for he could not be an *head*, but with respect to a *body*: And that they were expressly determined of, appears by *Psal. cxxxix. 16. In thy book were all my members written, when as yet there was none of them*. If you say, that was meant of *David's* members; I answer, That, if God thought the members of an *earthly* body worthy his registering, he could not be less particular and exact about the mystical body of his *Son*; besides, *David* was his type.

Christ also was ordained to be a *Saviour*, and that by his death, and both from the foundation of the world ^a: It was therefore

^u *Prov. 8. 23.* and *1 Pet. 1. 20.* ^x *Heb. 10. 5.* *Psal. 40. 7.* ^y *John 17. 24.* ^a *1 Pet. 1. 20.*

therefore expedient, *then*, also to be determined, *how many*, and *who* in particular, should have salvation by him. He was not to die for himself, but for those whose security he undertook. Now, it is not a thing proper, to speak of *security* or *bail*, but with respect to a *debtor* or *offender*; and that debtor or offender must be *known* too, and *named*, or else the entering of the *bail* is an insignificant act; especially where the surety hath no debt or default of his own to be charged with. Our Lord and Saviour did not make his soul an offering for *somebody's* sins, but uncertain *whose*. Aaron knew whose trespasses he offered for; their *names* were graven on his *breast-plate*: Not their *national* name, or qualification (*viz.* *Israelite*, or *believer*) but their *personal* names, *Reuben*, *Simcon*, *Levi*.— So had our great High Priest, or he could not have made atonement for us. And that place (*Rev.* *xiii.* *8.*) points at the *same* time for *both*: Those words [*from the foundation of the world*] do refer as well to the writing their names in the book of life, as to the Lamb's being slain; as is evident from the *8th* verse of the *17th* chapter, where decyphering those who shall wander after the *beast*, he says, they are such whose *names* were [*not*] written in the book of life, [*from the foundation of the world*] as were theirs who followed the Lamb, and whom God had from the beginning chosen to salvation ^b.

Arg. II. The design of God in the death of Christ could not otherwise be secured. Had the design been to purchase salvation for *believers*, without ascertaining the *persons* that should believe; it had been uncertain whether *any* would be saved, because uncertain whether *any* would believe. If *certain* that some would believe, this certainty must be decreed; for nothing future could be certain otherwise. And, if it was decreed that *some* should believe, the *individuals* of that *some* must be decreed also; for faith is the gift of God, and could not be foreseen by any, but whom he had decreed to give it unto. Which laid together, are a good demonstration, that those Christ should die for were as well pre-ordained, as that he should die for them; and that *definitely*, and by *name*.

Arg. III. It may further be argued from the Father's *preparing a kingdom from the foundation of the world*, and *mansions* or places in it. To prepare the way of this argument,

consider the *punctuality* of God's dispoſements in things of a *lower* concern: He did not create the earth in vain (*i. e.* to ſtand empty and void, as at its firſt formation) nor the ſeveral quarters thereof to be inhabited *indefinitely* by ſome nation or other who ſhould happen to get poſſeſſion of them; but *be divided to the nations their inheritance, and the bounds of their habitation* ^c. Mount Seir was given to *Eſau*, and *Ar* to the children of *Lot* ^d: Each nation had its limits ſtaked out, and this *from the days of old*. And if we may diſtinguiſh of *aſts* in God, and of *time* in eternity; his purpoſe to *form* and *bring forth* thoſe nations muſt needs be as early as to create and furniſh thoſe parts of the world which they ſhould inhabit. Now, *earthly* ſettlements being of trivial moment to the *heavenly* manſions, it ſeems a good conſequent, that if yet particular nations were fore-appointed for particular provinces on earth, much more ſhould particular perſons be deſigned for thoſe particular manſions in heaven: And, if either were appointed firſt, it muſt be the *perſons*; for *the ſabbath was made for man, and not man for the ſabbath*. Heaven was made at the beginning of the world, but election was before.

The domeſticks of God's houſe, or place of glory, are a ſacred ſtate or order of *kings* and *prieſts*; and each individual perſon hath his place or apartment ſet out for him. Thoſe glorious places were not prepared for believers *indefinitely*, but for certain *determinate* perſons *particularly*. The twelve apoſtles ſhall have their twelve thrones, and each one his own. This is evident by our Saviour's answer to the mother of Zebedee's children; *To ſit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give; but it ſhall be given to them for [whom] it is prepared of my Father* ^e. If for believers *indefinitely*, why not theſe two brethren, eſpecially ſince they firſt made requeſt for them? The truth is, thoſe *places* were not *now* to be diſpoſed of; it was determined *who* ſhould have them long before, *even from the foundation of the world* ^f. The ſcope of this answer was to ſhew that the places requeſted for were not prepared for *believers* indefinitely, (for theſe were believers who made requeſt for them) but that they were appointed for *certain particular* perſons, and *they* muſt have them. Much might

^c Deut. 32. 8. Acts 17. 26. ^d Deut. 2. 5, 9. ^e Mat. 20. 23. ^f Chap. 25. 34.

might be added, in confirmation hereof; but by these, I hope, it is clear, that *election is personal*, and from *eternity*.

V. *Election is in Christ; or, The elect were chosen in Christ.*

It was requisite the *new covenant* should have an *Head* and *Mediator*, as well as the *old*; that righteousness and life might flow from him into all the elect *seed*, as sin and death had done from *Adam*: In which respect, Christ and he are set forth parallels, in *Romans* iii. from ver. 12, to 21. The benefits which the elect were chosen unto, they are made partakers of by their union with Christ: He is the root in whom the *fulnes* dwells; not only the *foundation* on which the church is built, but the *rock* which affords all spiritual materials of the heavenly temple, even the *cement* that holds one part to another, and the whole to himself; and this by virtue of the decree. For we are to consider, that there is a *decretive* union before the *actual*; and the one influenceth the other into being; and that as really, as the determined death of Christ did the salvation of those who died before him. Tho' Christ be not the *cause* of election, yet he is the *grand means*, by whom we obtain the blessedness we were chosen unto; by whom it is that *we have access into that grace wherein we stand*, Rom. v. 2. And we shall find, that the *epistles* generally, when they speak of the great things relating to salvation, do still bring in Christ as the person *principally* concerned about it. Salvation (indeed) is a gift, it is perfectly free; yet not to be had but in Christ: *It comes upon us thro' his righteousness*; *As by one's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the righteousness of one* (by means of their oneness with him) *shall many be made righteous*, Rom. v. 18, 19. Mankind, by their apostasy in *Adam*, had destroyed in themselves the whole of that principle which would have led them to God as their life and blessedness; and had (withal) contracted such enmity against him, and repugnancy to all overtures for returning to him, (and this gulph was so fixed) as would for ever have kept God and us asunder, had not that blessed project of *choosing in Christ* been set on foot to dissolve it. It could not be done by any created power, nor could creatures so much as propound the way for it; and, if they

could, who durst so harden himself, as to mention the thing which only could do it ! But the great God blessed for ever, he finds out a way for it ; and the same love that ordained to eternal life, would also put it in *such* a way as would *surely* take effect. And, to this end, (*viz.* that those ordained to salvation might be both rightfully *entitled* thereto, and *successfully* brought into it) they were put into Christ by election : He was the *chief* and *eminent* elect One, the *First-born* and *Prince* of the family ; and all the *elect* besides were *given* to him, as younger brethren, to be maintained upon his inheritance. It is plain to him that reads, that the *whole* of *salvation* was laid upon Christ ; that he bears up the pillars of it, and that all shoulders else had been too weak : He is both the *means* and *centre*, by whom and *in* whom God will have all things gathered together in one. He was made *God with us*, that we might be made one in God ; as appears by the scope of his prayer in the 17th of *John*. In him the Father is well-pleased ; and out of him there is nothing pleasing to God, or eternally good for men. We are therefore said to be *chosen* in him ^s, to be *called* in him ^h, to be *created* in him ⁱ, to be *preserved* in him ^k, and in him to be *blessed* with *all spiritual blessings* ^l. Blessings in themselves would not be so to us, if not in Christ ; and, being in him, all things are turned into blessings to us : For *now* nothing can come at *us*, but as coming thro' *him* ; and whatever so comes is *tinctured* by his *divine excellence*, and made *propitious* to us : And *hereby* it is, that the thing we were chosen unto is *effectually* and *infallibly* provided for. There be divers good reasons and ends for God's chusing the elect in *Christ* ; as,

Arg. I. That, by bringing in man's restoration this way, he might, as it were, baffle his great adversary, and outshoot him in his own bow : And it well became the wisdom and grace of God *thus* to do. The devil thought, by poisoning the *root*, to vitiate and ruine the whole *stock* and *progeny* ; and he failed not of his design. The Lord would therefore retrieve that ruin, by putting his elect into an Head *uncapable* of *degeneracy* ; and not only *recover* them, but bring them into a *better* estate than that they had lost : He would set up a *Man* that should be too hard for the *devil*, and be able both

to

^s *Eph.* 1. 4. ^h *Phil.* 3. 14. ⁱ *Eph.* 2. 10. ^k *Jude*, ver. 2. ^l *Eph.* 1. 4.

to destroy *him*, and dissolve his *works*; and he hath accordingly done it. In which method of man's *recovery* is a greater answerableness to the method of his *ruin*; and it is a thing the Lord would have us to mind, as appears by the parallel aforementioned, *Rom. iii. 12,—21.*

Arg. II. That, by shewing us his righteousness in the way and manner of our recovery, we might the more readily subscribe to his righteousness in the imputation of *Adam's sin*: For, without a fight and knowledge of the one, we cannot with any heartiness submit to the other. Hence, some (in their too bold arguings against election) have alledged, That *what Adam did was without their consent*: But will they abide by this allegation? In the matter of *Achan*, each single person stood in the place of the *whole nation*; and so, on the trespass of *one*, wrath came upon *all*: Yet had not that confident people the hardiness to plead, that *Achan's act* concerned not them; they did not consent to it. But let them take heed, lest, while they *thus* excuse themselves from *Adam's sin*, they do not, by parity of reason, seclude themselves from the righteousness of *Christ*; since the setting up of the *second Adam* was as much without their consent as the *first*.

Arg. III. If the elect had not been *in Christ*, the satisfaction he undertook for sinners could not have availed them. As *Adam's sin* could not have been ours, if not in him; so neither the righteousness of *Christ*, if not in him. Divine justice could not have punished him for us, nor absolved us thro' him; we could not have been justified and reconciled by the blood of his cross, had he not sustained our persons, and stood in our stead: Another's act cannot be mine, either in profit or loss, if there be not a legal oneness between us.

Arg. IV. If not in *Christ*, we could not have been sanctified. The lump was sanctified by the first-fruits; and so is the church in *Christ* ^m. The *wild olive* nature could not be suppressed and changed, but by grafting into the *true* ⁿ. A man cannot naturally be born, but from *Adam* as his *natural* head; and as impossible it is to be *born again*, without a like relative union to *Christ* as our *spiritual* Head. There's no being a new creature, but by being in *Christ*: *They that are joined unto the Lord* (and they only) *are one Spirit* with him ^o.

The

^m 1 Cor. 1. 2. ⁿ Rom. 11, 16, 17. ^o 1 Cor. 6. 17. 2 Cor. 5. 17.

The branch must be in the vine, before its sap can be derived into it: He that sanctifieth, and they that are sanctified, must be one. There must be a contact (a touching of him) before this vertue can come from him: For the promises, being all made to Christ ^p, cannot descend to us but as being in him; 'tis *that* makes us heirs of promise. The *Holy Ghost*, in whom all promises are virtually contained, is *shed upon us thro' Jesus Christ* ^q.

Arg. V. Lastly, By this chusing in Christ, salvation itself is invincibly secured; and could not otherwise. The first *Adam* had but a conditional life; it depended on his own personal obedience, and therefore subject to losing: And, had he kept it, he could have derived to us but the same that himself had; which must still have been a mutable state. (For *this Adam*, while a publick person, and as such, could not be said to be in Christ; if he had, he should not have fell.) But the second *Adam* hath life in himself ^r, and that absolutely. He is the *Prince of life* ^s, and implantation into him inspires his branches with his own life. And the law of that Spirit of life in him, makes free from the law of sin and death ^t. He that thus hath the Son, hath life ^u, and shall have it more abundantly ^x. Because he lives, they shall live also ^y. It is a bottom that cannot miscarry. As they are sanctified in Christ Jesus, so in him they are preserved ^z. To this end, it pleased the Father, that in him should all fulness dwell ^a, and to put those he would save into him as their Head; that, being incessantly influenced from an immortal root, they might effectually be kept from withering and falling off, and grow up to that state and glory they were designed for by election. This is the grand record, and ground of our safety, that God hath given us eternal life; and this life is in his Son ^b.

Having gone these steps towards the compass and extent of election, it concerns us to know *where* this broad river hath its head, what rock it is that this immense fabrick is built upon; lest we give the honour of it to another, or endanger ourselves by settling on a wrong foundation. To shew which

^p Gal. 3. 16. ^q Tit. 3. 10. ^r John 5. 26. ^s Acts 3. 15. ^t Rom. 8. 2.
^u 1 John 5. 12. ^x John 10. 10. ^y Chap. 14. 19. ^z Jude, ver. 1. ^a Col.
 3. 19. ^b 1 John 5. 11.

which is the scope of the last particular under this general head, viz.

VI. *That election is founded upon grace; or, The good pleasure of God's will, is the only original cause and motive of election.*

Election is a promotion that cometh neither from the east, nor from the west, or south, but from God; who as he puts down one, and sets up another; so *some* he chuseth, and *others* he passes by, as seemeth him good; and none can say to him, What dost thou? or, Why hast thou made me thus? For *election*, as it always supposeth a greater number out of which the choice is made, so an arbitrary power in him that chuseth, to chuse whom he will, without giving account to any for what he doth. But the *ground* or *motive* of divine election is very different from the manner of men: For they commonly pitch upon things for some *natural aptness* of them for their works; they will not take a knotty, cross-grain'd, or wind-shaken piece of timber, to make a pillar of state. But the Lord pitches upon such (and such to chuse) the *poor, base, weak, foolish* things of the world, the worst of men, and *chief of sinners*; the instances of *Paul, Manasseh, Mary Magdalene*, and others, make it evident: And of these he is pleased to make lively images of his Son, and pillars for the house of God, (columns of state indeed!) whereon to write his own name; to manifest thereby his sovereignty, holiness, wisdom, power, righteousness, and free grace to eternity.

The Lord's way and method in bringing his sons to glory, is the best demonstration of the right order of causes: For tho' there be a concurrence of many things as causes and effects one of another, yet, if observ'd in their order, they will lead us up to the *good pleasure of God, as first and supreme, and perfectly independent*. And this I term the *only* original cause of election, to shut out all works and worthiness of men from being any way causal, influential, or motive thereto; and so from sharing in the glory of God's grace, which he is very jealous of, and will not impart to any. The new-testament current runs evidently this way, making the

the whole salvation, both means and end, to depend expressly on the divine will. *It is your Father's [good pleasure] to give you the kingdom* ^c: *Thou hast hid these things from the wise, and revealed them to babes; for [so it seemed good in thy sight]* ^d: *A remnant according to the election of [grace]* ^e: *Predestinate to the adoption of children, according to the [good pleasure of his will]* ^f: *Redemption also, and forgiveness of sin, according to the riches of [his grace]* ^g, (the same grace that elected:) *The making known the mystery of his will; this also is according to that [his good pleasure] which he had purposed in himself* ^h. Yea, all the operations of God, whether for us, upon us, or by us, they all have their rise from the same spring, and are carried by the same rule: *He worketh all things after the counsel of [his own will]* ⁱ. And for the old testament, you have it sufficiently exemplified there in the instances before given, and especially touching the ground of God's love to the people of Israel, (who, in that respect, were the archytype of the spiritual election) viz. That *his own good pleasure* was the only cause of his chusing them above other nations; *He loved them because he loved them* ^k. And, which is yet more, the election of Christ himself was of grace; *It pleased the Father, that in him (the man Jesus) should all fulness dwell*, Col. i. 19.

And good reasons there are, why election should be founded upon grace; and why it could not, with respect either to God's glory, or the elect's security, be founded otherwise. And,

Arg. I. is from the sovereignty of God; whose will, being the supreme law, admits not a co-ordinacy, much less will it stand with sovereign power to be regulated by the will of another: That would be a contradiction to sovereignty. That which regulates must be superior to that which is regulated by it. Sovereign princes (to shew their prerogative) affirm their acts of grace to be of their own mere motion; and their grants are reputed the more authentick, being so exprest. The like we find in scripture frequently ascribed to God; that *he will have mercy on whom he will have mercy* ^l; that

^c Luke 12. 32. ^d Ch 10. 21. ^e Rom. 11. 5. ^f Eph. 1. 5. ^g Eph. 1. Ver. 7. ^h Ver. 9. ⁱ Ver. 11. ^k Deut. 7. 8. & 9. 4 & 10. 15. ^l Rom. 9. 18.

that he worketh all things (not by motives from without, but) after the counsel of his own will ^m; that it is not of mens willing or running, but of God who sheweth mercy ⁿ: And indeed, his own mere motion was both a nobler and firmer consideration, than any desert on the creature's part. When the world had been drown'd for their obdurate impenitency, the few that remain'd were as bad as before; and those that should come after, the Lord foresaw, would be the same. One would think, now, the natural result of this experiment should be, *I will utterly cut them off, and be troubled with them no more.* But the Lord's thoughts are not our thoughts: He argues and concludes in another mode; *I will not again any more curse the ground for man's sake.* And he is pleased to give the same reason here why he will not, as before why he would; as is seen by comparing Gen. vi. 5, & 7. with chap. viii. 21. See also the instance of God's dealings with Ephraim; he was wroth with him, and smote him; and Ephraim so far from relenting, that he went on frowardly (i. e. stubbornly, as resolved in his course) *I bid me* (says the Lord) *and was wroth* ^o. This, one would think, if Ephraim had in him but a spark of ingenuity, or love to himself, should have moved him to alter his course: But what cares Ephraim! He still kept the same way, and it was the way of his heart; not an inconsiderate pet, or sudden temptation, but natural and fixed: All which the Lord sees and considers, and, having laid all together, resolves to heal him, and restore comforts to him ^p. On the other hand, those good souls who feared the Lord, and obeyed the voice of his servants, they yet walked in darkness, and had no light ^q. Ye may be sure, they would gladly have understood their condition, (namely, that they were such as feared the Lord:) Their will could not be wanting to a thing so greatly importing their comfort; nor were they idle in seeking for it; they walked, tho' in the dark, but could not walk themselves out of it; they are still as they were, they had no light. By these different examples it is evident that the sovereignty of God still keeps the throne, and his dispensements of mercy, whether in purpose or in act, are not gover-

^m *Eph. 1. 11.* ⁿ *Rom 9. 16.* ^o *Isa. 57. 16.* ^p *Jer. 18.* ^q *Isa. 50. 10.*

governed by the *wills* of men: They are things too low to be counsellors to God. And if it be thus in things of a lower concernment, much more in that great business of *eternal election*, which is the sublimest act of sovereign power: For *non-election* is not a punishment, but the withholding of a free favour, which God, as sovereign Lord, may justly deny to one sinner, whiles he gives it to another. And yet this hinders not, but that every man, at last, shall be judged according to his works.

Arg. II. Election must be founded *only* upon *grace*, because *grace* and *works* are *inconsistent* in the *cause* of *salvation*. The scripture is very cautelous of admitting *any* thing as a concomitant with *grace* in this matter; yea, altho' it be a thing that doth always *accompany* *grace*, and *that* without which a man cannot be saved. The apostle puts them in opposition, and is very intent on the argument, as a thing of great moment, in *Romans xi.* where first he shews, that, amidst that general defection of the *Jewish* nation, there still was a remnant whom God had reserv'd; *these* he terms, *the foreknown*, *vcr. 2.* and in the *7th verse* he calls them plainly, *the election*: And then, lest any should ascribe it to a false cause (as in that parallel case he resembles it to) *viz.* that *they had not bowed the knee to Baal*, but stuck to the true religion when others fell off; he tells us, No; their *election* was founded upon *grace*: And as for *works*, they had no place in the *causality* of it. By *grace*, he means the free favour of God, who is not moved by any thing without himself; but what he does he does freely, without respect to mens desert: Nay, their *undesert* rather is an expedient consideration in this act of *grace*. By *works*, I understand all that self-righteousness, goodness, conformity to the law, or whatever else is performable by men. These (*viz.* *grace* and *works*) he proves as inconsistent as contraries can be; and that the *least mixture* would *vary the kind*: If but a *scruple* of *works* be taken in, *grace is no more grace, but of debt*; *Rom. iv. 4.* *Grace* and *faith* are well agreed; those both have the *same scope* and *end*: But *grace* and *works* have always clash'd, the *setting up* of the one, is the *deposing* of the other: Either the *ark* must out, or *Dagon* down; one temple cannot hold them both. To the same effect is the drift

drift of that discourse in *Gal. v.* It appears from *Acts xv.* 1. that some there were who taught a necessity of circumcision, as without which they could not be saved. Seemingly willing they were to admit of *Christ*, so they might join circumcision with him; and keeping the law of *Moses*: But this dangerous daubing with things unmixable, our holy apostle could not bruik, both as reflecting on the honour of his master, and undermining their *only* foundation; and therefore, to keep them from or bring them off that perillous quick-sand, he tells them expressly, these two cannot stand together in that matter: For, if they be *circumcised, they are debtors to the whole law*, and *Christ is become of none effect to them*, because *they are fallen from grace*. It is as if he had said, If you take in any part (tho' never so little) of legal observances, as *necessary* to your being justified, ye forfeit the whole benefit of *gospel-grace*: The *grace of Christ* is sufficient for you, he is a Saviour compleat in himself; and, if you look (tho' but askint) at *any thing else*, it is a renouncing of him: He will be a Saviour altogether, or not at all; and therefore he tells them again, and that with a kind of vehemency, that, *if they be circumcised, Christ shall profit them nothing*, *Gal. v. 2.*

And as a man may not put in his claim for justification on account of his works, so neither of his faith, as if that were *materially* or *meritoriously causal* of justification: For faith itself, as it is the believer's act, comes under the notion of a work. Let us therefore consider what part it is that faith holds in this matter; lest, while we cast our works as not standing with grace, we make a work of faith. It is faith's office to make the soul live wholly on the power and grace of another; which is to renounce self-ability, as much as self-desert: To apprehend *that* righteousness by which grace justifies; not only to be justified thereby upon our believing, but to work in us even *that* faith by which we apprehend it[†]. He that will be saved, must come, not only as an ungodly person, but as a man without strength[‡]; and as such (in himself) he must come to be justified freely by the grace of God[§]. For in him (only) can he have strength to believe, even as *righteousness* upon his believing[×]: He must reckon him-

[†] *Rom. 5. 2.* [‡] *Ch. 5. 6.* [§] *Ch. 3. 24.* [×] *Isa. 45. 24.*

himself an ungodly man, to the very instant of his justification. The just, indeed, shall live by faith ; but it is not his own faith, or act of believing, that he lives by, tho' not without it ; which also seems to be the apostle's meaning, where he says, *The life that I now live, I live by the faith of the Son of God : And I live, and yet not I, but Christ liveth in me* ¹. Where note, That as faith is the life of a believer, so Christ is the life of his faith ; and he lives on Christ, by virtue of Christ's living in him.

Notwithstanding all which, it is evidently true, and must constantly be affirm'd, that *grace* and *works* will still be together in the way of salvation ; (the one doth not extinguish or exclude the other) only not as *colleagues* or *joint causes* thereof, but rather as a *workman* and his *tools* which himself first makes, and then works with them. By *grace* ye are *saved through faith* ; and *that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God* ². Even this believing or acting faculty is a creature of *Grace's* raising up ; and therefore, in the *throne*, 'tis meet that *grace* should be above it. *Works* therefore, how good soever, are not the cause of *salvation* ; and if so, then not the cause of *election* : for *this* (indeed) is the cause of them *both* : And *works*, if right and truly good, will always be ready to own their original, and to keep in their own place ; where also they will be most considerable, and do the best service.

Arg. III. That *election* has no other foundation but the good pleasure of God's will, is further argued from mens *incapacity* to afford any ground or motive to God for such a gift. *Adam* stood not so long as to beget a son in his first image : It is seen by his first-born *Cain*, what all his natural seed would naturally be. And tho' some do presume to magnify man, and to speak of him at another rate ; yet evident it is by scripture-light, and the experience of those renewed, that man *fallen* is poor, blind, naked, and at enmity with all that is truly good ; and that he is never more distant from God and his own happiness, than while in high thoughts of himself, glorying in his own understanding, strength, worthiness, freedom of will, improvement of common grace, and the like : For these make him proud and pre-

presumptuous, and to have slight thoughts of that special and peculiar grace by which he must (if ever) be renewed and saved. But the Lord himself, who best knows him, reports the matter quite otherwise; (and we know that his witness is true) viz. That *all the imaginations of their heart are only evil continually*^a: That *their inward part is very wickedness*^b: That *every man is brutish in his knowledge, altogether brutish and foolish*; yea, even *their pastors*^c, that is, the very best and most intelligent among them: That *their hearts are full of madness*^d: *Wise to do evil, but to do good have no knowledge*^e, &c. And it was not thus only with the Gentile nations, who were left to walk in their own way; but even with the Jews, who had all the means of becoming better that could be devised^f, (excepting that of special electing grace, which took in but a remnant): They were called Jews, rested in the law, made their boast of God, knew his will, approved the things that were excellent, were confident that they were a guide of the blind, and a light to them that were in darkness, instructors of the foolish, teachers of babes^g; and yet all this while, and in the midst of all these high attainments, did not teach themselves: And, where they are ranked together, he proves them to be *all under sin, none righteous, none that understandeth, none that seeketh after God, none that doth good* [no not one]^h. Yea, this depravement of nature was so deep and indelibly fixed, that the Lord himself tells them, *The blackmoor might as soon change his skin, as they learn to do well*ⁱ. All which, with abundantly more, bespeaks a condition extremely remote from yielding a cause or motive of this blessed election.

Arg. IV. If God's love to men had its rise from their love to him, it would not have that singular eminency in it, that is justly ascrib'd to it: [God so loved the world^k!] So, as not to be exprest; so, as not to be parallel'd; so, as not to be understood, until we come to that state wherein we shall know as we are known; nor then neither fully, because it is infinite. By this it is that God's love to men is so highly celebrated: [Herein] is love; not that we loved God, but that

F

God

^a Gen. 6. 5. ^b Psalm 5. 9. ^c Jer. 10. 8, 14, 21. ^d Eccles. 9. 3.
^e Jer. 4. 22. ^f Isa. 5. 4. ^g Rom. 2. 7, to 21. ^h Ch. 3. 10, to 18.
ⁱ Jer. 13. 23. ^k John 3. 16.

God loved us ¹. And, Behold what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us ^m! Which surely then is not after the manner of men; for even publicans do so ⁿ, and sumers love those that love them ^o: But to love enemies, and while enemies; (as to love a wife that is an adulteress, and so to love her as to win her heart back again) this is God's love to his chosen.

But notwithstanding these scriptures (with many others) seem purposely written to obviate such conceptions as would feign our loving God to be the ground and motive of his love to us, yet great endeavours there are to father election upon foreseen faith and works; which that they call the covenant of grace, has (they say) qualified and capacitated all men for; and which certain more pliant, ingenuous and industrious persons (as they speak) would attain unto, by the helps they have in common with other men. But this pedigree of election is excepted against, as being not rightly reduced: For, 1. Men having (in Adam) divested themselves of all that was holy and good, the Lord could not foresee in them any thing of worth and desirableness, but what himself should work in them anew, and that of pure grace and favour; for sin and deformity could not be motives of love. And that the elect (of themselves) were in nowise better than other men, is evident by the scriptures lately quoted, where the Holy Ghost, asserting the universal depravement of human nature, exempts not one. But if such excellent and distinguishing qualifications as faith and holiness had been foreseen, (and so imputable to them) the Spirit of truth would not have rank'd them even with the children of wrath ^p, as he doth. But, 2. If they were otherwise, what could they add unto God? or whereby could they oblige him? He respecteth not any that are wise in heart ^q. If thou be righteous, what givest thou him ^r? And who hath prevented me (says the Lord) that I should repay him ^s? i. e. Who is he that is beforehand with God, in doing ought that might induce his favour? He regardeth not persons, nor taketh rewards ^t: He is not propitious to any for what they can do for him, or bring to him. Take Paul for an instance: He walked up to the

¹ 1 John 4. 10. ^m Ch. 3. 1. ⁿ Mat. 5. 46. ^o Luke 6. 32. ^p Eph. 2. 3.
^q Job 37. 24. ^r Ch. 35. 7. ^s Ch. 41. 11. ^t Deut. 10. 17.

the light he had; was blameless; lived in all good conscience; knew no evil of himself (a rare degree of legal righteousness?) But that it was not *this* moved God to make him a *chosen vessel*, he thankfully acknowledgeth, with self-abasement, upon every occasion ^u. 3. Faith follows election: God respects the person before his offering. But was not *Abel* respected as a believer, and his offering for his faith? Yea, but that faith of his was not the *primary cause* of God's respecting him. If *Abel's* person had not been respected first, *Abel* had never been a believer: For faith is the work and gift of God; and (according to the course of all judicious agents) he that will work, must first pitch on the subject he will work upon; and he that gives, on the person he will give unto. Besides, *Abel* could do nothing before he believ'd, that might move God to give him faith; for till then he was in the flesh, and *they that are in the flesh cannot please God* ^x: Therefore it could not be *Abel's foreseen faith* that was the *cause* of God's respecting him. The scripture speaks oft of iron-sinew'd necks, and brazen brows; and of men *being in their blood*, when the Lord said, *They should live*: As also, that God loved *Jacob* before he had done any good thing; and that the saints love God because he loved them *first*: But nowhere of foreseen faith and holiness as the cause and ground of God's love to men. 4. Faith and holiness are *middle things*: They are neither the foundation nor top-stone of election. They are to *sovereign grace*, as stalks and branches are to a root; by which the root conveys its virtues into its principal fruit, *Eph. ii. 8. By grace ye are saved [through] faith.* 2 *Thess. ii. 13. Chosen to salvation [thro'] sanctification of the Spirit, and belief of the truth.* They are no more the *cause* of election, than the means of an end are the first cause of purposing that end: Nay, no more than *Tatnai's* propension (or aversion rather) to build the temple, and to provide sacrifices for the God of heaven, was the cause of *Darius* his decree, that those things should be done, and that by *him* ^y. 5. If men be predestinated to faith and holiness (as they are ^z) then they were not seen to be so qualified before their predestination: Or if they

F 2

were,

^u Tit. 3. 5. 1 Tim. 1. 14, 15. 2 Tim. 1. 9. ^x Rom. 8. 8. Heb. 11. 6, Heb. 14. 23. ^y Ezra 5, & 6 Chap. ^z Rom. 8. 29, 30. 1 Pet. 1. 2.

were, then their election (as to that particular) would seem impertinent. There can no rational account be given, why men, foreseen to be such, should be so solemnly predestinate thereto. Besides, if salvation be the inseparable product of faith and holiness, according to *John v. 24. He that believeth [hath] everlasting life, and [shall not] come into condemnation*; 1 Pet. i. 9. *Receiving the end of your faith, the salvation of your souls*: Then to ordain to salvation those foreseen to be so qualified, would seem a thing both needless and insignificant; it would look like the sending of men where they would have gone of themselves. Such senseless, irregular and injudicious notions are very unworthy that celebrated and ever adorable act of predestination; and, if duly weighed, would set us further off from the doctrine of self-advancement, which stands in point-blank opposition to the doctrine of God's grace.

Arg. V. It could not stand with the wisdom and goodness of God, to found the salvation of his people on a fallible bottom; which it would certainly be, if dependent on any thing besides his own immutable will. For whatever it was that election had being from, by that also it must be maintain'd: What then would become of it, if built on that goodness which is as the *morning-cloud* and *early dew* ^a? The creature's will, even in a state of perfection, was too slight and fickle a thing to build this eternal weight upon: And if man at his best estate was vanity, how much more afterwards, when so strong a bent to vanity came upon his will?

Arg. VI. To derive election from any root besides the *good pleasure of God*, is to frustrate the principal end of man's salvation, *viz. The glory of God's grace* ^b. This attribute (of all the rest) he will not have eclipsed, nor intrenched upon; 'tis so divinely sacred, as not to admit the least human touch: For which very cause, the Lord hath so contrived that blessed design and plot of his glory, that all *boasting is excluded, and no flesh shall glory in his presence* ^c. But, if any thing in the creature be entitled to the *causality* of election, *flesh* will glory; and, instead of excluding *man's* boasting, *grace* itself will be excluded ^d; which is far from

^a *Hos. 6. 4.* ^b *Eph. 1. 6. & 2. 7.* ^c *1 Cor. 1. 29.* ^d *Rom. 11. 6.*

glorifying of it. I would here resolve a query or two, which some have urg'd from scripture: As,

1. *How can this doctrine stand with the [general] love and good-will of God towards men, who ('tis said) will have all saved?* 1 Tim. ii. 4. 2 Pet. iii. 9.

Ans. 1. If the Word [*all*] be taken universally, it take in unbelievers as well as others; which cannot be the meaning: Therefore the literal sense of words is not to be rested on, when the like phrase of speech elsewhere used, or evident scope of the same or other scripture, agrees not to it: The design and current of the *whole* must guide the construction of *particular parts*. 2. Tho' the doctrine of *general love* will not stand with that of *special election*, yet the doctrine of *special election* will stand without *that*, there is an *election* of men to salvation; as also, that the genuine import of election is, to *chuse one or more out of many*: Which necessarily implies the *leaving* or not *chusing* of some; and consequently the *not willing* of salvation to all, *universally*. 3. The will of God cannot be resisted; because, with his willing the end, he wills also the means, and those such as shall compass his end, *Isa. xlv. 10. My counsel shall stand, I will do all my pleasure*, i. e. *What I please to will, that I will have done*. 4. The apostle is not here discoursing the extent of God's *special love*, whether *all men universally* are interested in it; but exhorting believers to a general duty, viz. to *give thanks for kings, and all in authority*, because of the benefits we have by government; and to *pray for them*; not only for their peaceable governing of us, but, if otherwise, that God would turn their hearts, and make them nursing-fathers to his church: And, to inforce the duty, tells us, there is no degree nor state of men exempted from salvation; God hath chosen some of every sort, and therefore we ought not to shut any out of our prayers. 5. The word [*all*] is oft used, when but a part, and sometimes the *lesser part* of the thing spoken of, is intended by it; as on the contrary, when the *universality* of the subject is intended, it is expressed by *singulars*. As *he* that believeth shall be saved; and *him* that cometh unto me I will in nowise cast

out. It sometimes signifies *all of such a sort*: So Eve was said to be the mother of *all living*; not of *all living creatures*, but all of *her own kind*. It other times intends *some of all sorts*; as where it said, All the cattle of *Egypt* died ^e; and the hail smote every tree, and every herb ^f: And yet other cattle are mentioned after, and a residue of trees are said to be escaped ^g. So here, God will have all men to be saved, that is, *some of every sort and degree*, Gentiles as well as Jews; kings and men in authority, as well as those of a meaner rank: As is evident by comparing the 1, 2 and 4 ver. together, The same in *Joel*; I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh ^h, &c. that is, upon *some of every age, sex, and degree*, without distinction; young, old, masters, servants, sons, daughters, &c. as it follows there. 6. To these universal terms do belong divers restrictions, which must be gathered from the scope and context: As where the gospel is said to be preached to *every creature* under heaven ⁱ, and yet *men* only are intended, and not *all* of them neither; for the gospel had reached but a small part of the world at that time, and not the whole of it yet. So *Moses* is said to have in *every city* them that preach him ^k: It must be understood only of cities where the *Jews* dwelt, and had synagogues; which were but few in comparison. Those also that were scatter'd abroad, went *everywhere* preaching the word ^l; i. e. they baulked no place nor person, but preached wherever they came: At first it was confined to the *Jews*, but now without limit. *Every man* shall have praise of God ^m: It can be meant only of *good and faithful* servants, which are but a remnant to the *whole piece*. So God is said to be the Father of *all* ⁿ; and yet Satan (we know) is the father of the *far greater* part of the world. And Christ is said to reconcile *all things* ^o; and yet all the *angels* must be exempted: The *good* angels, because they never were at enmity; and the *evil* ones, because not reconcilable, *Eph.* i. 10. That he might gather together in one, *all things* in Christ: This [all things] seems plainly to intend the *elect*; for they are the subject discoursed of in the whole chapter: And in *Matthew*, those

^e *Exod.* 9. 6. ^f *Ver.* 23. ^g *Ver.* 19, 25 & 10. 5. ^h *Joel* 2. 28. ⁱ *Col.* 1. 23. ^k *Acts* 15. 21. ^l *Acts* 8. 4. ^m *1 Cor.* 4. 5. ⁿ *Eph.* 4. 6. ^o *Col.* 1. 20. ^p *Mat.* 24. 31.

those gathered together are stiled the elect ^p. In *Heb.* xii. 8. all are said to be partakers of chastisement; and yet *sons* only can be intended: For bastards are not partakers of it, as it follows there, *John* vi. 45. They shall be all taught of God: It respects only the *sons* of the church, (*i. e.* such as are *elect*) whose iniquities are forgiven them, and their sins remembred no more ^q: It is the tenor of the new covenant, which is made with the house of *Israel*, that is, *Jews* in spirit, or the elect nation ^r. And if these terms *universal* [all and every] are sometimes applied to the *elect* exclusive of *others*, why not as well in the place whence the *query* is taken? I have instanced in these, to shew what *contradictory* notions would follow, should the *vocal sound* of words be adhered to: What a *sandy* foundation *universal* election is built upon; and how likely we are to lose the truth, while we listen to an uncertain sound; the meaning whereof may be had from the context, and general current of scripture.

2. *How shall this kind of election be reconcil'd with Acts x. 34. That God is no respecter of persons?*

Ans. 1. This shews the inconvenience of minding the *literal sense* of words above the *scope*: The former exception takes in all, and now this excludes all. For, if literally taken, God should have respect to none. 2. The *Jews* were an elect nation; and so this objection will ly against their election as much as this we are upon. 3. The scope of the place plainly intends, that God respects no man's person, either less or more, for his outward condition, or carnal privileges. Till *then* the partition was up, and the Lord seemed only to regard the *Jewish* nation, suffering all besides to *walk in their ways* ^s: But now *had* God to the *Gentiles* also granted *repentance unto life* ^t. You'll say perhaps, They were *fearers of God* whom he thus accepted? True; but *that* was not it, which firstly induced his acceptance, or entitled them to it; altho' it was their inlet into it, and evidence for it. If men fear not God till he hath put his fear within them, then *their fearing* him doth not precede *his respect* towards them, but follows upon it: And this is the favour which he bears his *chosen* ^u. But,

F 4

3. If

^q *Jer.* 31. 34. ^r *Heb.* 8. 10, 11. ^s *Acts* 14. 16. ^t *Acts* 11. 18. ^u *Psal.* 105. 4.

3. *If Men be ordain'd to salvation absolutely, what need or use is there of good works?*

Good works have divers good uses and ends, and good reasons there are for *God's* ordaining them to be walked in, without supposing our walking in them to be the ground, condition, or motive of our election: As, 1. To testify our love to *God*; of which we have no such evidence, as the keeping of his commandments ². 2. To shew forth his virtues whose offspring we profess ourselves to be: *Matt. v. 45. That ye may be (i. e. that ye appear and approve yourselves to be) the children of your Father which is in heaven.* 3. To convince those without, that they, by our good conversation, may be won over, and learn to do well; or else be compell'd to glorify *God* in the day of visitation. 4. For encouragement and example to weaker Christians, who are yet children in the good ways of *God*, and are more aptly led by example than precept. 5. That, by having our senses exercised about holy things, we might become more holy, and so more capable of communion with *God* here, and meetned for our heavenly inheritance. 6. Good works are a part of election; and the elect are as absolutely ordained to them, as to salvation itself ³.

Objections I did not intend to meddle with: But considering that *that* which follows of this kind (tho' done for another occasion) may help to discover the lightness of what is alledged against our doctrine of election, I have therefore inserted it here, and hope it shall prove to its further confirmation.

Object. *There is no election, nor decree of election, of particular persons as such; but of the intire species of men from eternity.*

Ans. Election is the chusing some from among others, and it always supposeth a greater number out of which the choice is made; and consequently, the taking (or chusing) of *all* is quite besides the notion of election: The scripture says, they are chosen [out] of the world ⁴; then the world

² 2 *John* 6. ³ *John* 15. 16. ⁴ *John* 15. 19.

is not chosen: i. e.) The intire species of men is not the object of election.

Object. God hath not decreed from eternity to elect any person of mankind upon any terms, but that in case he liveth to years of discretion he may possibly perish.

Ans. This is excepted against: 1. Because the person of Christ himself is not exempted. 2. Because as possibly the death of Christ might be in vain. 3. It makes the decree and election two things, and divers in respect of time. That election was from eternity, is proved before ^b; and that the elect shall not perish, is absolutely promised ^c.

Object. Threatnings of damnation are absolutely inconsistent with a peremptory decree to confer salvation.

Ans. No more than the threatening of death upon Adam, was inconsistent with God's purpose to send him a Saviour ^d. That caution also, that, *except the mariners stayed in the ship, they could not be saved*, was well consistent with that peremptory promise, *that there should be no loss of any man's life* ^e. The promise of safety was absolute; but their actual obtainment of it was conditional: Yet so, as that the performance of the condition on their part was as certain by the decree, as safety upon their performance of it: For he that determined the safety of their lives, determined also that it should be effected by their abiding in the ship; and that this caution, or threatening of danger in case they went out, should be a means to prevail with them for that abiding; and so it did. In like manner, that saying of the apostle, that, *if they lived after the flesh, they should die* ^f, was very consistent with what he had said before, namely, *that sin should not have dominion over them* ^g; and that *nothing should separate them from the love of God* ^h. For as the Lord deals with reasonable creatures, so he makes use of rational arguments, motives and cautions to work upon them: Both end and means, and inducements to the use of those means, were all determined together.

Object. We judge it a very senseless part in a father, to give his child compleat assurance under hand and seal, that he will make him his heir against all possible inter-veniences; and yet presently threaten him, if he be not dutiful, to disinherit him.

Ans.

^b Eph. 1. 4. ^c John 16. 28. ^d Gen. 2. 17. with Chap. 3. 15. ^e Acts 27. 22, 31. ^f Rom. 8. 13. ^g Rom. 6. 14. ^h Chap. 8. 39.

Ans. Undutiful children may dare to judge thus of their father's actions; and children (that otherwise are dutiful and good, yet) while children, may have childish conceptions of what their elders do: But men grown up, and acquainted with their father's prudence and goodness, will lay their hands upon their mouth. The promise and purpose of God to give Canaan to Abraham's seed, was so absolute, that, by the objectors own confession, all their unworthiness could not deprive them of it; it is also as evident by their demeanour, and the event at last: Yet how often does the Lord threaten to *disinherit them*? and to *blot out their name from under heaven* *? Did Moses, now, go and *charge God foolishly*? Did he tell him, 'Tis a senseless part thus to threaten, after so absolute an engagement to the contrary? No, he puts the Lord in mind of his promise to their fathers; of his mercy in pardoning them afore-time; what reflection it would have on his honour among the *Egyptians*, if he should now destroy them, &c. Not a word of complaint, That first to promise, and then to threaten, is a senseless thing. It had been senseless in Moses thus to do, and is nowise consistent with his duty. But more directly; it were no senseless part in a father, to purchase an office for his son, and so settle it on him, that it shall not be in his own power to reverse it; and yet (keeping to himself the knowledge of that settlement) propose the enjoyment thereof conditionally, viz. upon terms of obedience to his father's command: The tendency of all which is but to prove himself the son of such a father, and to meeten him for his place; and, the more to oblige his son to a studious preparing himself for it, to lay before him the evil and danger of a negligent course, by which (if persisted in) he might render himself incapable. But surely, supposing this father to have the same power over his son, as God hath over the heart and spirit of his people; he will so order him by instruction, discipline, and good principles, that he shall not run into a forfeiture. Besides, threatnings of damnation are not properly applicable to believers, who know themselves so to be: For *he that believeth, is passed from death to life, and shall not come into condemnation* †; however (at times) for want of a thorow knowing their state, unthankfulness for it, or some other miscarriage, they bring them-

* Exod. 32. 10, Numb. 14. 12. Deut. 9. 14. † John 5. 24.

themselves under doubtings of it : But for such as have compleat assurance under God's hand and seal (as the objection speaks) they are sealed up to the day of redemption ⁱ, with a seal that never shall be loosed.

Object. *In case any person were so adjudged to eternal life from eternity, that there is no possibility of miscarrying ; then there was no necessity of Christ's dying for him.*

Ans. The assertors of *absolute election* do hold with the scriptures, That election is *in and through Christ*. The same decree that ordained to salvation, ordained also the mediation of Christ in order thereto : That God might be just in justifying, he hath appointed us to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ ^k. Ye might, with as much shew of reason, infer, That if such an end be appointed to be wrought by such means, then that means is unnecessary to that end : That if God hath chosen men to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth, then holiness and faith are needless things. These are absurd reasonings, which the truth neither owns nor needs.

Object. *We judge such an election to be an open enemy to godliness : For who will strain and toil himself for that which he knows he shall obtain by an easy pace ?*

Ans. The doctrine of *conditional election* can be no friend to godliness, whatever it may pretend to ; since all that a man doth on that account terminates in self. *Godliness* is to aim at God as our chief end, in all that we do. Now, one that holds the *elect sure* of salvation, and believes himself to be one of them, and yet goes on to fear God, and obey him, glorifies God more than he that performs the same duties for kind (and perhaps greater in bulk) in expectation of life thereby. The *Pharisees* fasted oftner than Christ's disciples, but were not such real friends to godliness as they. Long prayers, fastings and alms-deeds, are all nothing without love : And who (do you think) will love God more ; he that believes himself sure of God's love unchangeably, or one that holds that after all his toiling and straining he may possibly run in vain, and lose all at last ? If ye speak thus, ye cross the experience of God's children ; yea, and of nature too : For who counts it a toil to eat his meat when nature requires it, especially

ⁱ Eph. 4. 30. Rom. 8. 15. ^k 2 Theff. 9. 10.

cially when 'tis most agreeable both to his palate and constitution? *All the ways of God are pleasantness to them that walk in them*; and *these* would not leave them again, altho' their future happiness were not concerned in it: If they be grievous to any, it is from their unacquaintedness with *his love*, 1 John v. 3.

Object. *It must needs make men very remiss and loose in the service of God.*

Ans. A strange assertion! That the assurance of God's love should make men careless in serving him: They that so judge can never be over diligent to *make their calling and election sure*. Christ knew that the *angels had charge over him*, and that *he should not dash his foot against a stone*; yet was never the less careful of his own preservation. *Paul* was sure of the *crown of righteousness*; and yet as diligent in *beating down his body*, and strained as hard in *running his race*, as any of those who lay the stress of salvation upon their works.

Object. *Such a notion of election lays the honour and necessity of that great ordinance of preaching the gospel in the dust: For if the elect (so called) shall as certainly be saved by a weak, simple or corrupt ministry, and this, it may be, enjoyed but a day or two in all a man's life, or loosely attended upon; wherein is the ministry of the gospel to be esteemed?*

Ans. That peremptory decree, *That summer and winter, day and night shall not cease*, takes not away the necessity of the sun's being in the world, nor of its daily rising, setting, and various revolutions; for by these (as the necessary means thereof) must the decree be made good. So the absoluteness of that other part of the promise, *That seed-time and harvest shall not cease*, doth no whit discharge the husbandman either of his usefulness or duty; but evinceth the one, and inforceth the other; giving also encouragement to him in his work. The force of this answer will not be evaded by alledging, *That God affords them means proper and sufficient for seed-time and harvest*; (that is, they have fitting seasons, with seed-corn, horses, ploughs, and other utensils of husbandry) and that's all the promise intends; and, if they improve them not, the fault's their own. True, it is so, and they shall smart for their neglect: But what will become of the promise, and sureness of the covenant? Therefore, this is not all that

that God doth for *men* in this point. He that decreed how long the earth shall endure, and what number of *men* he will raise up upon it, did also decree his own upholding thereof during that time, and by what *means* those *men* should be propagated, and kept alive; and did accordingly put into them the principles of self-preservation, by which they are *naturally* prompted to the use of them, as they are to eat, drink and sleep: *He hath set the world in their heart*, Eccl. iii. 11. As the elect shall certainly be saved, and also prepared for that *salvation*; so hath the Lord appointed them such a *ministry*, and for so long a time, and their attendance thereon, in such manner as best agreeth to his own intent, and which he will bless and make effectual to that end; as is seen by sending *Paul* to certain places, where he must preach, and not hold his peace: Why? Because God had much people there (i. e. of his elect ones) who must be brought in by *Paul's* ministry. *Bithynia* and other places he is not suffered to go into, tho' he would; God had not yet any work for him there. Those that are to be taken, the Lord will bring them under the means, as he did that shoal of fishes under *Peter's* net¹: Witness the *Eunuch*, *Cornelius*, the *Taylor*, and others. And this means, whether *powerful* or *simple* in mens esteem, 'tis all one to God; his word shall accomplish that he sends it for: And the weaker the means are, the more is the power of God magnified. See *Acts* ii. how by *illiterate* mens ministry he took them by thousands, and added to his church daily such as should be saved^m. So then, the ministry of the gospel is nowise made useless or disesteemable by the doctrine of *absolute election*, but is rather greatned thereby, as being the power of God to that salvation he hath chosen us to.

Object. Of what great consequence to the world are the richest gifts of wisdom, knowledge, utterance, &c. if all those who are in any possibility of being saved by them, may and shall as certainly be saved without them?

Ans. That the richest Gifts of wisdom, knowledge, utterance, are of no great consequence to the world, is no consequent of the doctrine of *absolute election*; for they are given for the perfecting of the saints, and edifying the body of *Christ* (that is, the elect :) And all the diversities of gifts

¹ *John* 21. 6. ^m *Acts* 2. 9, 10, 11, 47.

gifts, manifestations and operations do concur to the same end, since it is the *same God* who worketh all in all; that is, he appoints men to salvation, these *gifts* as a means to prepare them for it, and makes them effectual thereto. But that those richest *gifts* of wisdom, knowledge and utterance, are of no great use or consequence to the world, is a very *natural consequent* of that doctrine, which tells the world, that the sun, moon and stars do preach the *gospel* sufficiently for salvation: Which if they do, wherein (indeed) are those richest *gifts* to be esteemed? and to what end is this waste? Why should the best of men suffer stripes, imprisonments and death, for doing that which might be done by those above the reach of danger? And withal, 'tis too well known and obvious, that men of greatest knowledge, utterance and depth of reason, (such as are stiled the princes of this world) they are not always (nay, very rarely) the fastest friends of truth and *godliness*; and those few that be, are not always most *successful* in their workⁿ: Whenas some others, meanly furnished in comparison, have *turned the world upside down*^o. The Lord oftentimes rejects the *wise* and *prudent*, and reveals himself by *babes*: To take from men occasion of boasting; and to make it appear, that the faith of his people doth not stand in the *wisdom of men*, but in the *power of God*^p, whose weakness is stronger than men, and his foolishness wiser^q.

Object. Upon what account can men be pressed to a frequent, diligent, conscientious attendance on the ministry; if salvation and consequently preparation, meetness for salvation, shall as certainly be had by a broken, careless, superficial attendance in this kind?

Ans. On what account did the Lord so frequently admonish that people to keep the law without turning aside, to circumcise their hearts, and to be no more stiff-necked, and this as the condition to their obtaining *Canaan*? if all their unworthiness could not deprive them of *Canaan*, which the author of this objection elsewhere affirms they could not. But further: As men are creatures, it is their duty to serve and honour God; and, in order thereto, to wait upon him in his ordi-

ⁿ *Ecc.* 9. 11. ^o *2 Cor.* 12. 10. *Acts* 17. 6. *2 Cor.* 10. 10. ^p *1 Cor.* 2. 5. ^q *Ch.* 1. 25.

ordinances, and that with all diligence, altho' the business of their salvation were not concern'd in it; but much more since it is, if any thing of self-concern may enforce a duty. And truly the present sweetness that is in the good ways of God is an argument sufficient to induce our most serious attendance thereon. But [that salvation, or meetness for salvation, may as certainly be had by a careless attendance] is far from the doctrine of *absolute election* to assert: For it presseth it still as an important duty, to *give all diligence to make our calling and election sure*. But really, *remissness in duty* is the natural result of that doctrine which teacheth, that a man possibly may lose all he hath run for at the last step: For who will strain and toil himself (as they term it) for an uncertainty? And if there be any such, who neglect their duty, because if elected they are sure to be saved, they give but a sorry evidence of their state; and they are commonly such as oppose the doctrine of *election*, and not of those who hold for it.

Object. Such an election as we contend against, we judge to be most unworthy the most excellent nature of God, and to be at manifest defiance with his wisdom, holiness, mercy, justice, &c.

Ans. If the *election* contended against be such as the objector's arguments are pointed at, it is such as (I suppose) never was held by any; and then 'tis ill-spent time to set up counterfeit notions, and make a great business of confuting them. But it is *absolute election*, without respect to mens works, that is striven against: And for this, we say,
1. *Absolute election* is noway contrary to the wisdom of God, but most consonant thereto: For how can it stand with his wisdom, to determine the death of his Son for the salvation of men, and leave it undetermined (and consequently uncertain) whether any one person shall have salvation by it? for so it must be, if *election* be not *absolute*. 2. It is so far from being at manifest defiance with the mercy of God, that it is most congruous and suitable to the very nature of it. To shew mercy, is to open the heart to one in distress; to love and do good to enemies, whom he might as justly have destroyed, and was noway obliged to spare, much less to advance them: Nay, perhaps, they were deeper involv'd in guilt

guilt than other men, even the *chief of sinners*; which is (sure) the *biggest illustration* of mercy, and far from a *manifest defiance* with it. 3. It doth not oppose the *justice* of God; for to whom is he debtor, or can be? All had a stock in *Adam*; and, having lost it by their own default, God is not obliged to restore it: Therefore 'tis no injustice to repair one, and not another.

Object. Doth it argue any sovereign or high strain of grace, when ten thousand have equally offended, to pardon one or two; and implacably resolve to punish and torment all the rest to the utmost extremity? and this against all possible interveniency of sorrow and repentance for their fault?

Ans. It were very desirable, that men, while they pretend to argue for truth, would order their speech as becomes the gravity of such a subject^r; and much more that they come not so near to a downright reproaching that glorious grace, of which we cannot have apprehensions awful enough. The men who thus speak, had need to try their spirits, whether they be of God; since from the same premisses they draw conclusions quite contrary to those who (we know) spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. In scripture-account it is no derogation to the grace of God, that he called *Abraham* [alone;] leaving millions besides to their perishing condition. Nor can I believe that *Moses* understood it a *disparaging* of God's love to mankind, when he tells us, that he chose the people of *Israel* alone for his own peculiars, who yet were the *fewest* of any people^r. One of a city, and two of a family, were less in proportion than one or two of ten thousand; yet no complaint upon it, by those interested in that grace. 'Tis the property of God's children to admire that he loves any, and especially *themselves*; and not to find fault because he loves not *all alike*. Who am I (says *David*) that thou hast brought me hitherto? And Christ's disciples, Lord, why wilt thou manifest thy self to us, (us twelve) and not to the world^r? 'Tis therefore the more strange to consider, why and how any that call themselves of the brotherhood, came so to espouse the quarrel of those *without*, and that with such *eagerness* as to strive and fall out among themselves about the

^r *Ecc.* 5. 1. ^r *Deut.* 7. 7. ^r *John* 14. 22.

the other concerns : It were more advisable to leave off disputing, and fall to practice. But to answer more directly ;

1. This remnant is not so contemptibly to be spoken of ; they are *ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands* ^u : And how small soever the number be, (if it were but one, it were more by *one* than the whole creation could deserve) I say, how few soever they are, no man knows but *himself* may be *one* of them ; unless, by despising the grace of God in election, he hath proved it otherwise to himself.
2. To pitch on *a few* while in their blood and enmity against God, and resolve even *then* to make them everlastingly happy, and that against the natural bent of their own will, was a grace much more high and sovereign, than to save them for their own better improvement of what they have in common with other men ; for that would not be of grace, but of debt. Or if the Lord should bring ten thousand times that number into a *salvable* state, (as they speak) but so as very possibly not one of them shall ever be saved, it would not bring the thousandth part of that glory to his grace, as to *save a few invincibly*.
3. If the Lord did foresee that but *few* would believe, and yet resolved to save *none* but such as should believe ; then the objection (as to *fewness*) falls on the objector's doctrine as much as ours.
4. As for godly sorrow, faith and repentance ; they are the gift of God, and proper to the *elect* : And so no reason to suppose the interveniency of *these* in them that are *left*, or to fear an implacable resolution to punish and torment *any* in whom these possibilities go forth into act.

Other allegations they have against the doctrine of election, which will admit of as plain a solution as those above : But it being my purpose to collect what I shall find in the scriptures for it, and not to controvert the point ; I proceed no further, but go on to the usefulness of the doctrine. Only by the way let me premise a caution or two ;

1. Let no man tax God with *injustice* or *partiality*, because he takes not all, or because not those of highest esteem among men. Do not the princes of the world exercise dominion over men like themselves ? or is there a subject so mean, but will think himself wrong'd, if question'd for disposing

of his own? (which yet is his own but as borrow'd :) And shall vain man presume to arraign his *sovereign Lord!* *Wo to him that striveth with his maker* ². If you must be meddling, let it be with *potsherds of earth like yourselves.*

2. Let no man disvalue the doctrine of *election* because it takes in but a *remnant*: Why are they stiled, *the [little] flock*, but to heighten the mercy and privilege of it in their esteem? *Noah* did not contemn the grace of God to himself and his sons, because the world of ungodly were excluded the ark; nor the remnant that escaped the sword in *Egypt*, reckon their own deliverance e'er the less mercy, because the rest of their countrymen had not a share in it: Men do not use to slight their own immunities for others *not* being interested in them, but rather to value themselves the more upon it.

And now, as a means to *prevent* or *remove* the evil surmises caution'd against, with those other sinister deductions which carnal reason may be apt to suggest; let us draw up a few of those many and worthy improvements *this* doctrine is capable of, above and beyond *that* of the contrary tenor; as also of those laws of duty which it lays upon us. And here I would see, first, what fruit may be gather'd from the several *branches* of the proposition; and, then, what from the *gross* or *whole* of it promiscuously.

1. Since there is an *election* of men to salvation, put you in for a part and interest in it: Tho' their number be but small, cast in your lot, and make one among them. My meaning is, that, tho' never so few are the objects of *election*, you will make it your business to prove yourself of that few: If but *two* in the whole world, who knows but thou may'st be *one* of them? And do it the rather, for *fewness's* sake: 'Tis our Saviour's argument, They are but few that go in at the strait gate; therefore strive. The *Ninevites* had not that ground to believe God would accept them that you have; for their ruin was pronounced in peremptory words, and no room expressly left for repentance; and yet they humbled themselves, and turn'd from their evil ways, upon this only consideration, *Who can tell if God will turn away his fierce anger, that we perish not* ³? 'Tis a happiness worth your venturing for: For, (1.) You can lose nothing by endeavouring

² *Isa.* 45 9. ³ *Jer.* 44 28. ⁴ *Jonah* 3, 9, 10.

ing. (2.) You can hardly have a more solid evidence of your being elected, than to have your heart taken with electing love, and casting yourself upon it. And, (3.) Never did any perish who ventured on this bottom.

II. From the doctrine of *election's absoluteness* is evidenced the exceeding riches of the grace of God, in that he hath not left this great concern to *human contrivance*, but hath laid it more sure and safe than men themselves would have done: For 'tis too evident (by the reasonings that are used, to make *election dependent and conditional*) how it would have gone, if left to the wisdom of men. But I shall not doubt to affirm, that this doctrine of *election's absoluteness* is much before-hand with that which teacheth it to be *conditional*, both in point of encouragement, and otherwise; and that as well before believing, as afterwards.

1. Before a man comes to believe; supposing him to be nationally instructed therein before. For being under conviction of the greatness and multitude of his sins, and finding the power of indwelling corruptions so *insuperable*, having also some sight of the holiness of God, and that he will by no means clear the guilty; it needs must prove a *difficult* matter to believe that there is *mercy* and *pardon* for such a one as he, or that ever those *domineering* lusts should be made to submit. But then considering, 1. That electing love pitches on the *chief* of sinners; 2. That it flows not from, nor is founded upon, any condition to be performed by men; And, 3. That *election* has in it all that conduceth to life and godliness: These things, I say, considered, it cannot but have a far greater influence on the soul, to cleave unto God, and follow hard after him, than if his election were suspended upon his doing *that* which he finds in himself no power to perform. For he sees by woful (and yet, *through grace*, happy) experience, that as the law is made weak thro' the weakness of the flesh; so also (setting aside the *absoluteness* of electing love) all the means of grace which are given in common among men, would be wholly ineffectual to salvation: Which difficulties, electing love in its *absoluteness* will *superfede*, and set him above them all; especially considering that faith and holiness are as absolutely promised and provided

vided for in *election*, as salvation itself, at the end of his faith.

2. After a man comes to believe, this doctrine of *absolute election* is of singular use and benefit to him, both as tending to keep him on his feet, and to raise him when he is down. 1. It is a great preservative in time of temptation. The remembrance of *that love* which looked upon him when he was in his blood, and said he should live, and hath now also made good its word to him, must needs operate *strongly* with a gracious heart, against whatever might be unworthy of such love: Let the bait be never so aptly suited, he will turn from it in a holy disdain (as good *Joseph* did) *How can I do this wickedness, and sin against God* (Gen. xxxix. 9.) who hath dealt bountifully with me! 2. Nothing more tends to recovery after a fall, than the consideration of the *freeness* of God's love at first, and his mighty power in *quickning*, when altogether dead; and that *both these* (viz. this love and this power) are engaged, by an *absolute* covenant, to bring every one that takes hold thereof unto glory; and therefore will receive him, not only *after* upon return to his duty, but in the *midst* of his backslidings he will come and heal him. The Lord's way of dealing with *Ephraim* is an instance pertinent to the case in hand, *Isa.* lvii. 17, 18, 21, 22. and in the 44th *Chap.* he doth, as it were, clench and fasten this nail in a sure place; *Remember, O Jacob, I have formed thee; thou shalt not be forgotten of me: I have blotted out thy sins; therefore return unto me.* And, *Jer.* iii. 14. *Return, O backsliding children, for I am married unto you, (to wit, by his covenant of election).* To this purpose also is the edge of *Samuel's* argument applied in 1 *Sam.* xii. 20, 22. *Fear not; ye have done all this wickedness; yet turn not aside from following the Lord:* As if he had said, Your wickedness indeed is great, ye have highly provoked the Lord by your casting him off; yet be not discouraged, as if the Lord would cast you off: *For the Lord will not forsake his people* (but why?) *because it hath pleased the Lord to make you his people.* And in ver. 24. he further backs it with the remembrance of the great things God had done for them *afore-time*; than which there is nothing of stronger tendency to a soul's recovery.

III. From the [personality] of election; And IV. From the [eternity] of its original; I gather in general,

That since the scriptures have so highly renowned these two circumstantial parts of election, by so frequent a mentioning of them, and that on occasions of the *solemnest* import; we ought not to pass them by, as things of *indifferent* notice, but as, being diversly *instructive*, worthy to be kept, and *soberly* contended for. The *Holy Ghost* doth not use to inculcate matters of *ordinary* observance or *little* import, but as noting to us some *great* importancy in them; as taking (also) our *sloth*, and aptness to neglect them; and to stir up our minds to make the more *diligent* search, *what*, and *what* manner of things they are, and how to be *improved*. In particular,

From the personality of election, I infer,

Inf. 1. That it ought to be minded as matter of the highest honour to the parties concern'd. The Lord illustrates *Moses* at no ordinary rate, when he tells him, *I know thee by name*^a; and doubtless intended that *Moses* himself should so account of it, and be highly satisfied therewith, tho' deny'd some other things he would fain have had. Thus also *Paul* signalizeth those eminent saints, who were his fellow-labourers in the gospel, that *their* [names] were in the book of life^b. And our Saviour propounds it to his disciples as matter of the highest exultation, that *their* [names] were written in heaven^c. That our poor insignificant names should be written in God's book, and laid up among his treasures in heaven, when the generality of names (even names of note) are written in the dust, let it not seem a light matter to us; for this is that *everlasting name which never shall be cut off*^d.

Inf. 2. The knowledge of this thing (namely, that God has thus taken notice of our names) is a great privilege to them that know it. It enlarges the heart to higher expectations; it gives boldness (or freedom) of speech towards God, as if nothing were too great for such a one to ask. See how *Moses* grows upon it; no sooner says God, *I know thee by name*, but *Moses* (as wrapt into the second, and fain would

G 3

^a *Exod.* 33. 17. ^b *Phil.* 4. 3. ^c *Luke* 10. 20. ^d *Isa.* 56. 5.

A Practical Discourse

be in the *third heaven*) presently replies, *I beseech thee shew me thy glory* *!

Inf. 3. As it is matter of honour and privilege, so it will prove one of your best titles to your heavenly inheritance. It will signify something one day, (however by some too lightly esteemed now) when it shall be the great distinguishing character between you and the world: Whoever he be that derives not his genealogy from this register, will be put from the heavenly priesthood †. The new *Jerusalem* admits none but such whose names are written in the book of life ‡; yea, [every one] that is not found written there, shall be cast into a lake of fire §: Therefore, give all diligence to make your election sure.

Inf. 4. It also imports matter of duty from us. When princes confer titles of honour, lands, or immunities; they use to reserve some kind of rent, or other service, to mind their subjects (tho' favourites) of whom they hold. You have no such way of owning your great benefactor, nor no such means of being considerable in the world, as by bearing the badge and impress of him who gave you this name of honour. Let his name, therefore, be named upon you; carry his name in your bosom; bear it on your shoulders, and the palms of your hands: Let the choicest of your affections, the chief of your strength, and the whole of your activity, be employed for his honour; let every thing you do, bear an impression of him whose name is holy.

Then, from the antiquity of election,

Inf. 1. Let the *antientness* of electing love draw up our hearts to a very dear and honourable esteem of it. Pieces of antiquity, (tho' of base metal, and otherwise of little use or value) how venerable are they with learned men? And ancient charters, how careful are men to preserve them, altho' they contain but temporary privileges, and sometimes but of trivial moment? How then should the great charter of heaven, so much older than the world, and containing matters of eternal weight and glory; which also hath been confirmed by so many promises, exemplified by multitudes of cases, with a seal affixed more precious than heaven itself; all which

† *Exod.* 33. 18. ‡ *Nabem.* 7. 64. § *Rev.* 21. 27. h *Ch.* 20. 15.

proclaim the *eternal validity* of it) how should this (I say) be had in everlasting remembrance, and the thoughts thereof be very precious to us; lying down, rising up, and all the day long accompanying of us! And how careful should we be, not only to keep this charter *uncancelled*, but also to keep it *clean* from all sorts of dust and soil, by which the legibility thereof might any way be obscured to ourselves or others!

Inf. 2. Let election's *eternal origine* be an argument for its *eternal duration*, and so of the saints invincible perseverance to glory. That which is *from* everlasting, shall be *to* everlasting; if the *root* be eternal, so are the *branches*. Surely, for this good end (among others) it is twice recorded in the *Revelation*, that *their names were written in the book of life [from the foundation of the world]* (1); namely, to signify and assure, that the elect shall be safely and surely kept from those dreadful apostasies which the rest of the world shall fall into, and be overwhelmed with. And hence (perhaps) it is, that we read of nothing done in eternity, but *election*, and things *appendant*, or *peculiar thereto*; as the *promise of eternal life, the Lamb slain, the kingdom prepared, &c.* Election is an eternal fountain, that never leaves running while a vessel is empty or capable of holding more; and it stands open to all comers: Therefore come, and, if ye have not sufficient of your own, go and borrow vessels, empty vessels not a few; *pay your debts out of it, and live on the rest* ^k to eternity.

V. From the doctrine of *choosing in Christ*,

Inf. 1. It is an high demonstration of God's love to his chosen. We may say of it, as *Huram to Solomon*, *Because the Lord loved his people, he set his Son over them* ¹. It is also an eminent proof of his manifold wisdom, to contrive the blessedness of his people in such a manner as should most certainly secure their obtainment of it, most signally illustrate his love to them, and so most affectionately win upon their hearts, and oblige them to himself for ever. We may hence also discern something of that immense greatness and holiness of God; that tho' he so loved his elect as to

G 4

make

¹ *Rev.* 13. 8. & 17. 8. ^k *2 Kings* 4. 7. ¹ *2 Chron.* 2. 11.

make them *one in himself* ^m, that union could not be admitted without a Mediator equal with himself.

Inf. 2. Gather hence your stability and safety: Whatever strait or difficulty you are entering upon, drink of this brook in the way, and lift up your head. Whatever pertains to life and godliness, grace and glory, *this* life, and *that* to come, is all laid up in Christ, (as all sorts of food in the ark, for those who found grace in his sight) *all fulness dwells in him* ⁿ, and that for you. He is not only a root stable in himself, but establishing to you; communicating sap and spirit to all his branches: While there is life in him, you cannot die. This is *that* makes the saints stand *firm* and *sacred* in the midst of dangers; *the evil one touches them not* ^o. Let all the rebel-crew of adversaries (Satan, the world, your own evil hearts) associate themselves, and take counsel together, it all comes to nought: Let their assaults be renewed again and again, they are still beaten off: They gird themselves, and are broken in pieces; they gird again, and again they are broken in pieces: Thus it is, and thus it shall be to the end of our warfare; *for God is with us* ^p. This was it made *David* fearless, even *in the valley and shadow of death*, [*the Lord was with him*] ^q. And those three noble confessors, they walked secure in the fiery furnace, because the *Son of God* was among them ^r. Therefore do all, suffer all, and expect all, as being in Christ, and not otherwise: But wo to him that is alone, who, when he falls, hath not Christ to help him up.

Inf. 3. Let this your *relation* to Christ be evidenced by your *likeness* to him: *He that is joined to the Lord is one spirit* ^s. The holy oil, that was poured on your *Head*, runs down to the *skirts* of his *garments*, i. e. to the very meanest of his followers; and they carry along the precious scent with them, wherever they go; (or should do as *Paul* did, 2 Cor. ii. 14.) It is natural to those *married unto Christ* to bring forth fruit unto God ^t; and see it be such as will abide the test, endure all sorts of weather, and be better'd by it.

Inf. 4. This doctrine illustrates *that* of justification, as shewing *wherein* the true matter of justifying righteousness doth

^m *Yohn*. 17. 21. ^p *Col*. 2. 9. *Yohn* 1. 16. ^o 1 *Yohn* 5. 18. ^p *Isa*. 8. 9.
10. ^q *Psal*. 23. 4. ^r *Dan*. 3. 25. ^s 1 *Cor*. 6. 17. ^t *Rom*. 7. 4.

doth consist, and how it comes to be ours. Our faith (or act of believing) cannot be the matter of it, for that it is an imperfect thing, and so cannot be reckoned in the place of perfect righteousness: For it must be a righteousness perfectly perfect that justifies, as it was a sin perfectly sinful that condemned. The righteousness also must be our own, in a way of right (as *Adam's* sin also was) tho' perform'd in the person of another. *Christ* and *Adam* being parallels in their headship, the imputation of the one's guiltiness, and of the others righteousness, are righteously applied to their respective seeds. And this was a main end of the Lord's putting those he would justify, into *Christ*; that he being made sin and a curse for them, they might be made the righteousness of God in him; and so God might be just in justifying of them. Faith, in this matter, holds the place of an evidence or seal of that righteousness which belonged to us, as being in *Christ*, before we believed, (as *Canaan* did to *Abraham's* seed before they were born) and is given us on the account of our interest therein ^u, that we might apprehend it, and enjoy the benefits of it ^x; which is surely a far better ground to build our justification upon, than our weak and imperfect faith, which stands in need daily of the righteousness of God for its own support. But let not faith lose of its due respect; 'tis a precious grace, and may not suffer disparagement. Tho' it doth not originate your title to justification, 'tis the best evidence ye can have for it; tho' it be not your peace-maker primarily, 'tis yet of that important usefulness, that your peace cannot be compleated, nor can you know that your peace is made, without it. Your record is in heaven, and cannot be pleaded here (the court of conscience takes no notice of it) until exemplified under the seal of faith. 'Tis somewhat like the *instrumentum pacis*, where parties have been at variance; tho' the peace be made, and terms agreed, it has not its full effect till ratified on both sides, and exchanged. Therefore,

Inf. 5. Make it the main part of your care and business, to get into *Christ*, and to abide in him,

VI. The founding of election upon grace affords us divers useful instructions: As,

Inf.

Inf. 1. To fall down and adore the great GOD for this unspeakable discovery of his love to men. It is one of the *richest* mercies that he would not betrust us in *our own* keeping: That another (and he one that had not the least need of us) should be more provident for us than we would have been for ourselves: That our *chiefest interest* should have the *biggest security*: That it should be founded upon *grace*, the attribute which our great King most delights to honour: And that he should do it (as it were) against our *wills*; (for so it is, inasmuch as to graft our happiness on the will of another, is contrary to nature :) Of all bottoms, we should not have pitch'd it there; and yet, in truth, no other ground would hold us: His name may well be called *Wonderful*; *it is not after the manner of men: This is the Lord's doing, and let it be marvelous in our eyes*, Psal. cxviii. 23.

Inf. 2. It shews what reason we have to discard, and cashier for ever, that groundless and blindfold opinion, which lays the stress of salvation on a thing of nought: For, what else is the will of a frail and mutable man? To forsake a living fountain, and rest on a cistern, a broken cistern; what folly is it! To cast our eagle's wings, and trust to a foot out of joint; who would do it, that is not void of understanding? Surely *Job* was aware of it, when he professeth, *He would not value a life that depended on his own righteousness* ^a.

The grace of God is little beholden to that doctrine which would give the glory of it to a graceless thing; and as little have the souls of men to thank it for: It feeds them with dreams and fancies, which, when they awake, will leave them *hardly bestead, and hungry* ^b. Therefore sit not down under the shadow of that *gourd*, it hath a worm at the *root*; and they will not be held guiltless, nor kept from the scorching sun, whoever they be, that shelter themselves in the covert of it. 'Tis a *spark* of mens own kindling, wherewith tho' compass'd round, they'll ly down in sorrow ^c. Therefore let those who disrelish this doctrine, because it founds not salvation upon *self*, look well to their standing, and shift from it in time.

Inf. 3. Fall in practically with the doctrine of *election*, as founded upon *grace*. As it was *grace* which gave you your elect

^a *Job* 9. 15. & 21, ^b *Isa.* 8. 21, ^c *Chap.* 50. 11,

elect being, so let it be your spirit and utmost endeavour to improve this your being to the praise of that *grace*. 1. Give it the sole honour of *election's* original: Suffer not free-will *grace*, or any thing else, to pretend to a share in the parentage of it. Let not your faith, whether *foreseen* or *perfected*, be reckoned the *ground-work* or *motive* of your *election*; it is a *branch* of it, and the *branch* (you know) cannot bear the *root*^d. Even faith itself must not (and, if it be right faith, it will not) *gather where it hath not strawed*. Own nothing, therefore, that may detract from the honour that's due to *sovereign grace*. 2. Bear yourself upon this *grace*, against all your weakness and unworthiness: Let not these discourage you, but rather plead them as occasions by which *grace* will be manifested and magnified, and shew itself to be what it is. Thus did *David*; *Pardon my sin, for it is great*^e: And *Moses*, when all the people's obedience could not furnish him with an argument for God's continuing his presence with them; what's his plea? They are an *honest ingenuous people*? *tractable to thy commands*? *pliant to thy will*? *they are worthy for whom thou shouldst do this*; for they love thy company, and have built thee a *tabernacle*? No, there is none of this stuff in it: But, *Let my Lord, I pray thee, go with us*; for it is a *stiff-necked people*: *Their neck is an iron sinew, and their brow brass*^f; therefore go thou with us, to better us, to soften us, and to pardon us: And by this shall the freeness of thy *grace* appear to us; for *how else shall it be known that I and this people have found grace in thy sight*^g? But yet, withal, (1.) Look that you make not a light matter of your sins, or of your sinfulness. You cannot think bad enough of yourself, or of them, nor be too much humbled; only, be not cast down. (2.) Use the means that *grace* hath appointed: Watch and be sober; watch unto prayer; put on the whole armour of God, and keep it close about you; your sword and your shield be sure you forget not. But still let your eyes be towards the hand of *grace*, thro' *Christ*, for counsel, strength, agency, and every good thing; and depend on it for *conserving* and *actuating* the *grace* it hath wrought in you, as plants do on their roots: The spouse, after married to *Christ*, prays to be *drawn to him*.

^d Rom. 11. 18. ^e Psal. 25. 11. ^f Exod. 34. 9. Isa. 48. 4. ^g Exod. 33. 46.

him ^h. (3.) Whatever befalls you, remember the good pleasure of God is in it; *Hold your peace*, as *Aaron* did ⁱ; or, if you must speak, *let your speech be seasoned with salt*, [*It is the Lord, let him do as seemeth him good* ^k.]

Other useful instructions from the doctrine of election in general, and together.

I. It being a doctrine of so great importance, be not indifferent about it: Put yourself on the trial touching your interest in it, and bring forth your evidences for it. Observe what are the properties of God's elect, and see if they stand on your side.

1. As touching the great business of salvation, Do you submit to *mercy*, without indenting and making terms with God? Have you laid yourself at his feet, with [*Peradventure he will save me alive?*] and if he say, I have no pleasure in thee; lo, *here* I am, and *here* I will ly: If I must perish, I'll perish *here*; I cannot die in a better place or posture. Thus did *Job*, when the Lord seemed to set himself against him, as resolved to destroy him; yet still he resolved to trust in him, and to hold fast his integrity ^l. This is a love *more noble*, and of an *higher extract*, than those are acquainted with, who conclude, that upon their doing *this* and *that* (which they suppose every man hath power to do) they shall be saved; for such kind of love is *mercenary*: He will not stir, nor look towards the *vineyard*, until he hath agreed for his *penny*; the other goes in, and falls to his work, and leaves to his *master* to give him what is meet ^m; which also he leaves to his *master's* judgment, and not his own: And truly he speeds not the worse for his so doing. But I would not be taken to intend a contentation or willingness to be destroyed. This, I hope, is cleared before, under the first general head.

2. Do you own God's sovereign commands, without disputing? *Abraham* did thus in the business of *Isaac*, altho' he could not see how the promise of God, and the killing of his son, could stand together; and so will *Abraham's* children do. They know that their Lord is a great King, hath absolute dominion, giveth account of none of his matters. What he

^h *Cant.* 1. 4. ⁱ *Lev.* 10. 3. ^k *1 Sam.* 3. 18. ^l *Job* 13. 15. ^m *Nat.* 20. 2, 7, 11.

he is pleased to command, their duty is to obey, without asking a reason why; or, how will these things consist? Such demands become not the lips of those who live upon grace.

3. Doth your love towards God hold the same course that his love hath done towards you? All that God hath done, or will do, for his chosen, is the product of *electing love*. Does all your obedience rise from *love*? and does this *love* of yours grow out of his? Is his *electing love* the root of it? Is all that you do towards God in a way of *gratitude* and *duty*, and with design to glorify his *grace*? And, when the Lord seems to go from you, do you follow the harder after him; as he for a long time followed you, waiting that he might be gracious unto you? This is truly a God-like love; the eminency whereof lies in this, that he loved us when enemies to him, and loved us into a likeness to himself: Answerable whereto, we shall love him, even while our fears may apprehend him to be our enemy; and, thro' the power of his love secretly working in our hearts, go on to love him, until the glory of the Lord be risen upon us. You could not *thus* love God, if he had not loved you *first* ⁿ.

4. Do you rejoice in the thoughts of *electing love*, *what* it is, and *whence* it came? what it hath designed you for, and will bring you unto at last? Is it your delight to converse with the book of life? and do you rejoice more that your names are written in heaven, than if devils were subject to you? When your flesh and your heart fail you, do you look to *electing love* as your strength and portion, and count it a *goodly heritage*? Do you aim at *that* which *electing love* designed you for, and because so designed, if by any means you may attain to it? And are you better satisfied to be at the good pleasure of God, than at your own; and bless his wisdom and grace, for undertaking the disposure of your eternal interest? Such fruit could not be but from *that seed of God*.

Let me add a few tokens more of *true love*, according to its ordinary acceptation and conduct among men. 1. He that loves another, will delight in his presence, and seek occasions of conversing with him. 2. Being absent, he thinks much upon him, and gives welcome entertainment to whatever may be a remembrance of him. 3. He will seek the well-please-

ness

ness of him who is the object of his love, by presenting things lovely to him; by avoiding whatever may disgust him; by a wary preventing, or speedy removing, what might give the other occasion to be jealous of his love to him. 4. He will candidly interpret whatever might seem a declining of the other's love to him; and not be satisfied until it be recovered, or better understood.

II. If you be of this happy remnant of *election*, then look for ill usage from the world. The men of the world have always hated God's elect, and will. Why did *Esau* hate *Jacob*? Because of the blessing ^o. And our Saviour expressly says to his disciples, *I have chosen you out of the world, [therefore] the world hates you* ^p. While in nature, they love the world, and the world them: But when *election* breaks forth in its fruits, when once they are called according to purpose, then a man's enemies will be those of his own house. And hence it is, that the very doctrine of *election* is so disgustful to the world, and contended against; wherein I wish that some of the elect themselves were not (unwittingly) involved. Therefore think it not strange, but take it as an appendix of *election* ^q; as part of *that* you were chosen unto, and as *that* by which (partly) you must be fitted for the main end. Your Lord himself was made perfect thro' sufferings ^r; and those foreknown, were predestinated to be conformed to their Head in suffering as well as glory ^s.

III. Having trusted *electing* love for eternal salvation, see you distrust it not for things of lesser moment. When the Lord ordained you to life, he ordained also all those various occurrences, windings and turnings, you should be exercised with in your way thither; and 'tis sure he does nothing in vain. There is need of all sorts of weather for the earth's good; all fair would destroy it. Know it therefore of a truth, that all your concerns were fore-determined of God; and that so well, that all your prudence and love to yourselves could not amend it: Nor can your care and solicitude alter any of them, either as to matter or form; no, not to change the colour of an hair: Therefore, *take no thought* ^t.

But whence is it, that believers, who have trusted God for their

^o Gen. 27. 41. ^p John 15. 19. ^q John 15. 17, 18, 19. ^r Heb. 2. 19.
^s Rom. 8. 29. & 6. 5. ^t Mat. 6. 31.

their souls, should yet make a difficulty of trusting him for their outward man? and so cumber themselves with unprofitable burdens?

Earthly things are nearer our senses; and thence we are more sensible of the comfort of them, as also of their want: They also seem more within our line and compass; and so we reach more earnestly after them, and are answerably troubled when we fall short. Whereas we should carry it for temporals, as we do (or should do, rather) for our souls and spiritual portion; that is, look to our present duty, be diligent in one place, and content with such things as we have^u; bearing ourselves as becomes the children of such a Father, so rich, wise, bountiful, tender, and faithful to us; who always gives the best supply, and that in the best proportion, manner, and time.

Have therefore your faith exercised, as about the greatest, so also about the smallest and commonest matters; (use grace, and have grace :) It is want of use makes you lame of your right hand, and much using renders it more useful. Faith is the head of your spiritual senses; and, if that be active, the rest cannot be idle, nor much at a loss. Faith also is a plain-dealer; it represents things as they are; shews them in their true dimensions, with their use and end. See therefore that you never hold a consultation, unless faith be present, yea and president too, else all will be in disorder at once. One act of faith shall sooner remove the mountain, than all the cattle on a thousand hills.

Lastly, You have closed with this truth; and, having made diligent search to find in yourselves those marks of God's elect, sit down and take the comfort of it: Let this joy of the Lord be your strength. Eat your bread, and drink your wine (or water either) with a merry heart, since God hath accepted you. If David's heart was so taken with that temporal favour which chose him to be king before the house of Saul^x; how should our souls be wrapt into the third heaven, that we (poor, unworthy, wretched we) should be taken into that peculiar favour in which the generality of men have nothing to do? How should it affect our hearts, and raise up our spirits, both in all active obedience, as David, who danced be-
fore

^u Heb. 13. 5, ^x 2 Sam. 6, 21;

112 *A Practical Discourse of Election.*

fore the ark with all his might; and also to all long-suffering with joyfulness, as *Paul*, and other chosen vessels, who rejoiced in tribulation, because this love of God was shed abroad in their hearts ?

Art thou of those who are *wise* and *noble* according to the flesh? Be filled with an holy amazement, and exultation together, (rejoicing with trembling) that the great God (to whom thou wast no more than others thy comforts that are left, and who commonly chuses the *base* and *foolish*, thereby to magnify his grace) should thus go out of his way to call in *thee*, and hath also made his call *effectual* to thee, even *then* when thou wast environed with a world of temptations to obstruct it. And if thou be a man of *low degree*, poor, weak, foolish, of no account among men, even as one that is *not*; and hath the Lord regarded thee in thy low estate, and magnified thee, by setting his love upon thee? hath he taken thee from the dunghill, to set thee among *princes*, even the princes of the world to come? This is that exaltation which the *poor* should always rejoice in. Were you the *head* instead of being the *tail*, were the necks of your enemies *under your feet*, yea, *were the devils themselves made subject to you*; it could not afford you the thousandth part of that cause of rejoicing, as that *your names are written in heaven*. Are other men prosperous in the world, and free from trouble, while you are reduced to a low estate, and chastened *every morning*? have, perhaps, but an *handful* of meal, and a little oil in a cruse, &c. yet think not your portion *mean*, or hardly dealt out: Your good things are to come, they are growing in the other world; and at the time of harvest the Lord will send his angels for you: Yea, our Lord himself will come and fetch you thither; and you shall be *for ever* with him, in whose presence is *fulness of joy*, and at whose right hand are rivers of pleasures for evermore. And then you will sing [*The lines are fallen to me in pleasant places*;] at least, *say* so now. As *Abraham* dealt by his concubines children, so doth God by the *Ishmaels* of the world; he gives them portions, and sends them away: But the inheritance he reserves for his *Isaacs*; to them he gives all that he hath, yea, even *himself*: And what can we have more?



Of REDEMPTION.

IN *this* point we are equally concern'd with *that* of *election*, as the great comprehensive *means* of bringing about the greatest *end*, viz. the glory of God in the salvation of his chosen. *Redemption* is not *another* foundation distinct from *election*, but the chief corner-stone that *election* hath laid of the world to come.

That our Lord Jesus Christ hath a *body* or *church*, to whom he is *Head* and *Saviour*, is not a supposed question: But, *who* they are that make up this body; whether the *whole* of *mankind* universally, or *some* particular persons: Whether he had, in his death, the same respect to *all* as to *some*: And whether *any* of those he died for, may miss of the benefit accruing by his death; are questions of great import, and worthy a serious deliberation; and the rather, because they are points too lightly discoursed of by many. To resolve which, is the scope of the present discourse; which I cast into three branches.

- I. *That the body of Christ consists of elect persons.*
- II. *That for these it was that he laid down his life.*
- III. *That the intent of his death cannot be frustrate.*

I. *That the body or church of Christ consists of elect persons.*
By this *body* or *church*, I understand the designed subjects of his spiritual kingdom, or members of his mystical body, to whom he was appointed by the Father to be Head and Saviour; and they to stand related to him as their Prophet, Priest and King: Which threefold office he bears *peculiarly* towards the *elect*, the church of the first-born, and heirs of that world to come. And of *these* doth his body consist, i. e. it is made up of *these* exclusive to *others*; their number is certain and entire, and cannot be broken, either by addition or diminution. Of *this* the tabernacle was a figure,
1. In respect of its symmetry or proportion of parts, which induced a singular beauty upon it; towards which nothing could be added, nor any thing abated. 2. In that all the
H parts

parts and dimensions thereof were predetermined of God ; and not left, in the least, to human arbitrement or contingency : And these are expressly said to be *patterns of things in the heavens* ^a ; that is, of the heavenly temple, or church of the first-born, which are written there ^b ; and in the appointed time shall be gathered together to him, as the materials of Solomon's temple were to mount *Moriah*, 2 Chron. iii. 1.

That the body or church of Christ consists of elect persons, is drawn from such premisses as these ;

I. In that our Lord and Saviour so manifestly shews himself concern'd for the *elect*, as having some *peculiar* interest and propriety in them, and charge of them. With *these* his delights were from everlasting ^c ; (a manifest proof of Christ's divinity !) And, as soon as they were *actually* in being, he began his *actual* converse with them ; and therein did even *confine* himself to the *elect* seed. With what undeniable patience and goodness did he superintend the church, or elect nation, forty years together in the wilderness ^d ; bearing them as on eagle's wings, and tending them as the apple of his eye ! And, when he dwelt upon earth, he went not beyond the bounds of the holy land, where also all his delight was among the *saints* ^e. *These* he made his consorts and men of his counsel ; and, when we find him with *others*, it was for the *elect's* sake that were among them. How frequently, and with what well-pleasedness, doth he speak of *these* ! professing his love to them, and that according to the highest pattern ; Even as the Father loved me, so he loved them ^f : And how great things he would do for them ; not to the *possessing* of his kingdom, but the laying down of his life for them ^g ; gathering them in, raising them up, and giving them to sit with him in his throne ^h. But, for the world, he takes little notice of them, except with a kind of contempt and commination ; *Let them alone* ⁱ ; *Shake off the dust of your feet* ^k ; *Give not that which is holy unto dogs* ^l, &c. Yea, tho' they seek him, they shall not find him ^m. But, for his elect, he is found of them, even while they think not

^a Heb. 9. 23. ^b Chap. 12. 23. ^c Prov. 8. 31. ^d Acts 7. 36, 38.
^e Psalm 16. 3. ^f John 15. 9. ^g Chap. 10. 14, 16. & 6. 40. ^h Rev. 3.
 21. ⁱ Matth. 15. 14. ^k Chap. 10. 14. ^l Chap. 7. 6. ^m John 7. 34.

not of him ⁿ: The instances of *Matthew*, the woman of *Samaria*, the possessed *Gadaren*, his people at *Corinth*, a records of it. And all this, because these are his *portion*, and the lot of his inheritance ^o; they are the men which the Father gave him out of the world ^p: For as Christ our Head is not of this world ^q, so neither is his kingdom, nor the subjects of it.

It is true, the Father hath given Christ to be Head over all; but his lordship over men in general, and his headship over the church, have a far different respect and consideration: He is God of the whole earth, but *Jeshurun's* God in a way peculiar to his chosen ^r. An headship of dominion he hath over rebels, and service he hath from them, tho' they think not so, nor intend any thing less. *Nebuchadnezzar* was his hired day's-man against *Tyre* ^s, and *Cyrus* against *Babylon* ^t; whose right hand he held, tho' they knew him not: So *Moab* was his washpot ^u. But, for the elect, they are his natural subjects, tho' not naturally so; they are his by another title, and to another end: And so intimate is the relation between him and them, that they are said to be of his flesh and of his bone ^x; they both have one soul and spirit; he and they make one perfect man ^y.

That the whole world is put in subjection to Christ, is for the elect's sake; the power he hath over others, is in order to their salvation: He is Head over all things to the [church] ^a; that is, to subject, dispose, and order all, for the church's good: He hath power over all flesh, that he might give eternal life (not to all he hath power over, but) to as many as the Father hath given him ^a; which [giving] imports [election] as going before it: And therefore he says, *I have manifested thy name to the men which thou gavest me out of the world; thine they were, (that is, by election) and thou gavest them me* ^b. That in *Heb. x. 5. A body hast thou prepared me*, tho' chiefly intended there of his human nature, holds true of his body mystical; all the members of which were written in God's book (of election) when as yet there was none of them actually existing ^c. He therefore prays for those as a party

H 2

ⁿ *Isa. 65. 1.* ^o *Dent. 32. 9.* ^p *John 17. 6.* ^q *Chap. 18. 36.* ^r *Dent. 33. 26.* ^s *Isa. 44. 2.* ^t *Ezek. 26. 18.* ^u *Isa. 45. 1.* ^x *Psaln 65. 8.* ^y *Eph. 5. 30.* ^a *Chap. 4. 13.* ^b *Chap. 1. 22.* ^c *John 13. 2.* ^d *John 17. 6.* ^e *Psaln 139. 16.*

party distinct from the world, and given him for an *higher end*; as appears by comparing the 2, 6, 9, 24, 26 verses of that 17th of *John*.

II. We find by scripture-usage, that [*church*] and [*elect*] are but two several titles of the same persons, in a several respect; [*elect*] as chosen of God to salvation; and so they are called *the church of [God]* and said to be *sanctified by [God the Father]* Jude ver. 1. And *the church of [Christ]* as given or committed to him by the Father, in order to that salvation, *John* xvii. 6. Of this church were those particular congregations, to whom the apostles inscribed their epistles; where we have them sometimes intituled, *Beloved of God*^d: Sometimes, *the church of God*, and *sanctified in Christ*^e: At other times *saints* and *faithful brethren in Christ*^f: Then *churches of the saints*^g; and *church of the first-born*^h: And sometimes expressly [*elect*]ⁱ. By all which is signified, that the church of Christ consists of *elect persons*; that these various appellations are but so many terms indifferently used about the same subject, and *all* as notes of distinction from the world.

When Christ shall appear in his glory, then shall his members be gathered to him; *The Lord my God shall come, and [all the saints] with thee*, says *Zechariah*^k. And *Paul* (discourfing the same thing) says, *They that are Christ's at his coming*^l; which shews that they are Christ's so as others are not. And that it is meant of elect persons, appears by our Saviour's own words; when speaking of that his coming, and of the same persons who are said to be *his* and to *come with him*, he gives them expressly that denomination; *He shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather together his [elect]*^m: But, as for the *rest* of the dead, *they lived not again till a thousand years after*ⁿ; therefore these [*rest*] were no part of *this* body. It may also be noted, that those who did not rise with the saints are specified here by the same word or note of distinction, as those *not elected* are in another place; *The election hath obtained, and the [rest] were blinded*^o: And that those who had part in the *first resurrection* are the same persons

^d Rom. 1. 7. ^e 2 Cor. 1. 2. ^f Col. 1. 2. ^g 1 Cor. 14. 13. ^h Heb. 12. 23. ⁱ 1 Pet. 1. 2. ^k Zech. 14. 5. ^l 1 Cor. 15. 23. ^m Mat. 24. 31. ⁿ Rev. 20. 5. ^o Rom. 11. 7.

persons that are written in the Lamb's book of life, is evident by comparing *Revi. xx. 4.* with *Chap. xiii. 8.*

III. It was necessary that the body or church of Christ should be composed of the *elect seed*; 1. Because none else were fit to be of his body, but such as should be like the Head. Carnal members would be as uncomely to a spiritual Head, as one of the brutes to be *Adam's* companion. The King's daughter-elect (to make a suitable match for his Son) must be *all glorious within*; not only of the same outward metal (for so were those other creatures with *Adam*) but made in the same mould, and endowed with the same spirit and understanding: There must be a congruity in all the parts throughout; they must be copies of him, *each one resembling the children of a King* ^{p.} If the Head be heavenly, so must the members: They cannot walk together, if not thus agreed. 2. Because the *likeness* to Christ is proper to the *elect*: 'Tis a royal privilege entail'd upon them, and cannot descend or revert to any out of that line. That this likeness to Christ is requisite to *all* his members, and also peculiar to *elect persons*, are both attested in *Rom. viii. 29.* *Whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the first-born among many brethren*: Which implies, that the *foreknown* (or *elect*) only are predestinated thereto; and that, were it not for predestination, the *First-born* should have but a thin assembly to preside among; indeed nothing but blanks for his great adventure, and long expectation. In *Eph. i. 3, 4, 5.* he further appropriates those spiritual blessings, by which men are conformed to Christ, to the same persons; *Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly things in Christ*;---[According as he hath chosen] *us in him*:---Having predestinated us to the adoption of children, &c. By these two scriptures it appears, that God's children, and Christ's brethren, are the same persons; and that they were so made by election. But, are Christ's brethren and his church the same persons? Take your solution from *Heb. ii. 12.* *I will declare thy name unto my [brethren]; in the midst of the [church] will I sing praise unto thee.* 3. This *likeness* to Christ is not attainable by any, without

H 3

first

first being in him as their Head; for which cause the elect were chosen in him ^a. It is out of Christ's fulness that all grace is received; and, in order to that reception, there must be *union*: The branch cannot bear fruit of itself, nor indeed be a branch, unless it grow out of the vine. For which cause and end, the designed members of his body were *decreatively* separated from their wild olive-root, and put into Christ by election; and, in the fulness of time, *actually*. And hereby they are made partakers of the fatness of that heavenly root, (*i. e.* of the Spirit of Christ, which is called the *anointing* ^r.) In this respect, the first or second *Adams* are set forth as *parallels* touching Headship to their respective bodies. As from *Adam*, their natural head, all mankind have derived their natural being; so from Christ, their spiritual Head, do all the elect seed receive their spiritual being and nature: On which account he is stiled *the everlasting Father*, and they *his children* ^t. They were all in *Christ* from eternity as truly (but spiritually) as mankind in *Adam* when he fell, or *Levi* in *Abraham's* loins when *Melchisedec* met him. *Eve's* production (as to the manner of it) was a pattern of this: She was made of *Adam's* Substance; but she came not out of his loins, but out of his *side* ^u: So is the new creature extracted out of *Christ's*; they are *bone of his bones, and flesh of his flesh* (spiritually understood). And none can thus proceed from him, but such as were in him *decreatively* before the world: Men are blessed with these spiritual blessings, as being in Christ, and not otherwise ^u.

Inferences.

Inf. I. Let no man pretend to this honourable relation of membership to Christ, without something to shew, by which he may warrantably avouch it. The currentest mark will be your *conformity*, not to men, or self, but Christ Jesus your Head: It is *that* must denominate you *Christians* indeed. At the latter day Christ will know none but such as have made their robes *white in the blood of the Lamb*. All hang-by's and ivy-claspers will then be shuck off, and those only retain'd that have his substance in them. Many shall come, and

^a Eph. 1. 4. ^r 1 John 2. 27. ^t Isa. 9. 6. Heb. 2. 13. ^u Gen. 2. 21.

33. ^u Eph. 1. 4. Tit. 3. 5, 6.

and plead their works, what they have been, and what they have done ; and their old hypocrisy will be so immoveable and impudent, that they'll even expostulate the matter with him ; *Have we not prophesied in thy name, and in thy name cast out devils, and done many wonderful works* * ? Of whom our Lord will profess, that *he knows them not* ; no, nor he never knew them ^v. His own he knows by their *likeness* to him ; he knows, and cannot but know the members of his body. *My [Sheep] I know, but who are ye ?* will he then say to all that are but *professing* members of him ; which will (indeed) be a doleful conclusion of their groundless (tho' specious) confidence : Look to it therefore in time,

Iif. II. We gather hence the safe and honourable estate of the church.

First, Their state is honourable. If the woman's dignity rise in proportion with that of her Lord ; how highly dignified is the spouse of Christ, in having the *Son of God* for their Head ! That seed of *Abraham*, which the second Person took on him, was instantly enobled with a glory becoming the Son of God, and the Head of principalities and powers ; and no more to be consider'd merely after the flesh : In like manner, having accepted those his church is composed of, he communicates to them of his own condition and nature ; *the glory his Father had given him, he gives to them* ^a : And, notwithstanding their former and natural baseness, he reckons them now as one with himself, and according to what he will make them at last. A tincture thereof he gives them here in regeneration ; which also he carries on from glory to glory, and at his appearing it shall be perfected ; they *shall be like him* indeed ^b. To say of the church's Head, that he is the [*Son of God*] is to give him all titles of state and honour : 'Tis that which every knee must bow unto. His glory is so incomprehensibly glorious, that we shall sooner be lost in searching into it, than compass *encomiums* worthy of such a subject : I therefore say no more of it ; nor can more be said (in so many words) to illustrate the church's glory, than that she is the *spouse of Christ*. Hence the glory of our religion, and of its real confessors. And, let it be noted, that it is not

H 4

a

* *Mat.* 7. 22. ^v *Ver.* 2, 3. ^a *John* 17. 22, ^b *1 John* 3. 2.

a bare *titular* or *temporary* dignity they are vested with ; but that which is *real*, *solid* and *durable*. Princes confer *titles* of honour, but cannot infuse *dispositions* worthy those titles, nor keep them from degenerating : Christ, as Head of the church, does both ; he derives into his own, his own prince-like virtues, and that as really (and intelligibly too, to those that partake of them) ^c, as the vine its sap into its natural branches. What a labyrinth is it both of honour and consolation, that the blood royal of heaven runs in their veins, and will never out ! But, true as it is, how few do believe it ? And, of those few, who is it that lives up to the faith of it ? Two ends (therefore) I mention it for :

[1.] To bear up your spirits against the world's frowns and calumnies, which the serious thoughts of your relation to such an Head may well counterbalance and relieve you against. Princes in exile (or if in their own country unknown and mean attended) are but coarsely us'd ; (and we marvel not at the matter) which yet the thoughts of their high birth, and confidence of restoration, do mightily support them under : Much more should the sons of God (whose descent is not reckoned from the kings of the earth) have still in their eye their divine extract, with that circumferent reward that's coming, and bear up their heads in a prince-like manner ; and, for the joy that is set before them, both endure the cross, and despise the shame ; until they come to be exalted, not only above those nick-names the world now imposes on them, but above the most honourable names, and most serene titles that are found under heaven ! Then shall it be known *whose you are* ; your lustre shall be no longer hid ; those that despise you now, shall *lick the dust of your feet* ^d. And then shall be accomplished that great word of our Saviour, (and that as surely as if it were done already) *The glory which thou gavest me, I have given them* ^e : Yea, *you shall sit with your Lord on his throne* ^f. Besides, (which also shall add to this day's solemnity) this thing shall not be done in a corner ; but as ye have been openly reviled, so shall ye have publick vindication. *The great trumpet shall be blown in the land* ^g : The archangel with the trumpet of God ^h shall come, and that

^c 1 John 1. 1, 2, 3. ^d Isa. 49. 23. Psalm 72. 9. ^e John 17. 22.
^f Rev. 3. 21. ^g Isa. 27. 13. ^h 1 Thess. 4. 16.

that with so shrill a note, that heaven and earth shall ring again; and this shall be the tenor of his song, *Arise, shine, for thy light is come, and the glory of the Lord is risen upon thee*¹; (and shall see no more) *Thus shall it be done to Zion, whom no man (now) seeketh after*^k.

[2.] To mind you that your honourable state obliges to an honourable deportment, both towards your Head, yourselves and fellow-members.

(1.) As touching your *Head*. 1. Own his supremacy, giving him preheminance in all things. Call no man on earth master, i. e. in point of faith: Give unto *Cesar* all that belongs to him; only respect Christ as supreme Lawgiver. 2. Submit to his government: Steer your course by his counsels, and follow his conduct: Go after him wherever he shall lead you: Let all your senses have their seat in your Head: Let every thing be understood by you according to his sense and interpretation of it; and, if there needs an argument to back the exhortation, that ordinance, *Thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee*¹, is as true and cogent concerning Christ and the church^m. 3. Expose yourself for him: Stand between him and wrongs: Preserve his honour and interest with the utmost hazard of yourself: Let life and death be as things indifferent to you, so *Christ may be magnified in you*ⁿ. 4. Look to your Head for a supply of all grace; from his fulness it is to be had, and nowhere else: Hold to your Head, lest notions beguile you of your reward^o. Be also sure that you keep to your place and duty, lest you miss of the nourishment that belongs to you^p: A member out of its place is (for the time) as a member cut off. 5. Lastly, Adorn your Head, by your daily aspiring to a nearer resemblance of him: Shew forth his virtues: Be holy as he was: Let all your fruits be such as are meet for such a root, *God the Father* is the Head of *Christ*, and he bore the express image of his person^q in all that he did; *He could do nothing but what he saw the Father do*^r: So do you by your Head Christ; make him your example; and, in order thereto, live upon him as your immediate root, and give him the honour of his

¹ *Isa.* 60. 1. & 20. ^k *Jer.* 33. 17. ¹ *Gen.* 3. 16. ^m *Eph.* 5. 24. ⁿ *Phil.* 1. 29. ^o *Col.* 2. 18, 19. ^p *Jobn.* 14. 4, 5. ^q *Heb.* 1. 3. ^r *Jobn.* 5. 19.

his own productions; remembering withal, that every slip of yours casts soil upon him.

(2). There is a respect due to yourselves: (A superfluous *item*, one would think, yet needful.) There's aptitude enough to honour ourselves; but, as belonging to such an Head, is too much unthought of. Things that well enough become the common rank, would be a disgrace to persons of honour: The king's daughter should be known by her outward garb; [*glorious within*] and [*clothing of wrought gold*] decypher the same person, and may not be separated. Ye have an *high calling, walk worthy of it* [†]; and shew your thankfulness by an humble retribution: Honour that which honours you, by comporting with its end: Make not yourself cheap; stoop not beneath your degree; make Christ alone the object of your love, delight, dependence; to do otherwise is to debase yourself [‡]. The church is the glory of Christ; its members therefore should think themselves too good, and too great, to be spent on the world; and the world too mean and empty, to afford them either satisfaction or adornment. A circumspect walking, soberness of mind, humility, self denial, with a meek and quiet spirit, are jewels of price, and ornaments indeed: By these the *invited guests* should distinguish themselves from *intruders*, and *real Christians* from *merely nominal*. In Christianity 'tis no badge of pride or ill-husbandry, to wear your best every day; yea, you should not be seen without it: Much wearing will better it, and it cannot be damaged but by lying by. Your *bodies* too are worthy of consideration, and not a little: They are the figures of Christ's humanity, and temples of the holy Ghost; therefore keep them unspotted, and profane them not, either by fashioning them to the world, or subjecting them to servile uses. But I would not cause any to err: *These* (tho' ornaments) are not your righteousness; when ye stand before God, ye must put over all the *righteousness of your Lord and Mediator*: (the priests holy garments are to be sprinkled with blood, *Exod. xxii. 21.*) *This* was that the speechless guest wanted, and was therefore cast out; tho' not discriminable by them that stood by. *Abraham* was justified by *works* before *men*; but, before God, it was the righteousness

[†] *Phil. 3. 24. Col. 1. 10. ‡ Isa. 57. 3.*

ness of Christ wherein by faith he shrouded himself. *Faith* justifies the person, and *works* justify his *faith*, both to himself and other men.

(3.) Then carry it towards your brethren as members of the same body. 1. Usurp not upon them, as if more than a fellow-member with them: Judge not the strong, despise not the weak: Who made thee a judge? There's none but hath need of forbearance from others; tho', for the most part, they that need it most, are most backward to yield it: But this take for a rule, that the less you see your need, the more need you have of it. 2. Intrude not in another's place and office: Each member hath its own, to which it is fitted: *This* it best becomes, and *here* it is most useful; elsewhere it would be both useless and a deformity (as a finger transposed, and out of its own joint.) 3. Shew your co-membership by your love and tender regard towards others: *Have compassion upon the ignorant and those out of the way* ^u, as your Head towards you. If one be weak or wounded, let him that is strong and whole support and bind it up: If one foot stumble, let the other step in for its help: *Consider thy self, lest thou also be tempted* ^x. Members of the same natural body need no arguments to persuade to this duty; they do it by instinct. Our want of compassionateness towards others (tho' it shall not dry up, yet) may such restrain (at least in our apprehension) the springs of Christ's pity towards ourselves. 4. *Lastly*, Let the good of the whole have preference to a particular part; and let that of a lower use deny itself for the safety and assistance of that which is more noble: This, in a degree, is to lay down our life for the brethren. He that in these things serveth Christ, is acceptable to God, and approved of men; and a good evidence it is of our membership to Christ.

Secondly, The church is safe. The Son of God being their Head and Saviour, bespeaks aloud their security. They are indeed compassed about with difficulties, dangers and deaths; and yet they *live*, yea *they overcome*, and shall in the end prove *more than conquerors*. The reason of all is, Their Head is in heaven, whence all relief comes; and that avenue cannot be stopped. If we speak of principalities and powers, which

rule

rule in the air; Christ has a power above them, they are *under his feet* ^a. Their power of hurting lies much in their *subtily*; but even in *this* they are still circumvented, he catches them in their own net: And hence it is, that the devil has from the beginning been a liar to himself. His first bait in tempting was, [*Ye shall be as gods*] ^b; when his meaning was, to make us like himself. But the wisdom of God turns the temptation into a prophecy, and Christ will make it good ^c; as he also did that pernicious counsel of *Caiaphas* ^d. The serpent, in bruising Christ's heel, got a bruise in his own head; that all his devices have still proved abortive, or turned on himself. He stirred up *Judas* to betray Christ, the *Gentiles* and *Jews* to condemn and crucify him; and what got he by it, but the loss of his empire? If ye speak of his seed, the like infatuation hath descended to them: *This* nothing makes plainer than their still making it their interest to exterminate the church: (With as much reason they might think to unhinge the world, or unbottom the rock of ages.) But their projects have ever been defeated, and shall (as men mistaking their measures) be made to subserve the interest they design to crush. The *Egyptians* dealings with *Israel*, and *nominal Christians* with those that are *really such*, are instances above contradiction. 'Tis a consideration of no small importance to our faith, that all things were made for Christ, and are at his dispose: And therefore, whatever the church's enemies have, they have it from the church's Head; who, knowing his own interest and intent, will give out no more than to serve that turn; nor can they act what they have but under his government. He is Prince of the kings of the earth, he ruleth among the gods, sits at the helm invisibly, steers the most secret and violent counsels, and carries the casting voice. Among other observables, 'tis matter of wonderment, 1. That the divine prescience hath so interwoven the secular interest with that of his church, as induceth a kind of necessity to protect the church for the world's support. 2. That our Lord frequently compasseth *his* work, by letting his enemies do their *own* ^e. And, 3. That in all their devices he still countermines them; and either

^a Heb. 1. 13. and 2. 8. ^b Gen. 3. 5. ^c John 17. 21. ^d Chap. 11. 30. ^e Isa. 1. 11, 12.

either takes out their powder, or blows them up with their own train ^f.

But suppose that hell be broke loose, and legions of locusts, belched out of the bottomless pit, come up against them, armed with strength, winged with fury, ambuscadoed with policy, edged with enmity, and headed by the red dragon; and by these is besieged the camp of the saints and the beloved city, and the church as unable to resist as a woman that's ready to travail: And now (say their enemies) what will become of their dreams? Take this for your comfort: 1. There still hangs a cloud between the two camps, and its *bright side* is towards the church ^g. 2. The enemies camp is again surrounded by the church's succours, and kept in a pound, as by *chariots and horsemen of fire* ^h. And, 3. That he who sits in the heavens will have them in *derision* ⁱ. *Jerusalem* will prove a burdensome stone to all that trouble themselves with it. And if other means fail (and to make a total end) *fire comes down from God out of heaven, and devours them* ^k.

But there is yet a more dreadful sort of enemies than these; the devil in the head of original sin, is a beast not to be dealt with. The church itself (reflecting on self, and looking no higher) may cry out with amazement, *Who is able to make war with the beast?* Indeed the whole of your native militia, with all their troops of free-will auxiliaries, will not do it; they are but mercenaries; and, if ye trust them, they'll turn against you in the battle: Or if they stand to it, (according to their best skill) it shall not avail you; they are with this beast, but as stubble to his bow: Yet be not discouraged, only renounce them all, and depend on the *triple league* [above;] (that *omnipotent* and *inviolable confederation*) of whose forces your Lord is Commander in chief. The Lion of the tribe of *Judah* is able to deal with that beast, and to tear him in pieces; yea, he hath done it already; *On his cross he triumphed over them* ^l: Yea, and which is more, he followed the rout to the gates of hell; there he shut them in, and carries the key on his shoulder; they cannot wag but by licence from him, nor tarry a moment beyond his precept. To be short, the only dreadful thing is sin; the devil, death and hell, are but sub-

^f 2 Kings 6. 8, 9. ^g Psal. 9. 15, 16. 2 Chron. 20. 22, 23. ^h Esai. 14. 20.
ⁱ 2 Kings 6. 17. ^j Psal. 2. 4. ^k Rev. 20. 9. ^l Col. 2. 15.

subordinate attendants (as effects on their causes) and therefore, *that* taken away, the rest are unstung, they have lost their power of hurting; so that the church still remains invincible; and the reason of all is, *It is founded upon a rock* ^m; and *that rock is Christ* ⁿ. All which being true, not only of the church in gross, but of members in particular; therefore,

Infer. III. Let every one that is of this body be well apaid with his lot; be glad and rejoice for ever in this your portion: This is the exaltation the *brother of low degree should value himself by* ^o. Be your rank and condition ever so mean in the world, care not for it; but rest contented with your place, and be thankful for it: Desire not (yourself) to change it, but strive to fill it up, and be as useful in it as you can. Look also for troubles, and think them not *strange* ^p: The *Captain of our salvation was made perfect through suffering* ^q; and the *servant may not look to fare better than his Lord* ^r.

Infer. IV. If Jesus Christ be your Head, be confident then of all love, counsel, care and protection from him: *Union with him entitles to all that is his.* It is *natural* to the head to love and to cherish the body, and every member of it; to contrive and cast about for its welfare and safety: *As a man cherisheth his own flesh, so doth Christ his church* ^s. What tho' thou be, in thyself, an uncomely member? he will put the *more comeliness* upon thee ^t: *He will give grace and glory, and no good thing will he withhold from thee* ^u! For he being the *First-born, Prince and Head* of the family, all the *younger brethren* are to be maintained upon his inheritance.

Infer. V. Rest also assured of safe conduct to the *promised land*. Adversaries and difficulties you will certainly meet with; remaining corruptions (like the mixed multitude) will be tumultuating and tempting *within*; the *Amalekites* and people of his wrath will stand in your way *without*, or be falling on your rear, to cut off the weak and feeble; and the *serpent* will yet be nibbling and bruising your *heel*, but higher than that, he toucheth not; your *heart* and your *head* are out of reach, therefore safe: If it come to the worst, ye can but die, and death itself shall not hurt you: Nay, you conquer dying; it shall but mend your pace heavenwards, and hasten you

^m Mat. 16. 18. ⁿ 1 Cor. 10. 4. ^o James 1. 9. ^p 1 Pet. 4. 12. ^q Heb. 2. 10. ^r Luke 23. 31. ^s Eph. 5. 29. ^t 1 Cor. 12. 23. ^u Psal. 84. 11.

you up to the throne of God. Therefore quit you like men, and as men of nearest relation, by blood and spirits, to the Man Christ Jesus: For God shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly^x. Come, (will your Captain say to you, come) set your feet on the neck of this king of pride^y; and do by him as he hath done by others, and would have done also by you; Give him double according to his works^z. This is the time when ye shall judge angels^a; and all under the conduct of, this your Head and Captain, who will now present you faultless, even before the presence of his glory, with exceeding joy^b.

II. That our Lord Jesus Christ gave his life a ransom for the elect.

That the elect are Christ's peculiar portion, is shewn before; and what engagements were upon him on that account, for their redemption, will appear afterwards. By [giving himself a ransom,] I understand the whole of his humiliation, whatever he did or suffered as Mediator, from his incarnation to his resurrection; all which are summarily expressed by [the blood of his cross;] as all the precious fruits of his death are by [forgiveness of sins,] and [reconciliation with God.] That was the price wherewith he bought them that should be saved; and this the salvation he bought for them, and them for it. For albeit that Satan (thro' their free-will failings in Adam) had got a temporary mortgage upon the elect themselves, they are not his; the fee simple or right of inheritance remains in Christ, and therefore at the year of jubilee they return to him as the right heir, tho' not without both conquest and full price, which two together make redemption complete.

My scope here is to shew, that the body or church of Christ are especially concerned and interested in redemption. And, in order thereto, I would consider two other of the divine works, both which respect the world universally, as redemption doth, and yet have a speciality in them, as redemption also hath, viz. creation and providence.

1. Creation. One God was the Maker of all; but all were not made for the same use and end: He had a peculiar scope in the making of some, which was not common to the whole;

^x Rom. 16. 20. ^y Job. 10. 24. ^z Rev. 18. 6. ^a 1 Cor. 6. 3. ^b Gal. 6. 10.

yea, the *whole* was made for the sake of that *some*. As in a great house are many vessels, (all of one master's providing, and all for his own service) some to honour, and some to dishonour: So in the world, *some* God raised up to be monuments of his power and justice ^c, called therefore *vessels of wrath* ^d; *others* are *vessels of mercy*, whom he formed for himself ^e, and are therefore said to be *afore prepared unto glory* ^f.

2. *Providence*. This also extends to all, and to each individual: He hath power over all, and govern them he doth, in their most ungoverned designs and actions. But as touching his church, the people of his holiness ^g, he holds a peculiar kind of government over them, and steers of their concerns; and *this* so far exceeds the *other*, that (in comparison) 'tis said, *He never bore rule over them* ^h: And (which is still to be remarked) the *others* concerns are made *subservient* to *theirs*; *He is Head over all to the church* ⁱ. In like manner, *redemption* may be said to be *general*, and yet to have a *speciality* in it. It is general, 1. In respect of *persons*; 2. In respect of *things*: Both which are true apart, tho' not conjunctly. It purchaseth *some* good things for *all*; and *all* good things for *some*. As it respects *persons*, it obtains a general reprieve, extensive to all the sons of *Adam*: The sin of the world was so far expiated, that vengeance was not *presently* executed; which must have been, had not the Son of God interposed himself: His being slain from the foundation of the world, was the foundation of the world's standing, and of all the good things which the world in general are partakers of. All that order and usefulness which yet survives among the creatures, with all the remains of our primitive state, was preserved (or rather restored) by redemption: Christ is *that light which lighteth every one that cometh into the world* ^k; i.e. The light and blessings which any man hath, he has them from Christ as a Redeemer; *By him all things consist* ^l. Thus far redemption was general as to *persons*; and in this sense *Christ is the Saviour of all men*. But let's not omit, that all this had a special respect to the *church elect*: For *them* it was that

^c Exod. 9. 16. ^d Jude, ver. 4. ^e Rom. 9. 23. ^f 1 Pet. 2. 8. ^g Rom. 9. 22.
^h Isa. 43. 7, 21. ⁱ Rom. 9. 23. ^j Isa. 63. 18. ^k Ver. 19. ^l Eph. 1. 22.
^m John 1. 9. ⁿ Col. 1. 17.

that the world was made. They are the substance of it ^m; and, but for *them*, it had been dissolved, or turned into a lake of fire. What the prophet speaks of *Israel*, was true of the *universe*, *Except the Lord of hosts had left us a remnant, we had been as Sodom*—ⁿ: As *those days of tribulation were shortened for the elect's sake* ^o; (not yet in being) so, for *them* it was, that, when sin came in, destruction was warded off.

But *temporary* things, tho' ever so great and good, were of too low an alloy to be the purchase of divine blood; their line is too short to measure redemption by, and their bulk too narrow to fill up the height and depth of that great abyss: There must, by that *glorious achievement*, be some *nobler obtainment* than short-liv'd blessings, and an *higher end* than to bring men into a *mere possibility* of being saved. The life of the Son of God was infinitely too *precious* to be given for *perishing* things; nor would it be consistent with divine wisdom to venture it for an *uncertainty*. It had been a *light thing* for Christ, and not worthy his sufferings, to raise up the ruins made by *Adam* to such a degree of *restoration*, as would only have set him in his former state, and that upon terms more unlikely to succeed: This had been to give a *greater value* for things of *lesser moment*; for it needs must be an happier state, to be made upright, without a bias to evil, than to be moved with all manner of motives, while fetter'd by unbelief, and a natural bent to revolt further: For, notwithstanding all those motives and means, not the *majority* only, but the *universality* of mankind might have perished and gone to hell; which would in nowise have answered God's end in making the world, much less in redeeming it. 'Twas therefore necessary, redemption should have a further reach than to bring men into a *mere salvable* state; and that could not be less than a state of *certain salvation*. And, in order to this, redemption was general as to *things*, even all that pertaineth to life and godliness; eternal life, and whatever conduceth thereto, as will after be made evident. And *this* is that redemption we are treating of; and *this* the sense of the present position, *viz.* That *redemption, thus qualified, is peculiar to the church*; and that *election* is the pattern by which

I

^m *Isa.* 6. 13. ⁿ *Chap* 1. 9. ^o *Mat.* 24. 22.

which redemption is to be measured: *The Son can do nothing but what he sees the Father do*, John v. 19.

To make redemption larger than electing love, is to overlay the foundation; which (all men know) is a very momentuous error in building, especially such a tower whose top must reach to heaven. It therefore behoves us to see, that we separate not what God hath conjoined, either by stretching or straining the bounds he hath set. The *Jews* were opinion'd that the promise of the *Messiah* belonged only to *them*, exclusive to the *Gentiles*: Others since would extend it to *all* the sons of men *universally*, and *alike*; not considering the reason why the promise was made to the *roman's* seed, and not to *Adam's*: But the *Messiah* himself, who best knew the *line* of the *promise*, and *end* of his *mission*, exempteth none, but extends it to *all nations indifferently*; yet so as that he restrains it to the *elect* among them, describing them still by such appellations as import a *select party*: They are called *his seed*, and the *travail of his soul*; with respect to whom he should *make his soul an offering for sin*^p: These also he terms his *sheep*, and himself the good Shepherd, (as well he might) *whose own the sheep are*, and for *whom he laid down his life*^q: And, that he might not be taken to intend those only of the *Jewish* nation, he presently adds, *And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold; them also must I bring*^r. The evangelist, expounding the high priest's prophecy, (*That it was expedient one man should die for the people*) delivers it thus; *That he should not die for that nation only, but also, that he should gather together in one the [children of God] that are scattered abroad*^t: In consequence whereof, they are said to be *made nigh by the blood of Christ*^u, (tho' before afar off); and that *he reconciled both*, (i. e. *Jews and Gentiles*, or the *elect* scattered among both) *in one body by the cross*^v: And this in pursuance of that blessed compact made with him, for restoring the [*preserved*] of *Israel*, as you find it recorded in *Isa. xlix. 6*. It further appears by *Isa. liii. 6*. that they were [*sheep*] *whose iniquities were laid upon Christ*: And again, *ver. 8. For the transgression of my [people] was he stricken*. And here let me note (for 'tis very

con-

^p *Isa. 53. 10, 11.* ^q *John 10. 15.* ^r *Jer. 16.* ^s *Ch. 11. 51, 52.* ^t *Eph. 2. 13.* ^u *Jer. 16.*

considerable) that we read not of any party of men termed *sheep*, the *people of God*, and his *children*, in distinction from others, but with respect to some *peculiar interest* he hath in them *above* others; and what *that* interest may be, excepting election, doth not appear to us: For those *other* sheep were not yet *called*, and therefore not yet *believers* and *sheep* on that account; but as they were of *God's elect*. For, tho' all men were lost, Christ was sent but to the lost sheep of the [house of Israel]; that is, those persons of the lost and perishing world, whom God hath chosen for his *peculiar*s, as he did the house of *Israel* from among the nations, and who, in that respect, were a special type of the *spiritual* election. And, on this account, the promises of the *new covenant* were made to the church under such names and titles as were proper to that people, as distinguished from other nations.

In *Isa. lxii.* we find [*holy*] and [*redeemed*] applied to the same persons: Whether it be meant of the *elective* holiness or *actual*, it comes to one; for *both* of them, together with *redemption*, do refer to the same subject: For as *actual* sanctification is the next fruit and consequent of *redemption*, so *election* is the root of them both; as ye have it in *1 Pet. i. 2.* *Elect unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ* *. To be *holy*, is to be *sacred*, *selected*, and *set apart* for holy uses, by appointment of God; and they were *actual*ly sanctified by the *sprinkling of blood* †: In both which respects, the people of *Israel*, the *tabernacle*, *temple*, *priests*, *altars*, &c. are all said to be *holy*.

In *Luke i. 72.* God's sending of Christ is said to be, in performance of his *holy covenant*; which was first proclaimed in *paradise*, as made with the woman's seed ‡; and afterwards renewed with *Abraham* §; and is therefore termed, the *mercy promised to Abraham and to his seed*: And who are *Abraham's seed*? Not the *world*, but *believers*; that is, the *elect*: For these only obtain faith, *Rom. xi. 7.* And *Gal. iii. 29.* faith plainly, *If ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed*. We also read, that it was a *peculiar* people that Christ gave himself for, and purchased ¶: It denotes some *special propriety* he hath in them *above others*; and so, a *special cause* for his giving himself for them. It also seems that

that [*peculiar and purchased*] are so nearly allied, that one word is used to signify both, 1 *Pet.* ii. 9. According with this is that in the 1 *Pet.* i. 20. where Christ is said to be *verily fore-ordained, and manifested* for those he writes that epistle to. That they were persons *elected*, is evident by the 1 & 2 *verses*; and elect unto the *sprinkling of his blood*: And as they were elected to it, so, in the 17th of *John*, he professes to make it good; *For their sakes* (says Christ) *I sanctify myself*; and twice in the 10th of *John*, that *he laid down his life for the sheep*^c; which is as exclusive of others, as where he saith, *My righteousness extends unto the saints*; and, *He that believeth shall be saved*, that is, such, and none else.

It further appears from *Acts* xx. 28. that it was the [*church*] of God *he purchased with his own blood*. Now, the church, and the world, are plainly distinct, as a garden inclosed is from the common fields. That the church consists of *elect persons*, is proved before; and that it was the church he died for, is prov'd by this scripture, as also from *Eph.* v. where husbands are required to love their wives, as *Christ loved the church, and [gave himself for it]*^d; which shews, that as the husband's love to his wife is *another kind* of love than what he bears to others of the same sex, so is Christ's love to his church; and therefore his death, which was the special effect of that his love, is peculiar to the church only. The elders about the throne sing a new song to the Lamb, because *he redeemed them to God by his blood*^e: Among other reasons for that stile of elders, this may be one, that they were *chosen from the days of old, and their names written in his book of life from the foundation of the world*^f. They are also said to be redeemed [*out of*] every kindred, and tongue, and people and nation; which rationally implies, that the bulk of those people and nations were not redeemed with them. We also read, that a certain number are said to be redeemed [*from the earth*] and [*from among men*]^g: If some from among others, it follows of course, that those others were exempted. (Here note by the way, that these elders were now in heaven, above the clouds of misconception and prejudiced opinion; and therefore no reason to misdoubt their testimony.) And further, these *redeemed* ones are there also stiled,

^c *John* 10. 11, 15. ^d *Eph.* 5. 25. ^e *Rev.* 5. 9. ^f *Ch.* 17. 8. ^g *Ch.* 14. 3, 4

filed, the first-fruits unto God, and to the Lamb ^b; which appellation insinuates, that they were separated from the rest, as the first-fruits under the law were by God himself, who took them for his own portion ⁱ. They are likewise said to have the *Father's name written in their foreheads* ^k; (election marked them out for Christ) and to be written in the Lamb's book of life, and that as a Lamb slain, who on that account says to his Father, *Thine they were, and thou gavest them me*, John xvii. 6. Where also, in his prayer for those whose sacrifice he was now to offer, he files them, *the men which the Father had given him [out of the world:]* And in ver. 10. *All mine are thine, and thine are mine*; i. e. All that were Christ's in order to redemption, were first the Father's by election. It is as if he had said, All that I undertake for are thine elect; and all thine elect I undertake for: He therefore reciprocates the terms of relation, turns them to and again, to shew the sameness of the persons concerned in both. From all which it seems undeniably evident, that as a certain number were elected, so a certain number, and those the very same persons, were redeemed.

The ground and truth of his assertion is further confirmed by such arguments as these:

Arg. I. The Levitical sacrifices were offered for the house of Israel, exemptive of others nations: And, these being a type of the *spiritual election*, it follows, that this sacrifice of Christ (typified by theirs) was also peculiar to *Jews in spirit*, or spiritual *Jews*: For he only is reckoned a *Jew*, that is such inwardly in the spirit ^m. So, *Aaron's* making atonement for his household, and bearing the names of the twelve tribes on his breast-plate, were typical of our great high Priest's bearing the names and sustaining the persons of those for whom he offered himself on the cross: Of all those legal shadows, Christ and the church of the first-born are the body and substance.

Arg. II. The right of redemption among the *Jews* (which shadowed this) was founded on brotherhood: Hence I infer, that *that* relation (spiritually taken) was both the ground and

↓ 3

limit

^b Rev. 14. 4. ⁱ Numb. 3. 13. & 8. 16. ^k Rev. 14. 1. ^l Ch. 13. 7
^m Rom. 2. 29.

limit of Christ's office as a Redeemer. The apostle's discourse in *Heb. ii.* seems to point at this; where he says, they were brethren, children, and sons, whom Christ should deliver from bondage, make reconciliation for their sins, and bring to glory. But how came they to be God's children, and brethren to Christ, above others? It was by predestination; and that was it entitled them to redemption; as is evident by comparing the 5 and 7 verses of *Eph. i.* Having [predestinated] us to the adoption of children by Jesus Christ; in whom we have [redemption] thro' his blood. And 'tis worthy your notice, that, by the law of redemption, a stranger (one that was not of the brotherhood) might not be redeemed; but one that was, tho' not redeemed, must yet go free in the year of jubilee ⁿ; which shews the peculiar respect the Lord has for his peculiar people.

Arg. III. The saving benefits of redemption do not redound to any but elect persons. Whatever is one-where ascribed to redemption, as the special fruit and consequent thereof, is elsewhere ascribed to election, and to this as the first and original root: And that redemption itself is the fruit of electing love, is evident by 1 *Pet. i. 2.* (quoted before) elect unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ. They are also said to be blessed with all spiritual blessings in Christ, according as he had chosen them in him ^o. And if all spiritual blessings be dispensed by the law of election, then all the saving benefits of redemption, which are the same with those of election, must be dispensed by the same rule, and so to the same persons only. We also find, that Christ's actual distribution of the gifts he received for men, is guided answerably: He manifests the Father's name to the men he had given him [out] of the world ^p: To these he expounds that in private, which to others he spake in parables: And thus he did, because to them it was given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God, but to the multitude it was not given ^q; and election was that which gave it them, (as it follows there) for so it seemed good in thy sight. In like manner, the apostle, in *Rom. viii.* puts election and redemption together, as pertaining

ⁿ Lev. 25. 46, 48. with 41, 54. ^o Eph. 1. 3, 4. ^p John 17. 6. ^q Mat. 13. 34, 36.

taining to the *same* persons; and justification (which is the next effect of redemption) he makes also an unquestionable consequent of election; *Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth: Who shall condemn? It is Christ that died* ^r. The question being put concerning God's *elect*, and the answer referring to those for whom Christ dy'd; is a plain implication, that *redemption* and *justification* are commensurate with *election*; that *either* of them concerneth only the *same* persons; and that *neither* of them extends to *any*, but whom the *other* also taketh in.

Arg. IV. The price of redemption was of that *precious* and *matchless* value, that it could not be parted with, but with respect to the *certainty* of the *end* for which it was paid. Now, the *end* of redemption was the salvation of men, below which there could not be an end worthy the death of Christ; and *this* nothing could secure but election. The *elect* always have *obtained*, and shall: This is a rule affirmed in *Rom. xi. 7.* But for the *rest*, *they are blinded*; that is, they are left to their own voluntary misunderstanding; and, being so left, not only they *do not*, but they *cannot* believe. And Christ knowing from the beginning who they were that believed not, but would certainly reject him; to what end should he make his soul an offering for them? Why for the world of ungodly, whose spirits were in prison some thousands of years before? Whom the Lord intends to save alive, he appoints an atonement to be made for them ^r: But for those he intends to destroy (which is always done justly) he will not *accept* an offering ^t, and therefore not *appoint* it; as he did not (under the law) for those crimes which men were to die for.

Arg. V. I confine redemption to elect persons, because *intercession*, which is of equal latitude with *redemption*, is limited to *them* exclusive to *others*. The priests under the law were to pray for those whose sacrifice they offered: And what they did, was a pattern of our Saviour's priestly office; whom likewise we find to sacrifice and pray, only for the *same* persons: He is an *advocate* for those for whose sins he is a *propitiation* ^u; Whose transgressions he was *smitten*

I 4

for,

^r *Rom. 8. 33, 34.* ^t *Numb. 16. 46, 47.* ^u *Judges 13. 23.* ^v *1 John 2. 1.*

for, for them he makes *intercession* ^a: For *their* sakes he sanctified himself, and for *them* it was that he made that solemn prayer in the 17th of *John*; and he then *prayed* for them, as being just then upon *offering their sacrifice*: He also shuts out the world expressly from having any interest in it; *I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me* ^v. And he adds the reason (the foundation-reason) why he would pray for these, [*For they are thine,*] i. e. they were the Father's by *election*; for in all other respects *the earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof*, Psal. xxiv. 1.

Arg. VI. Another argument for *peculiar* redemption is founded on the *merit* of Christ's death, together with its *efficacy*. He was not cut off for himself ^a, but those he undertook for: And it was to procure them a *right* to those glorious privileges which *election* ordained them to. Hence I argue, 1. *That* which Christ laid down his life for, *that* he *merited*. And, 2. What he *merited*, is due to those for whom it was *merited*. Now, the principal thing intended and *merited* by his death was the *justification* of sinners; and *that* God *might be just in justifying of them* ^a; and finally, that they might have *eternal life* ^b. If therefore he *merited* this for *all*, then *all* must be *justified* and *saved* ^c, and it cannot justly be denied to *any*: For it is their due by virtue of a *price*, and that *price* well worthy of it; which also was paid to that very *end*, and this by the creditor's own appointment, who cannot condemn any for *whom* Christ died ^d: His justice shall not be liable to such a reflection. Whence it may rationally be concluded, That, if *all* men are not *justified*, justification doth not *belong* to *all*. And as for *efficacy*; *Adam's* transgression was efficacious on the will, and whole man, to *deprave*: Why not (then) the righteousness of *Christ* to *restore*; since the *prebeminence*, in that very thing, is given to him? *Rom. v. 17.*

Arg. VII. The doctrine of *special* and *peculiar* redemption is further confirmed by those perillous consequents which attend the doctrine of *general* redemption, as 'tis commonly held forth: For, (1.) It seems to reflect on the *wisdom* of God, as imputing to him *such* a contrivance for mens salvation as was altogether *frustrable*; which is far from convincing the world

^a *Isa. 53. 8, 12.* ^v *John 17. 9.* ^a *Dan. 9. 26.* ^a *Rom. 3. 26.* ^b *John 17. 2.* ^c *Rom. 5. 8, 9, 10.* ^d *Rom 8. 34.*

world that Christ crucified is the *wisdom of God*. (2.) It also seems to tax God of *injustice*, as not discharging *those* whose transgressions are answered for by their Surety; or else, that the sufferings of Christ were not *sufficient* to make a discharge due to them. Or, (3.) It insinuates a deficiency of *power*, or want of *good-will*, to prosecute his design to perfection. (4.) It makes men boasters; suspending the virtue and success of all that *Christ* hath done for them, upon something to be done by *themselves*, which he is not the doer of; and consequently that men are *principals* in procuring their own salvation: And so Christ shall have but his thousands (in truth his nothing) while freedom of will shall have its ten thousands, to cry up the praise of men. This is not *that the Lord alone should be exalted*. (5.) It would also follow, that those who are saved, and gone to heaven, have nothing more of *Christ's* to glory in, and praise him for, than those who are perished and gone to hell: For, according to the principles of *general* redemption, he did and doth for *all* alike; and no more for one than for another. (6.) It makes men presumptuous and carnally secure. How many have soothed up themselves in their impenitency and hardness of heart, and fenced themselves against the word, upon this very supposition, that *Christ* died for all; and why then should not they look to be saved as well as any other? And so they lean (pretendedly) on the Lord, and transgress; not considering, that those for whom *Christ* died, he purchased for them a *freedom from sin*, and not a *liberty* of sinning; nor impunity, but upon terms of faith and repentance. And that the tempter disturbs them not in their rest upon such a foundation, may be one reason why men so stiffly adhere to it; and that *those* of the *general* principle are so seldom troubled with terrors of conscience.

Lastly, There was yet another reason of Christ's dying *peculiarly* for the elect: They were his *designed spouse*; and that brought upon him peculiar engagements to die for them. 1. As being his spouse, he was chargeable with their debts: They being made under a law, and he assuming them into a spousal relation, made himself one with them, and answerable to them. It was in the law's account, as well as his own intent, a making himself their *Surety*, (*I/a.* liii. 8, 11.) and consequently, in case of forfeiture, his life must go for theirs.

He is therefore said to be *made under the law* ^r, (as they were) and to be *made sin for them* ^h: And, being so, it behoved him to suffer ⁱ, and it could not be avoided ^k; for, the law being just and holy, its violation must be answered for, either by principals or Surety: And here it was that mercy and truth, grace and justice met together; making due temperament, which answered the ends of both. Grace takes hold of him as a Surety, that the sinner might go free; and justice, as of the most responsible party (for none else could answer the law's demands:) And, being apprehended, he readily yields to make satisfaction, and says to the law (as once to the Jews, when he was on the point of suffering for his spouse) *If ye seek me, let these go their way* ^l. 2. Another engagement was the love he bore to them. If possibly he might have been quit of their suretyship-engagement, this of his love would have held him to it: He could not bear to see his beloved fast-chained (like slaves) to the devil's galleys, and forced to serve against their natural Lord; and this bondage they could not be freed from, but by conquering him whole bond-slaves they were; nor could that be done, but by his own death ^m: And this his love constrained him to ⁿ; for love (to be sure his love) is stronger than death ^o; and accordingly we find that this is still made the ground and motive of his dying. 3. As the contract could not be dissolved (for he hates putting away) nor his love taken off; (for he changeth not) so neither, as the case stood, could he and they cohabit and dwell together. Creatures defiled with sin were not meet consorts for the Lord of glory: Nor could they be brought to a meetness, but by being washed in his blood; as he says to Peter, *If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me* ^p. The church must be sanctified and cleansed, without spot or wrinkle, or any such thing ^q, before they are fit for the presence of Christ in glory; and this could not be effected but by his giving himself for them: To this, therefore, the spirits of just men made perfect do ascribe their being in heaven ^r.

Whether they might possibly have been saved some other way is, to me, a needless enquiry: But it seems the import

of
^r Gal. 4. 4, 5. ^h 2 Cor. 5. 21. ⁱ Luke 24. 46. ^k Acts 17. 3. ^l John 18. 8. ^m Heb. 2. 14. ⁿ John 12. 31, 33. ^o Eph. 5. 24. ^p Rev. 1. 5. Gal. 2. 20. ^q Cant. 8. 6. ^r John 13. 8. ^s Eph. 5. 26. ^t Rev. 5. 9.

of our Saviour's own speech, that, if he had not thus done, he must have been in heaven without suitable company; where, speaking of himself, he says, *Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone* ^f. But it was not good that the man should be alone; no, not the *Man Christ Jesus*: It was therefore ordained, that he should have a seed to serve him, a church to preside over, in the midst of whom he should sing praises to his Father ^g; who are also called his fellows ^u; but his blood must be the seed of that church ^x, the price of their redemption ^y, the laver of their regeneration ^z. And so dear is the church to Christ, that he thinks himself not complete without them ^a: It was one of his last requests before he died, that they might be with him ^b. And, if the body must be with its Head, the holiest of holies must be their mansion: But such is that place's holiness, as not to admit them without a perfect purity; nor could they, if not so purified, bear the holiness of the place. All which considered together, shew such a reason of Christ's dying for the elect, as was not predicable of other men.

For the rest of the world, they were given as handmaids to his spouse: By vertue of which donation, they also are his; *He is Head over all to the church* ^c. They are his, but not as his spouse; as *Sodom's daughters* and *Samaria's* were to *Jerusalem*, but not by her covenant ^d. His relation to them was not such as to make him responsible for their defaults, or to oblige him for their recovery: Howbeit, the price wherewith he ransomed his spouse, took in her handmaids also; as *Abraham's* rescuing his brother *Lot*, brought back the *Sodomites* with him. All the benefits the world have by redemption, they may thank the church for, next unto Christ himself; for they have it upon her account, as the *Sodomites* theirs upon *Lot's*. And, to speak freely, the spouse of Christ could not well have been without her handmaids: We little think what service the world does for the church; albeit that, because they intend not so, they are not rewardable for it ^e. I shall only add our Saviour's own assertion in that 17th of *John*, where speaking of those his Father had given him, that he might

^f *John* 12. 24. ^g *Heb.* 2. 12. ^u *Heb.* 1. 9. ^x *Isa.* 53. 10. ^y *Rev.* 5. 9.
^z *Eph.* 5. 26. ^a *Eph.* 1. 23. ^b *John* 17. 24. ^c *Eph.* 1. 22. ^d *Ezek.* 16.
^e *Isa.* 10. 3, 10, 12.

might give them eternal life, he saith expressly, that for [*their*] sakes he sanctified himself[†]: Which was to say in effect, that, had it not been for *them*, he had not stirred out of heaven for the rest.

I should now come to the inferences: But finding this doctrine as much opposed as that of election; observing also a great proneness in men to embrace the notion of *general* and *conditional redemption* (which proceeds, partly from nature's inability to discern a reason why one should be redeemed, and not another; partly for that it is grateful to lapsed creatures to fancy themselves *active* in their own recovery; partly also from an aptness to catch at any thing that but seems to give quiet under convictions:) I hope it shall not be time lost to weigh their exceptions and our reply together. In the doing of which, I shall not answer every text that is made to serve in that cause; the sense they give of *some*, being evicted, may serve for *many*.

Object. In Rom. v. 18. *the restoration by Christ is made as large and extensive as Adam's sin.*

Ans. The comparison there stated is not put *extensively*, as respecting the *objects* of sin and grace; but *intensively*, as respecting the different *efficacy* of the several means by which those contrary effects were produced: The apostle therefore, to obviate such objections, restrains it in v. 15. *But not as the offence, so also is the free gift; q. d.* The free gift of righteousness and life doth not extend to mankind *universally* and *effectually*, as sin and death did: And he adds a reason to it; *For if through the offence of one many be dead, [much more] the grace of God, and the gift by grace hath [abounded] unto many*: Which is as if he had said, If the free gift had took in all, as the offence did, then all should have been saved; for that grace had abounded more than the offence: Which *superabounding* of grace must be meant of the *prevalent efficacy* of grace; (for, as to the *objects* of it, it could not take in more than all:) And therefore those, towards whom it hath so abounded, shall surely partake of the benefits of it. And further, that the word *all* might not be taken *universally*, he presently varies the term of comprehension, and renders that [*all*] by [*many*]: *As by one man's disobedience many were made*

[†] John 17. 19. & Rom. 5. 15.

made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous, Rom. v. 19. As all in Adam died, so all in Christ shall be made alive, 1 Cor. xv. 22.

Object. But redemption is often set forth in terms importing universality, viz. That Christ gave himself a ransom for all; that he takes away the sin of the world, and is the propitiation for the sins of the whole world, 1 Tim. ii. 6. John i. 29.

1 John ii. 2. which we cannot but take in a literal sense.

Ans. Both sacred writ and common discourse do frequently speak in general terms, when nothing is less intended by it than universality. John iv. 29. Come, see a man that told me [all] things that ever I did! when it was but how many husbands she had had, and that her present was not so. 1 Cor. x. 33. Paul is said to please all men in all things; whenas (in fact) he pleased but few in any thing, and in all things next to none. Col. i. 6. the gospel is said to be come into all the world, and to bring forth fruit as it did in them; when yet it was but a corner of the world, and but few [very few] in whom it brought forth as in them: (Examples are endless.) 'Tis therefore to be noted, that, where those general (or rather indefinite) terms are used about redemption, 'tis mostly to shew that the church of God (which Christ was to gather in) was not confined to the off-spring of any particular head; nor consisted of any separate sort or rank of persons, exclusive to others; but some of every kindred and nation under heaven, classes and degrees among men: The church of God takes in of all, and so doth redemption; however different in other respects, they are all one in Christ¹. And where this is not the scope, there the persons concerned are described by a narrower list; as, that he gave his life a ransom for many^k; and that he was once offered to bear the sins of manyⁱ; that he laid down his life for the sheep^m; that they are redeemed from the earth, and from among menⁿ, and out of every kindred, tongue, people and nation^o. That in Timothy (who gave himself a ransom for all) gives the objections no support; for [all] in the 6 ver. must intend the same as [all] in the 1 ver. which the text itself expounds to be kings and men in authority. As for [world] it hath many and

¹ Gal. 3. 28. ^k Mat. 20. 28. and 26, 28. ⁱ Heb. 9. 28. ^m John 10. 15. ⁿ Rev. 14. 3, 4. ^o Chap. 5. 9.

and various acceptations in scripture : It is not always meant of *men*, and of *men* it seldom intends the *universality* ; yea, it is often meant of a very *few*, in comparison of the whole : It would therefore be unanswerable rashness to limit so indefinite a term to any particular construction ; as, in part, is seen by the following instances. It sometimes intends the place of mens habitation here on earth ^p ; the time and state of things after the dissolution of the present frame ^q ; the extent and compass of the *Roman* empire ^r ; the religion and manners of the world ^s ; the troubles which in this world do attend the disciples of Christ ^t ; the splendor, wealth, honour, or whatever else is taking with the hearts of men ^u ; to set forth the greatness of something that cannot well be expressed ^x ; for the *Gentiles* in distinction from the *Jews* ^y ; for the numerous increase of some particular party ^z. More might be cited, but these may suffice, to shew how much it behoves to consider well the *scope* and *context* of scripture, and not to be led by the *vocal sound* of words.

There are yet two other interpretations, which come nearer the matter in hand : One is that which takes in the whole party of wicked men *alone* and *by themselves* ; as where 'tis said, *the saints shall judge the world* ^a, it must be meant of the world of ungodly, for the saints shall not judge one another : So, *all the world wondered after the beast, and worshipped the dragon* ^b ; this also must intend the herd of idolaters, exemptive to those who followed the Lamb ^c. It is also said, that *the world lieth in wickedness* ^d : Here ye have the very words, and alike connex'd, as in the place objected ; which therefore may as well be supposed of the same comprehension ; and yet it may not be understood of mankind *universally*, but such of them as are under the power and conduct of *Satan*, which the *saints* are not, and therefore are no part of the *world*, or *whole world*, there intended. The other interpretation of the word seems couch'd in the places objected, where Christ is said to *take away the sin of the world*, and to be *a propitiation for the sins of the whole world* : For, why may not the word be taken in a restricted and limited sense

^p *Nab.* 1. 5. ^q *Luke* 20. 35. ^r *Chap.* 2. 1. ^s *Acts* 17. 6. ^t *John* 16. 33. ^u *Gal.* 6. 14. ^x *John* 21. 25. ^y *Rom.* 11. 12. ^z *John* 12. 19.
^a *1 Cor.* 6. 2. ^b *Rev.* 13. 3, 4. ^c *Rev.* 14. 4. ^d *1 John* 5. 19.

sense here, as in the places fore-quoted? If by [*world*] is sometimes meant the world of ungodly, as separated from the *saints*; by like reason (at other times) it may be meant of the world of *saints*, as separated from the wicked, especially when nothing in the scope or context contradicts it. And what then should hinder but that [*world*] in the places objected may be setly intended of the [*elect*] exclusive to others, as the [*world* that lies in wickedness] is of those *others* exclusive to the *elect*? To be sure there can be no peril in so understanding it; for we know that Christ is the propitiation for *their* sins: But to affirm it of the *bulk* of mankind, hath many unruly and unworthy consequences attending it, some of which are shewn before. But what *world* was it that Christ would not pray for? It could not be *that* for which he died, for the priest was bound to pray for those he offer'd for: It must then be *another*; and then 'twill follow that there are two: 1. A *lesser*, which consists of a *select* party, and was taken out of the world *universal*, as the *Israelitish* nation was out of the *Egyptian* ^e, or as the *Christian* church (at first) was out of the *Jewish* ^f. *These* our Saviour stiles *the men which his Father gave him* [out of the world] ^g; for *these* it was that he *sanctified* himself, *i. e.* set himself apart to suffer for them; and for *these* he prayed; and of *these* is made up *that* world whose sin he taketh away, and for *whose* sins (even of the *whole* of them) he is the *propitiation*. *These* are the men that shall be counted worthy of the *world* to come ^h; and they are as properly term'd a world, as that blessed state and place of glory they shall be taken into, or as the *dwellers upon earth* are denominated a *world* from the place of their habitation ⁱ. 2. There is also a world of *ungodly*, from among whom that *lesser* world was taken and rated ^k; of whom it is said, *the devil is their god* ^l, and that *their names are* [not] *in the Lamb's book of life* ^m; but, *the* [whole] of it *lieth in wickedness* ⁿ: And this is that world for whom Christ professedly says, *he did not pray*; surely then, *he would not make his soul an offering for* [*their*] *sins*.

But,

^e Deut. 4. 34. ^f Acts 2. 44, 47. ^g John 17. 6. ^h Luke 20. 35. ⁱ Rom. 13. 3, 4, 8. ^k John 15, 1, & Chap. 17. 6. ^l 2 Cor. 4. 4. ^m Rev. 13. 8. ⁿ 1 John 5, 19,

But, because so great stress is laid on the literal sense of the word, let us scan a little further this *world* whose sin is taken away. I think it cannot intend the *universality* of mankind; because, tho' the world in *general* be concerned in redemption, those *general* concerns are too light to balance the weight of the text: *Temporary* things could in nowise answer the end and worth of *eternal* redemption; which being the most tremendous act that ever the sun hath seen, or shall, the effects thereof must be answerably great and glorious; and consequently it must peculiarly respect the *elect*, for it suits *adequately* to none else. To make out this, let us enquire; what that [*sin of the world*] is, and what the import of [*taking away*]. For the first; It is either some *one* grand transgression, or the *whole body* of sins together: If a particular sin, it must be unbelief; for that was the first, and parent to all the rest: And 'tis thus marked out [*the*] or [*that*] sin of the world; 1. Because it was the sin of the whole, both *Jews* and *Gentiles*. 2. It gave entrance to all other sins; they sprang from it as their root. And, 3. It is the *condemning* sin; no man perisheth but for unbelief: Where the gospel is not, they perish for not believing in *God*; and, where it is, for not believing in *Christ*. Or if it be meant of all sins universally, then the text considers them as put together, and taken away at once, as if but *one*. But be it unbelief *singly* and *specially*, or the *whole body* of sin conjunct, it comes to one; for unbelief is a member of that body, and a *capital* one; and so *that* be taken away, it matters not; *this* world is safe: The reason is, that *Christ*, in saving from unbelief, saves from all; for as faith is a complex of graces; so is unbelief of sin: Take away this, and the gulph is shut, all other sins disappear; there's an end of them, both as to guilt and prevalency: *He that believes shall be saved*. For the second, touching the import of [*taking away*] 1. The putting of it in the present tense, implies a *constant* and *continued* act, still pursuing the same end; it also imports a *perfect* act; not a partial taking away, or frustrable endeavour; but complete and certain, as a man takes away dung until it be all gone. 2. That *Christ alone* and by himself performs this work. 3. That he takes away sin as a *Lamb slain*;

not

die for himself, (for he was without spot) but for those whole Scurry he was. And, 4. As the *Lamb of God*; a Lamb of God's own providing, to save the lives of his *Israel*. This *taking away* is no less than a total removing of sin, a setting it at the utmost distance, and placing it in the *land of forgetfulness* ^p. And further, to assure of its utter abolition, this taking away is termed *destruction*, the *crucifying* of the old man, *slaying* the enmity, and *destroying* the body of sin ^q: This was that work of the devil, which the Son of God came to destroy; and destroyed it he hath, by *nailed it to his cross* ^r. The blood of the Lamb hath so overcome, that there needs no more sacrifice for sin; nor any thing exterior to itself, to make its redemption eternal. And to have sin *thus* taken away, cannot be said of the world universally; the reason's plain, because, sin being gone, nothing remains to charge the world with. But nothing's more evident, than that the *generality* of men ly plung'd in sin, and are bond-slaves of corruption to the last; it must therefore be *another* world (or tribe) to whom this great blessing must be assigned, and of whom verified: And since there is but one more (who are called *God's elect*) I conclude, that *they* are the men, and the world intended in the text; for we know that [*they*] are of God, and that the [*whole world*] besides lies in wickedness ^s.

Object. But if some only are redeemed, and those but few in comparison; then all ground of believing is taken away from the most of men.

Ans. 1. That Christ did not die for *all*, hinders none from believing; any more than that *many* of those he died for are not saved: Or, that, because *one* only can win the prize, hinders *others* from running. Nay, to teach (as they do) that Christ died for *all*, and that yet the *generality* of men shall die in their sins, and perish for ever; is a greater impediment to believing, than that he died only for *some*, and that *every one* of that *some* shall certainly be saved. 2. If we judge of trees by their fruit, we shall find, that the generality of men (such as reckon the matters of religion worth speaking of) hold stiff for the *general point*; which shews, that *that* notion has no great influence towards the working

K

of faith: If it had, the number of converts would not be so thin. It is also found, that the generality of carnal men, and such as hate to be reformed, are the greatest despisers of *peculiar redemption*, as well as of *election*. 3. To make faith an *evidence* of a man's interest in redemption, puts by the claim of unbelievers, as much as if it were a *condition*. 4. He that will know his own particular redemption before he will believe, begins at the wrong end of his work, and is very unlikely to come that way to the knowledge of it. The first act of faith is not, that Christ died for *all*, or for *you* in particular: The *one* is not true; the *other* not certain to you, nor can, 'till *after* you have believed. He that would live, must submit to mercy, with [*peradventure*] *he will save me alive*. 5. Any man that owns himself a sinner, hath as fair a ground for his faith, as any in the world that had not yet believed; yea, as any believer had before he believed: Now, may any person, upon any account, exclude himself from redemption; unless, by his obstinate and resolved continuance in unbelief, he hath marked out himself?

There are reasons enough, and of greatest weight, to induce men to believe, without laying *general* redemption for the ground of their faith: As, 1. That faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that *Jesus Christ came into the world to save sinners* ^a; and such are you. 2. That he gave his life a ransom for *many* ^b; and *you* may be of that number, as well as *any other*. 3. That those he died for, shall be justify'd upon their believing ^c, and shall have faith also, upon their seeking for it, as a part of his purchase, and given on his behalf ^d. 4. That to believe on his Son, is the will and commandment of the everlasting God ^e, whom we ought to obey, tho' so it were that salvation were not concern'd in it. 5. Those many faithful promises, assuring salvation to them that believe ^f. *Lastly*, The remediless danger of unbelief ^g. And, if such considerations as these will not prevail with you to believe, the notions of *general* redemption, together with the *general* *successfulness* of it, will never do it. *Object. The extending of redemption to the whole race of man-*

^a 2 Tim. 1. 15. ^b Mat. 20. 28. ^c Rom. 5. 9. ^d Phil. 1. 29. ^e Rom. 16. 26. ^f John 3. 23. ^g John 3. 16, 36. & Ch. 6. 47. ^h Mark 16. 16. John 8. 24.

mankind, tends to magnify the grace of Christ; but confining it to a remnant, is a lessening of it.

Ans. It no more disparages the grace of Christ, to die peculiarly for that remnant, than his chusing a *single nation*, and *fewest* in number out of the universe, and giving them laws that tended to life; while he suffered *all besides* to run wild, in the broad way, which inevitably leads to destruction. And as for redemption made general, with conditions annex'd; it is so far from magnifying the grace of Christ, that it plainly contradicts it: For, if he knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, nor would ever believe; it would rather have argued a degree of grace and favour, *not* to die for them; than that their sin and condemnation should be thereby so greatly aggravated: As it had been better for some they had never known the way of righteousness, than to depart from it, 2 *Pet.* ii. 21.

Object. *This leaves the most of men without remedy.*

Ans. The fallen angels were higher than we, yet have no cause to complain that no mediator was appointed for them; and, if any be left remediless, the fault's their own: For, if freedom of will, as *now it is*, impowers men to *make* a remedy (*scil.* by acceptance and application) much more, as *it was*, it might have kept them, if they would, from *needing* a remedy. You'll say, perhaps, (as some do) Why were men left to this freedom of will, if foreseen thus to use it? Nay rather, why do men, after so woful an experiment, chuse to be so left? They have their opinion; let them look to it.

And so I leave their objections: For I heartily wish, both for the truth's sake, and for peace, to see these contests *buried*, rather than *agitated*, lest they eat out the life of religion. (They breathe in an healthless air, who make them their element.) And I verily think, that if the controverted texts were duly weighed, (that is, if spiritual things were compared with spiritual, and fleshly consultations set aside) the present differences would quickly be composed, being mostly fomented by a loose and luxuriant way of philosophizing in divinity, and by holding no words of an indefinite signification more than the scope and context.

Inferences.

Infer. I. Upon what hath been said of the *work* and *ends* of redemption, I would turn (a while) to those of the *general* point; I mean not such as are men professing godliness, (too many of which are yet leaven'd with it) but those very *fordid* and *disingenuous* spirits, who pretend to a general ransom, (covering themselves with the shadow of it) and yet study nothing less than to answer its ends: Who dream of redemption from *hell*; but, for redemption from *sin*, it comes not into their mind: They contend, that Christ died for *all*; and yet carry it as if he died for *none*, at least not for *them*: For they have no mark or tincture of such a redemption upon them, but remain evidently *bond-slaves of corruption*. Can you think that the Son of God died for you, while you despise a living to him, hate them that love him, oppose whatever is dear to him, and persecute to the death (if your line would reach it) those that have any special mark of redemption upon them? Did he make his soul an offering for sin, to procure men a liberty of sinning? or, was Christ crucified, that the body of sin might remain unmortified, yea, get ground, and be the more rampant upon't? Is this your kindness to your Friend, to be so in love with his enemies, (the spear and the nails that pierced him) that you'll spend and be spent for the service of your lusts? He died, that those he died for might live: Live, to whom? Not to themselves, but to him that died for them: And did you really believe that he died for *you*, you could not but so judge; his love would constrain you. Redeemed ones are the Lord's *freemen*; and you are free to nothing but the devil and sin. Is this the badge of your freedom? the cognisance by which the subjects of Christ are known from rebels? No, 'tis the rebels brand, and you'll find it at last. This is that will *aggravate* your condemnation, and make it a condemnation to *purpose*, thus to deny the Lord that bought you: You are haters of God, and he'll make you to feel it; wrath will come upon you to the uttermost. If God spared not his own Son, who had no sin but by imputation; how shall he spare you that are nothing else but sin? *He that despised Moses's law died without mercy:*

mercy: Of how much sorer punishment shall he be thought worthy, who hath troden under foot the Son of God, and counted that blood which (you pretend to believe) was shed for your redemption an unholy thing? Heb. x. 28, 29. The wrath of the Lamb is dreadful! He'll tear you in pieces, and none shall deliver you. Behink yourself therefore in time; consider how you shall bear that weight of wrath which the Son of God sunk under! There is yet hope concerning this thing; and, if ye have any mind to escape, delay it not: If ye will enquire, enquire to purpose; return and come.

Infer. II. The doctrine of peculiar redemption may not be taken to discourage or weaken the hopes of any, in their coming to Christ for salvation; any more than that many shall seek, and shall not be able to enter, should keep men from striving: But, on the contrary, (which also was Christ's intent in telling us so) it should quicken our diligence and speed in going to him, lest the door should be shut, which is certainly open while he calls. Suppose the worst: Suppose (I say) that your interest in redemption were only as it is general, *i. e.* for temporal mercies, even that deserves all you can do and more. What criminal is it, that, lying at his prince's mercy, would not think himself oblig'd to spend the time of his reprovement in his prince's service; especially considering, that even that service shall have its reward? But why will you shut out yourself? No man is namely exempted; and for any to exclude himself, is to sin against his own soul, and to be a second time guilty of destroying himself. Put it upon the trial; you can lose nothing by venturing, but all without. Who can tell but your name may be written on the High Priest's breast-plate, as well as Reuben's or Judah's? Besides, you have no way to prove it but by going to see; which never any in good earnest did, but they found it so.

Infer. III. From what hath been said of redemption, as peculiar to the elect, with the plausible shews brought against it; I infer, the important necessity of trying the spirits, and the doctrines they bring, whether they be of God. A plausible outside, and fair shew in the flesh, are no argument of truth in the bottom. Takingness with nature should render things suspicious to us, rather than approved. Our best rule of judg-

ment, in this case, is that of our Saviour, *The tree is known by its fruits*. And, if by this we measure the *general point*, it will be found wanting in what it pretends to, and not a little reprobable: For, 1. Instead of magnifying the grace of Christ, and merit of his sufferings, it does, in effect, nullify both. It makes redemption general as to *persons*, but not as to *things*; it redeems the *whole* of mankind from *part* of their bondage, but *no part* of them from the *whole*; or upon such a condition as no man in nature is able to perform: Which is too defective to be the device of sovereign wisdom and grace. That cannot be called a *catholicon*, or general remedy, that suffers itself to be generally worsted by the disease; nor *that* a *perfect* redemption, which leaves still under bondage. I doubt not at all, that the blood of the Son of God in our nature, is of infinite merit; and withal, that it is of like infinite virtue and efficacy, and will for ever operate accordingly. But if the success and saving effects thereof should depend upon something to be done by men, which redemption itself doth not invest them with; then will men come in for a share with Christ, in the glory of their salvation; yea, in this case, any addition of human ability annihilates the grace of Christ ¹. Whereas, to depend upon Christ for sanctification as well as righteousness; to expect from him a *power* to repent and believe, as well as *acceptance* upon your believing, gives him his true honour, as entitling him to the *whole* of your salvation; which is indeed his proper due, and due to him *alone*. And this may be a main reason, why men professing the name of Christ are so generally strangers to faith and holiness: They do not seek it at the hands of Christ ¹, as a part of his purchase; but rely on their own ability. 2. Instead of laying a foundation for faith, and an help to believing; the *general* doctrine muzzles the soul in its unbelief, upon a presumption of power in himself to believe when he will. We little think how much presumption and carnal security derive from *this* root; whereas *peculiar* redemption in the vigour and latitude of it (*viz.* as procuring for us a *right* to faith and holiness, with the Spirit of Christ to work them effectually in us) is far greater encouragement to apply ourselves to Christ for them, as a part of his purchase ², and *that* without which we cannot

¹ Gal. 5. 2. ² John 5. 10. ³ Phil. 1. 29.

not partake of the other benefits of his death. And I cannot but think, that any man in his *right mind* ¹, (upon a due enquiry, and thorow considering the matter) would rather depend upon *such* a redemption as redeems from all iniquity, tho' the persons concerned in that redemption be but few; than on *that* which is supposed to redeem *all* universally upon condition of faith and repentance, but does not redeem from impenitency and unbelief. In *that redemption* let my part be, that saves from sin, that slays the enmity, that reconciles to God *effectually*, that makes an end of sin, and brings in everlasting righteousness; that does not only bring into a salvable state *conditionally*, but *works* also and *maintains* those conditions and qualifications that have salvation at the end of them.

Infer. IV. If Christ gave himself a ransom for the *elect*, then is redemption also of *grace*, and free as election itself; which bespeaks both our thankful remembrance, and also self-denial. There's a great aptness to forget our original; to pay tribute where 'tis not due, and to withhold it where it is. 'Twas needful counsel of old, and no less at this day; *Ye that follow after righteousness, look to the rock whence you were hewn*, Isa. li. 1. Your Redeemer first brought you out of nothing; and, when you had sold yourselves for nought, he himself became your Ransom, tho' he needed you not: See therefore that ye ascribe all to his love. It was not any *betterness* of yours that gave you *preference* in redemption, nor was it your ingenuous compliance that made redemption *effectual* to you; (those are slight pretences:) Had not your Redeemer bought you from *yourself*, released you from your *imaginary* freedom, and saved you from *unbelief*, you had never known what this redemption had meant, nor what it is to be free *indeed*. No, it was purely your Redeemer's love: He valued you as being his Father's *gift*, and as *given* to be *one* with himself; *He therefore loved you, and gave himself for you*. When you were in your blood, and no eye pitied you; (no not your own) then was the time of his love: Even *then* he accepted the motion made by *his* Father and *yours*, and signed the contract. He knew both your weight and your worth; your natural unfitness for him, and averiness to the match: He also knew *what* it must cost him to make you both meet and willing; and

and that it was so stupendious a work, that all the hosts of heaven would have broke under. He further knew, that, after all he should do and suffer for you, you could not advantage him in the least; only he should have the satisfaction to have made you happy against your *unrenewed* will; and yet he declined it not: He came *leaping upon the mountains, and skipping over the hills*, (of death and difficulties) as longing for, and delighting to be in that work: He was *strained* till it was accomplished; such was the intenseness of his love to you! And a great deal ado he had with your wills before you were brought to be willing. And, for all this, he only expects you will carry it worthy of so *great a Lover*, and such *manner of love*: Which is, in effect, but to accept of, and continue in, his love, and be willing he should save you *freely*; and own this love of his, as the immediate fountain whence your happiness is derived.

Infer. V. Since your propriety in redemption is founded in electing love, give all diligence to make your election *sure*: Spare not for pains; its fruit will be worth all the labour and cost you can lay out upon it; if clear in this point, the whole body will be full of light. And, among other evidences of election, review the marks specified before under that head. Make out also your interest in redemption, by walking worthy of redeeming love; which cannot be, but by doing and being something *more than others*; some *singular thing* must warrant your claim to that *singular privilege*: Hold forth, therefore, in your life, the effect of your union with Christ in his death. Let the *scope* of redemption be the *scope* of your conversation. You have no such way (if I may so speak) to gratify your Redeemer, as by letting him see of the travail of his soul: A thorow newness of life, with a total devoting yourself to God, will illustrate redemption not a little, and proclaim convincingly both its merits and efficacy. It will also be a good office done to yourselves, as an evidence of your special concern in redemption; and much more vindicate your Christianity, than formal profession, or eager contests. And, in order to this, 1. Determine to know nothing but *Jesus Christ, and him crucified*. Count all things else not worth your knowing; for, in truth, all knowledge else will come to nothing. Let all, therefore, be *loss and dung*, for the ex-
cellency

Salvage of the knowledge of Christ Jesus our Lord, Phil. iii. 8.
 And study the doctrine of his cross; that ye may not stand by
 and hear him defamed, and not have a word to say for him:
 So also observe him, that, when the world and he part, you
 may know your own Master, and be known by him. 2. Let
 nothing be so dear to you, as not to part with it for your Re-
 deemer when called for; and rise early to do it: Take up
 your cross, and inure yourself to the bearing of it, before it be
 laid on. The Lord parted with his delight for you from eter-
 nity; there is nothing more reasonable, nothing more natural
 to an heart rightly postured, than to love and live to him who
 died for you: And whoever hath known the grace of God and
 the love of Christ, in truth, cannot but so judge. 3. Deal
 with sin according to its kind; the dreadful nature whereof
 nothing discovers, nor can, but hell itself, and the sufferings
 of Christ, and mostly these: Let it die no other death but
 that of the cross; and the more it cries out to be spared, do
 you cry out the more urgently that it may be crucified.
 4. Let not Christ be divided: His offices are requisitely con-
 joined, and cannot be separated with our security; nay, not
 without our certain ruin. Know him, therefore, for your
 Prophet and Lord as well as your Redeemer, and for your
 Wisdom and Sanctification as well as your Righteousness;
 (One and All). Take orders from him as your Captain-
 General; receive your law from his mouth; whatever he
 bids you do, do it: Follow him wherever he goes, and car-
 ry it as becomes his attendants. The armies in heaven follow
 him upon white horses, and arrayed in white. Be not your
 own director in any thing, nor over hasty; stir not up your
 Beloved until he please, but await his counsel and conduct,
 as preferring his knowledge of times and seasons, with the
 manner and method of his working and prescribing, before
 your own. 5. Let nothing divide you from Christ: Let no-
 thing but death, yea, let not death itself separate between you
 and him. Nothing, you see, could separate him from you;
 nay, had it not been for you, and such as you are, he had
 not died: *We are not our own, we are bought with a price*^a;
 which is the highest engagement in every state and duty, whe-
 ther living or dying, *to be the Lord's*^b.

Infer.

Infer. VI. Christ's giving himself a ransom for you, warrants your largest expectation of good things from him: What *sins* too great to be pardoned? or *iniquities* so stubborn as not to be subdued ^c? or *graces* so precious as not to be obtained? The Lord delights in nothing more than mercy; the only bar was *sin*; which being dissolved by the blood of Christ, grace and glory run freely. The making us kings and priests unto God, yea, *one in the Father and himself* ^d, being the thing he died for, no inferior good thing can be withholden from us. *Faith* and *holiness* are great things indeed, and highly to be valued: Yet let me say, that even these, and all other good things laid together, will be but a very little heap to that grace which put us into Christ, the honour and privilege of union with him, and the price he hath paid for our ransom: *Herein is love, that God sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins* ^e! The purchase is paid, releases are sealed, and he in possession; all things are ready: It is now but his giving forth the revenue that lies by him, which also he delights to do.

Other notes of use this doctrine affords, which I can but touch, as *Jonathan* the hony. 1. It shews the high esteem that God has for his *chosen*; whom *he went himself to redeem, and purchased with his own blood* ^f. 2. That by this standard those favourites of heaven should value themselves; not weighing the world's contempt, nor clouding those marks of worth redemption has put upon them. 3. It shews the contagious nature of *sin*, the deadly venom whereof nothing but the precious blood of the holy One could possibly antidote, nor withstand the torrent of that fiery lake; as also its dreadfulness, in that the Son of God died in the conflict. 4. It argues the greatness and preciousness of the *soul*; the redemption whereof had ceased for ever, if Christ the Son of God had not made his own *soul* an offering for it. 5. That the world is not a little beholden to God's people for all the good things they possess; for they have them on *their* account, and should therefore afford them better quarter. 6. That God will not lightly pass by the wrongs done to his people. Redemption hath made them kings ^g, against whom even hard speeches

^c Heb. 9. 14. ^d John 17. 21. ^e 1 John 4. 10. ^f 2 Sam. 7. 23. ^g *As* 20. 28. ^h Rev. 5. 10.

speeches are criminal: How severely then will he make inquisition for their blood ^a! 7. It argues the *absoluteness* of election, for that an infinite price was irrevocably decreed and paid to confirm its title. 8. It also evinceth the absolute *freeness* and *independency* of electing love, since creatures could not possibly deserve or be worthy of so great a ransom. 9. It intensifies the exceeding weightiness of that glory which required so vast a price, and could not be had for less. *Lastly*, It further yields a *chief corner-stone* for the *saints* perseverance: For, (1.) They are not *now* at their own dispose; redemption has transferred their title to another, who loves them better than to leave them exposed to a second lapse, from which there is no recovering, (2.) Redemption being a *valuable* consideration, and so accepted; even the *righteousness* of God is engaged to save them; and must therefore prevent, remove, or over-rule whatever would hinder that salvation. On all which accounts (and others) redemption should be much the *subject* of our discourse and contemplation: It was the first-born promise after the fall; by the repetitions whereof, and further explanations, the Lord hath perfumed the breath of all his holy prophets which have been since the world began, Our Lord and Saviour himself was frequently speaking of it; which shews that his mind was much upon it, and that the same mind should be in us, 'Tis a theme that glorified *saints* take pleasure to dilate upon; witness *Moses* and *Elias* on the holy mount ⁱ; and *John*, wrapt into heaven on the Lord's day, found them at this *service* before the throne of God ^k; Where I cannot but note (by the way) three observables, 1. That the *saints* in heaven were celebrating the work of creation, and that of redemption, both in one day; and it was the Lord's day: A good argument for our Lord's day sabbath! 2. That they ascribe the same glory and honour unto the Lamb that was slain, as to him that sits on the throne: An evident proof of Christ's divinity! And, 3. That the ground of their triumph and exultation was not the *general* point (no *speech* of *that* in heaven) but *peculiar* redemption: A good confirmation of the present truth. And further, our Lord and Saviour still bears about him the marks of his crucifixion; he appears *as a Lamb that hath been slain* ^l, and he

glo-

^a *Psal.* 9. 12, ⁱ *Luke* 9. 34, ^k *Rev.* 1. 10, *Chap.* 5. 9, 12, 13. ^l *Rev.* 5. 6.

glories in it; *I am he that was dead*^m: And with these marks he'll appear when he cometh to judge the worldⁿ; till when, the Lord's day, and its most solemn ordinance, are for an unchangeable remembrance of him^o. Whatever therefore befalls us, should mind us of this glorious transaction: If it be evil, that redemption hath saved us from the evil of it; if good, redemption hath purchased it for us; whether good or bad in itself, redemption will sanctify it to us. But when ye think of heaven, and of the heaven of heavens as your portion, with all that heavenly *viaticum* (angels food, and better) that attends you at every stage, *until ye appear before God in Zion*^p; especially, when ye are admiring (for what it is ye cannot think) I say, when ye are admiring that transcendent glory which shall arise from that ineffable *oneness*, to be then compleated between the Father and Christ, and his saints; say, with that heaven-born Psalmist, *What shall I render unto the Lord for all his benefits?* and answer yourself with him; *I will take* (not this or that single benefit, but) *the cup of salvation*, (glorious redemption, which that cup signifieth) *and call on the name of the Lord*. All the divine attributes centre in redemption, as light and heat in the sun, and are thence savingly reflected upon men redeemed: And this is the most compendious way of beholding the glory of God, and of celebrating our dear-bought happiness. Something, perhaps, like this may that fruit of the vine be (tho' unspeakably beyond it) which Christ and his disciples shall drink new in his Father's kingdom^q; when he that sowed, and we that reap, shall rejoice together^r. Therefore unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, be glory and dominion for ever; Amen^s.

III. *That the purpose, or intent, of Christ's death cannot be frustrate; that is, Those for whom Christ died, shall certainly obtain all the benefits accruing by his death.*

All the counsels of God from eternity, all his promises and declarations holding forth those counsels, and all his dispensations in order to their accomplishment, have a special relation to Christ as dying for his people, and their actual sal-

vation,

^m Rev. 2. 8. and 1. 18. ⁿ Zech. 12. 10. ^o 1 Cor. 11. 26. ^p Psal. 84. 7.
^q Mat. 26. 29. ^r John 4. 36. ^s Rev. 1. 5, 6.

vision thereby, as the *end* thereof. Now, the *end* of a thing is *that* for which the thing itself is ; and, but for which, it had not been : 'Tis *that* the chief agent principally pur-
poseth, and aims at ; and, if he be wise, he will certainly use and appoint such *means*, and order them in such *manner*, that the thing designed shall not miscarry. Men indeed may miss of their end ; they aim at *this*, and *that's* produced, (as in building the tower of *Babel* :) But this is still from some imperfection in themselves ; either the thing itself is *not* *feasible*, or the way to it *imprudently contriv'd*, or the means *unduly apply'd*, their minds *alter*, or they are made to *desist* by a power above them, &c. But with the only wise and almighty God it is not so ; none of those things which impede the designs of *men* can happen to *his* ; there can be no other event of them, but what he setly intended : The least of his purposes shall not suffer disappointment, much less that great design of mens salvation by the death of his Son. That the thing itself is feasible, is attested by that innumerable company already in heaven on his account. It was so wisely contrived, that all interests concern'd are secur'd and satisfy'd : God is just in justifying ; the sinner saved, while vengeance is taken on his *sin* ; and Christ well pleased with a *seed* to serve him. The *way* of obtainment is such as will certainly compass the *end* ; the divine power is engaged in it, which rests not in the least on the concurrence or compliance of any mutable agent, or frustrable instrument. *His* heart cannot be taken off from it ; it is *that* his blessed thoughts have run upon from eternity, and those thoughts of his stand fast to all generations. And, *lastly*, no higher power can supersede his decree ; he is sovereign Lord, and controuleth all.

To confirm the point, take the following arguments.

Arg. I. is from *redemption* itself ; wherein, 1. The *greatness* of the price ; 2. The *kind* or *manner* of payment ; and, 3. The scriptural *import* of the word, are not a little considerable.

1. For the *price* : It was the life of the Son of God, whose personal dignity was such as put a transcendency of merit upon his death ; which therefore could not be parted with for a doubtful or uncertain purchase, nor could any obtainment inferior to salvation compensate the price. In this
lice

lies the stress of the apostle's argument; who, to set forth the happy state of God's elect, and to prove them out of danger, brings in the *price* of their redemption; *Who shall condemn?* It is [Christ] that died². The eminency of the person, and the *sufferings* he submitted unto, as they greatly illustrate his love to men, so they strongly affirm and ensure the event of his death: *For, if reconciled to God by the death of his Son, [much more] shall we be saved by his life*¹.

2. The *kind* or *manner* of payment; it was by *suffering*. Had the ransom been of the nature of depositable things, (*viz.* to secure satisfaction in case the treaty took effect, and to be resumed in case it succeeded not) it had much altered the matter; there had no great damage accrued to the depositor; he might have received his own again, tho' not with advantage: But *sufferings* once undergone cannot be recalled; they are as water spilt on the ground; they cannot be gather'd up again, unless in their fruits, *viz.* in the accomplishment of the end they were designed for; which, duly weighed, will not allow redemption to be conditional, nor its intended effects to depend upon things contingent. Besides, that which is infinite will not admit of addition; nor can that which hath all worth intirely within it, find any thing of worth without itself to depend upon. But this, methinks, should not need arguing, since it is so apparent.

3. From the *scriptural usage* and *import* of the word; which shews, that *redemption* hath made *eternal life* our *due*, and that all supposable conditions, all manner of graces, means and helps which must come between our natural state and glory, with glory itself, were all intentionally in the design of it, purchased by it, and contained in it; as the stalk, which the flower must grow upon, is virtually in the same seed with the flower itself. Redemption doth not only *allow* men their book, and save them *in case* they can read, (that's a heartless notion) but *enables* them to read, and that in point of *will* as well as *knowledge*. Faith is to salvation, as livery and saine are to possession; they are no part of the *price*, no condition of your *right*, but a legal and notifying introduction to your *actual* enjoyment; yea, the purchase-money entitles you to *them*, as well as to the *inheritance*. As we can ask
nothing

¹ Rom. 8, 33. ² Chap. 5, 10.

ending of God, either warrantably or successfully, but as entitled thereto by redemption; so, on redemption's account, ye may ask *any thing* that hath a tendency to its end; ye may claim faith in order to salvation, as well as salvation at the end of your *faith*.

And now, that redemption doth not barely make men *releasable*, or capable of being saved, but doth by its own proper vertue prosecute its end to perfection; that the actual compleat salvation of redeemed ones is bound up in it, and whatever might lett it taken out of the way, I shall clear by a short induction of particulars. (1.) *Redemption imports satisfaction*. Without *this* the world had not been reconciled; nor could it be said, *The pleasure of the Lord had prospered in his hand*: But both these are affirm'd *Isa. liii. 10. It pleased the Lord to bruise him*. It does not intend only, that it was the pleasure (or will) of God, that the thing should be done, but that he was well-pleased by the doing of it; that is, he was again pacified towards us, in whole stead he suffered; his justice being thereby aton'd. And this very reason ye have annex'd in *Isa. xlii. 21. The Lord is well pleased for his righteousness sake; [he shall magnify the law and make it honourable;]* i. e. by levying *satisfaction* upon Christ: Which also accords with and explicates that in *Rom. iii. 31. Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid; yea, we establish the law*. It is further confirm'd by *2 Cor. v. 19. God was in Christ reconciling the world to himself*. This must be reciprocally understood, for else the breach had continued: But surely the Lord would not be at *such* cost, to have his work but half-done; for what is reconciliation, but the renewal of friendship on both sides? And that *this* is Christ's own sense upon the word, is evident by *Matth. v. 23, 24. If thy brother hath ought against thee, go and be reconciled to thy brother*. It must therefore take in God's reconcilment to us, as well as ours to him; which could not be without *satisfaction*; his justice would not permit it; he will by no means clear the guilty. And, to put it beyond dispute, our grand Creditor proclaims himself satisfied, by his sending from heaven to release our Surety, *Matth. xxviii. 2*. It was to say, in effect, that he had no further demands upon us. (2.) *Redemption also imports justification,*

cation, or freedom from guilt, Eph. i. 7. In whom we have redemption through his blood, [the forgiveness of sins.] Rom. iii. 24. Being [justified] freely by his grace, through the [redemption] that is in Jesus Christ. Rom. v. 9. Gal. iii. 13. Christ hath redeemed us [from] the curse of the law, being made a curse for us. He blotted out the hand-writing that was against us, nailing it to his cross, Col. ii. 14. (3.) It imports the eviction, vanquishing, or binding of the strong man; who would not else have let go the prey, nor have left his possession: By death he destroyed him who had the power of death, that is, the devil, Heb. ii. 14. By the blood of his cross he spoiled principalities and powers, and triumphed over them, Col. ii. 15. (4.) It imports freedom from the power of sin, Rom. vi. 6. Our old man was crucified with Christ, that the body of sin might be destroyed; that henceforth we should not serve sin. Upon which it follows, He that is dead (viz. with Christ) is freed from sin, v. 7. And, Sin shall not have dominion over you, ver. 14. (5.) It imports inherent holiness, or sanctification, Col. i. 21. You who were sometimes enemies in your minds, now hath he reconciled, in the body of his flesh thro' death, to present you holy, v. 22. Heb. x. 10. We are sanctified thro' the offering of the body of Jesus Christ. Rom. vi. 18. Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness. And that it was by virtue of Christ's death, appears by ver. 8. For if we be dead with Christ, we shall also live with him: It is his blood which purges the conscience from dead works, to serve the living God, Heb. ix. 14. (6.) It likewise imports resurrection, John vi. 54, 55. I will raise him up at the last day; for my flesh is meat indeed, (i. e. as crucified.) Christ dying, was the death of death, Hos. xiii. 14. In Christ shall all be made alive, 2 Cor. xv. 22. (7.) It further extends to the actual possession of redeemed ones with blessedness and glory, Rom. viii. 30. Whom he justified, them he glorified. Liberty of entering into the holiest, is by the blood of Jesus, Heb. x. 19. Thou hast redeemed us to God by thy blood, Rev. v. 9. 'Tis the voice of those in heaven. Now, that all these are in redemption, is evident; and as evident it is, that redemption, thus qualified, is not (cannot be) liable to frustration; for it brings us to heaven, and then we are (sure) beyond

beyond the reach of danger. And for this it was, that *Paul* cared not (he needed not care) to know any thing (in comparison) but *Christ, and him crucified*, 1 Cor. ii. 2. It is true, the resurrection of *Christ*, his ascension, sitting at God's right hand, and intercession, have their respective influence into all these glorious privileges, and parts of eternal glory; but they all spring from his crucifixion: If he had not dy'd, he had not been a Priest for ever, as *he is*.

Arg. II. The end of redemption cannot be frustrate, because the righteousness of *Christ* is (at least) as prevalent and effectual to *his* seed, as *Adam's* transgression was to his. All his posterity, indeed, were involv'd in the curse; yet so that there still remained, thro' the intervention of grace, a possibility of release: But the righteousness of *Christ* hath so perfectly recovered and established *his* seed, that their justified state can never be lost; and the reason is, because grace hath outdone sin, and gone beyond it? *grace hath abounded much more*, Rom. v. 20. Which *superabounding* of grace cannot refer to the subjects of grace, as if they were *more in number* than the subjects of sin; (for sin came upon all, and grace cannot come upon more than all) but 'tis meant of the *prevalent efficacy* of grace, and the *permanency* of its effects towards all that are the subjects of it: And thence it is, that grace is said to *reign* through righteousness, and that to *eternal life*, Rom. v. 21.

Arg. III. If the end of *Christ's* death might possibly be frustrate, as possibly might the main end of God's making the world suffer disappointment. All things were made for himself; and by this scale they ascend to him; the world for the elect, the elect for *Christ*, and *Christ* for God. All his works praise him; but, above all, that of redemption, as of highest note and eminency. Most conspicuously doth the glory of God shine forth in the face of *Christ* as *dying*, and as dying for *such an end*, viz. the salvation of his people: It is the chief of the ways of God, the very meridian and height of his glory (not essential, but manifestative) both in this world, and that to come. Redemption was design'd to glorify all the divine attributes; it therefore behoved so to be laid, that, of all his designments, *this* might be sure to succeed: For do but subtract the *sureness* of its effect,

L

and

and leave his redeem'd in a *perishable* condition; and it draws a *blemish*, instead of *beauty*, upon all the divine attributes. For, [1.] The end of God's setting forth Christ a propitiation, was to declare *his righteousness* in the remission of *sin*^a; which it does doubly. 1. That, without satisfaction, *sin* could not justly be remitted. 2. That, satisfaction being given, it could not justly be imputed^b. But, if those for whom satisfaction has been given should not be justified and saved, divine justice would be as liable to impeachment, as if they had been saved without it: And so the thing, designed for the honour of *his righteousness*, would turn to its disparagement. [2.] It would not accord with the *love* and *goodness* of God towards his *elect*, that *that* which was meant for their recovery, and was also a price well worthy their ransom, should possibly turn to their deeper condemnation (for so it must, if they be not effectually saved)^c. This could not be that pleasure of the Lord, which should prosper in the hands of Christ. [3.] It would not be according to the *faithfulness* and *truth* of God, that *Christ* should fail of *that* he was promised, and earnestly looked for as the fruit of his *suffering*, which was a *seed to serve him*^d; the thoughts of which were matter of complacency to him from everlasting^e. But if those he died for should not only abide in the same condemnation he came to deliver them from, but under a much sorer vengeance than it he had not undertaken for them; how grievous would it be to *him*, and contradictory to the faithfulness of God! [4.] Another end of redemption was, that the *manifold wisdom* of God might shine forth in the *sight* of angels and men. *Christ crucified* is the *wisdom* of God^f: But if it were so contrived, that the thing chiefly design'd might possibly miscarry, it would be no illustration of wisdom. Will one of common prudence part with his jewels and choicest treasure, and leave his purchase *knowingly* under hazard? Men indeed may possibly waste their estates in trials and essays that come to nothing; but, did they foresee the event, they would not so expose their prudence to reproach. [5.] The *greatness* and *power* of God would suffer an eclipse, if it were in the power of creatures

^a Rom. 3. 25. ^b Ch. 8. 34. ^c John 3. 19. ^d Isa. 53. 10. ^e Prov. 8. 11. ^f 1 Cor. 1. 24.

to defeat his most wise and holy designs, and hinder the accomplishment of his greatest work. What would the *Egyptians* say, but that he destroy'd them, because not able to go through with that he undertook? [6.] *Lastly*, If the end of Christ's death might possibly be frustrate, then the blessed project for glorifying the *grace* of God might possibly be disannulled and come to nothing; for none but *saved* ones do or can glorify that *grace*.

Arg. IV. Another argument for the *sure effect* of Christ's death is, That he hath the management of the whole work committed to himself; as well the *application* of redemption, as the *procurement* of it. He is the repository, root, and treasury, wherein all the benefits of redemption are laid up; and the great Almoner by whose hand they are dispensed. *Adam* was no more a publick person after his fall; the new stock was not intrusted with him, but put into the hands of *Christ*, who will give a better account of it.

Arg. V. There is nothing wanting in our Lord and Redeemer, which might any way conduce to the final compleatment of his work. There are five things mainly requisite to make a great undertaking successful, *viz.* authority, strength, understanding, courage and faithfulness; all which the Captain of our salvation is eminently invested with: *The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand*, John iii. 35.

1. *Authority*: He was appointed to his office; (for, as Mediator, the Father is greater than he:) *He came not of himself, but the Father sent him* ^s; *he was called of God* ^h; It was laid on him, and undertaken by him, in the way of a *Covenant* ⁱ, and confirmed by an *oath* ^k, never to be reversed; which also may partly be the meaning of *God the Father's sealing him* ^l. *The government is laid upon his shoulder* ^m: He hath *the key of David* committed to him ⁿ; which shews the absoluteness of his authority: Without him, no man can lift up his hand or his foot in all the earth.

2. *Strength or power*: These cannot be wanting to him, if *all in heaven and earth* be sufficient for it; for this he hath ^o, and he hath it to this end, *that he might give eternal*

L 2

life

^s *John* 9. 42. ^h *Heb.* 5. 4, 5. ⁱ *Isa.* 42. 6. ^k *Heb.* 7. 21. ^l *John* 6. 27. ^m *Isa.* 9. 6. ⁿ *Rev.* 3. 7. ^o *Mat.* 28. 1.

life to as many as he undertook for ^p; which if they should miss of, it would be said, that *all power* was not able to save them. He that made the world, is surely well able to govern it, and to over-rule whatever comes into it: He would never have suffered *sin* (the *only* enemy) to invade it, if he could not have quelled it at pleasure: Their *Redeemer is strong*; the *Lord of hosts is his name*; he shall [thoroughly] plead their cause ^q: He must reign until he shall have put all enemies both under his own feet and ours ^r.

3. *Understanding or knowledge*: This cannot be wanting to him, who is the Wisdom of the Father. The Lord hath given him *the tongue of the learned*, that he might speak words [in season] to him that is weary ^s. He knows his work, *what* it is, *how* to effect it, and *who* they be that are concerned in it. 1. He knows *what* his work is: It was (in short) *to seek and to save that which was lost*: Not to bring them into a *salvable* condition, (as some speak) but to *save* them, and that from their *sins* ^t. He came to open the blind eyes; to bore the deaf ears; to restore the withered limbs; to cleanse the lepers; to heal the sick; to raise the dead; to cast out devils; to preach the gospel; and to cause those it belongs unto, to *hear* and *receive* it: He knows that they are *dead*, and he knows as well that he is to *quicken* them; and thence we have it in *John* v. 25. *The dead shall hear and live*: And *Chap.* x. 16. *Other sheep I have; them also [must I bring,] and they [shall hear] my voice*. He is also to keep them, and look to them, so as not *one* be lost ^u; and finally, to raise them up at the last day, and to take them to heaven with him: All which he is perfectly acquainted with, *his work is before him* ^x. 2. As he knows his work, *what* it is, so the *best season* and *method* for its performance. He came in the fulness of time, when things were *ripe* for his coming: He came *then*, when there was most need of him; the devil's kingdom at the highest; his oracles in greatest credit; the world overwhelmed by the *Roman* power; and the true religion near quite depraved among the *Jews*. It argues a *dexterous* understanding, to take an enemy in his ruff,

^p *John* 17. 2. ^q *Jer.* 50. 34. ^r *1 Cor.* 15. 25. ^s *Isa.* 50. 4. ^t *Mat.* 1. 21. ^u *John* 17. 12, 22. *Ch.* 6. 39. ^x *Isa.* 40. 10.

rust, at his highest pitch of strength and confidence, and throw him on his back; to succour a distressed friend or ally, when brought under foot, and set him on his high places: This the scripture calls *a strengthening of the spoiled against the strong* ^v: And thus doth our Lord Jesus Christ, who is (partly) therefore said to be of *quick understanding* ^z: In all his undertakings he deals prudently ^a: And to this it is that Hannah ascribed success; *The Lord is a God of [knowledge,] and by him actions are weighed* ^b. 3. He knows *who* they are for whom he is to do it. The fruits of his death are not as things to be given in common; they fall not *indifferently* upon men, as rain upon all sorts of ground: He knows whom he came to redeem; not their *number* only, but their *persons*; they were all *written in his book*: And so well is he vers'd in it, that he *calleth them all by their [names]* ^c: He does not omit any, nor call one for another: He knows *whom* the Father hath *chosen* and given to him ^d: He can neither forget them, nor mistake them: They are written in his *breast*, and on the *palms of his hands* ^e.

4. To a great undertaking is required *courage* or *greatness of spirit*, to confront opposition, and cut thro' difficulties: And, if *this* be wanting, all other endowments will signify little as to success. And how was our Lord and Redeemer qualified as to *this*! When he was entering into his passion, (against which he prayed, *if it were possible that cup might pass from him*) he then needed courage in the abstract, and we find that he had it *answerably*. In the 50th of *Isaiah* the prophet brings him in as putting on his armour of proof; *Therefore have I set my face as a flint, and I know that I shall not be confounded* ^f. In the greatness of this his strength did he travel through all those contradictions of *sins*, temptations, reproaches, *blasphemies*, &c. And, when his hour was come, he did not recoil, nor hide himself from them; no, nor stay till they came where he was, but goes to *meet* them ^g. And, tho' he might have had more than twelve legions of angels for asking, he waves their assistance, and in his own single person undertakes both this world and the powers of darkness, yea and the wrath of his Father

L 3

too,

^v Amos 5. 9. ^z Isa. 11. 3. ^a Ch. 52. 13. ^b 1 Sam 2. 3. ^c John 10. 3. ^d Ch. 17. 2, 6. ^e Isa. 49. 16. ^f Isa. 50. 7. ^g John 18. 4.

too, which was much more grievous, and of far greater terror than all the rest; and in all this he was *alone*, there was none with him: And that an angel appeared to him from heaven strengthening him ^h, it was rather a *token* and *part* of his *deep humiliation* (that the mighty God should seem to *want*, and so admit, the proffered service of his creature) than a *lessening* of his sufferings. Now all this was for the *procurement* of redemption; and can he then be wanting to the *effectual application* of it? He cannot shrink at the sight of straggling parties, that hath won the pitched battle, and remains absolute master of the field. For this also, we have a sure word of prophecy, *He shall not fail nor be discouraged, [until] he have set judgment in the earth* ⁱ.

5. *Faithfulness*: This also is a grand and necessary qualification for an high undertaking; and for this our Redeemer is also signally eminent. To do the Father's will, was *that* he came about from heaven: And this was his will, *that of all he had given him he should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day* ^k, that is, that he should give them eternal life ^l: And we find him professing, *that he had done it accordingly* ^m, and *that he will do it* ⁿ, according to his promise so often repeated in the 39, 40, 44, 45 verses of the 6th of *John*. And he keeps them, in *faithfulness* to his trust, *viz. that the scripture might be fulfilled* ^o. Judas was let go, to fall by his own transgression; whom (doubtless) he could and would have kept, as he did the rest, had he been, as they were, committed to his charge; for he gives to every one according as he received for them, as is seen by comparing *Psal.* lxxviii. 18, with *Eph.* iv. 8. In the one place it is said, *he [received] gifts for men*; and in the other, (which is a quotation of the former) *he (gave) gifts to men*: Those, therefore, for whom he received eternal life, cannot fail of it, unless he should fail of his trust; which indeed he cannot do, for *he is faithful in all his house*, and that as a *Son*; and joint interest (you know) is a natural and prevalent obligation to faithfulness. If any should offer to dispossess him, he would answer as *Naboth* did *Abab*, *God forbid that I should part with the inheritance of*

^h Luke 22. 43. ⁱ Isa. 42. 4. ^k John 6. 38, 39. ^l Ch. 17. 2. ^m Ver. 12. ⁿ Ver. 26. ^o John 17. 12. ^p Heb. 3. 5, 6.

of my Father ⁹. And his faithfulness further appears, in that he makes it a main part of his business now in heaven, to have this work perfected; *he ever liveth to make intercession* for them ^r. There is great weight put upon this, in *Rom. viii. 34. Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died; yea rather, that is risen again—who also [maketh intercession] for us*: And the sum of his prayer is, that those given to him might be kept from evil; that they might be one in the Father and himself; and that they may be *where he is, to behold his glory* ^r. Now then, if the salvation of those he died for was the end of his death, and the price that he paid well worthy the purchase; if it be the Father's will that they should be saved; if also this salvation be the thing for which he prays, and whatsoever he asketh of God *he will give it*, (*John xi. 22.*) it needs must follow, that the intent of his death cannot be frustrate.

Yet does not this truth go unopposed; not for any fault of its own, but that it will not give place to another, which unduly affects the preheminance. Denied in terms it is not; none will say directly, that Christ's intent in dying may be frustrated: But that intent of his is so narrow'd by some, and clog'd with conditions, as would bring it to nothing. The rise whereof, or its use, I understand not; but suppose that necessity drove to it (for want of a better) to shore up the general point. I thought at first of no objection here; but, having since found this in the way, I would put it in the sacred balance, and try its weight. The sum alledged is this;

Object. *That the intent of Christ's death was only to bring men into a salvable state; with such means and helps as will bring them to salvation, if they will use them: And that any are not saved, is from their unbelief.*

Ans. 1. That unbelief is the condemning sin, needs no proof; but yet mens not believing in Christ is not the only or first procuring cause of their condemnation, but their apostasy and rebellion against God: Altho' the condemnation of those who believe not is greatly aggravated by rejecting the remedy; as one condemned for treason, refusing his pardon, that refusal is indeed the next and immediate cause of his execution, and perhaps shall heighten the rigour of it; but his

treasonable practice was the first procuring cause of death; which also he should have suffered for, if no such pardon had been offer'd him. There will need no accusation from Christ, to justify the condemnation of sinners: *Moses*, whose law they have broke, shall witness against the *Jews*; and the law of nature against the *Gentiles*. That faith is the *one thing necessary* on our part, in order to our being saved, is a foundation-truth, and most necessary to be known: And as true it is, that this faith adds nothing of *merit* or *virtue* to the cross of Christ. Where men are said to be justified or saved by faith, it is meant of the *object* of faith, and not of the *act*, tho' not without it. For as bread must be eaten, and taken in, before it can nourish; so must the righteousness of Christ be apprehended by faith, before we can be justified by it. But as the *action* of eating or chewing is not the *matter* or *substance* of our nourishment, but the bread we eat; so neither is our *act* of believing, but the *righteousness of Christ* alone apprehended by faith, the *matter* of our justification. But,

2. Why should redemption depend on a foreign power to bring about its end? why should so great a thing be left in the hands of an human arbitrement, to succeed or be defeated at the pleasure of a perverse will? That Christ *should die* ought rather to have been conditional, and not the *salvation* of those he should die for; and so, in prudence, should have been deferr'd 'till the *end* of the world, to see if any *fruit* would come of it; and if *not*, then *not to die* at all: For why should he die in vain? But that Christ *should die*, and at *that* very time when he did, was fore-determin'd of God, and confirm'd with an oath; whereby it was made *necessary*, and impossible to be revers'd. It could not, then, stand with the wisdom or truth of God, that the *end* of his death should possibly miscarry, or be frustrable; which it must be obnoxious to, if dependent on the *human* will; a thing so fickle and uncertain, that it knows not this moment what it will do, or pitch upon the *next*; besides the natural antipathy to the thing itself: But evident it is, that the *end* has the same insurance as the *means*, viz. *decree*, *promises* and *oath*. And now, shall so great a solemnity, and expectation upon it, evaporate into contingency? Christ was promised a *seed* to
serve

serve him, and such a sight of the travail of his soul as should satisfy him: That he should divide the spoil with the strong ^a: That the heathen should be his inheritance ^b: That kings should see and arise; princes also should worship ^c, and his enemies become his footstool ^d, &c. and this as a reward of his sufferings; and he sits in heaven, expecting 'till it be done ^e. And now, shall *lapsed* creatures usurp a negative vote to their Sovereign's will? shall it be at *their* pleasure, whether he who is Heir of all things shall possess his patrimony? Shall sinful dust so arrogate to itself, as to say, My Creator's will shall be done, so mine may be the standard of it? Shall those statutes of heaven, in favour of the *conditional doctrine*, run thus? The strong man armed, shall be spoil'd and cast out, if he will: The heathen, whose god is the devil, shall renounce him, and turn tenants to Christ, if he will consent to it, and they also think it their interest: Kings and princes shall arise and worship him, if their own grandeur will bear it; and enemies become his footstool, in case they be free to submit to it, &c. Who would not tremble to hear such indignities put upon Christ?

3. There was no reason why Christ, the Son of God, should die for so small a purchase, as to make men but *conditionally* salvable; that the greatest thing in the world should be hung on so weak a pin as would not bear the weight of an apple. I call it a *small* purchase, because they had *more* than this in *Adam*; they had then a *pure* freedom of will, without bias to evil. But *now*, say you, they are helped by motives and arguments from the danger they are in, and the benefits attainable by changing their course. But what are these as the case stands? What motives will move, while insensible of that danger, and ignorant of the benefits proposed? Such motives also they had *before*, and more amply than *now*; inasmuch as the *present* sense of an happy condition was more attractive and prevalent to *keep* it, than the mere proposal of a *distant* and *unknown* privilege can be to *attain* it; (for of things unknown men are not desirous) especially when things more suitable to present sense are theirs in possession: And to leave *these*, for those they understood not, is contrary to their reason: They see neither danger nor privilege, and therefore de-

spise

^a *Isa.* 53. 10, 11. ^b *Psal.* 2. 8. ^c *Psal.* 49. 7. ^d *Psal.* 110. 1. ^e *Heb.* 10. 13.

spise both. Or, if they have skin-deep convictions at times, the present content they dream to have in their lusts carries them headlong, as with wind and tide.

4. If rational motives and argumentations were of that weight and efficacy for the working of faith, as some have pretended; then those of the largest endowments of nature should be the most capable subjects, and most likely to be wrought upon. But do any of the *Pharisees* believe on him? Do not the princes of worldly wisdom account the preaching of the cross foolishness? Do we not see men of renown for human sapience, highly pretending to moral sanctity, and highest flown in their free-will principles, nevertheless to despise the ways of holiness; yea, despoiling Christ himself of his Deity, and the Christian religion of its chiefest glory? Nothing more plain to common observance! Surely then it could not be reasonable that this glorious redemption should ly at the mercy of a perverse will; since *that* is the thing which hath letted, and will let, until it be taken out of the way. Christ was but once delivered to the wills of men, and then they crucified him^e; and ever since they crucify his cross. *Had they known him, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory*^f. But so it is, *in the wisdom of God, that the world by wisdom know not God*^g. The wisdom of men never was the author of faith, either to themselves or others^h: The preaching of the cross is to the *Jewish* legalist a *stumbling-block*ⁱ, and *foolishness* to the rational philosopher, and that at *Athens*^k.

5. *Conditionality* will not consort with the scope of Christ's redemption, nor yet with the nature of the bondage it refers unto: It is summarily termed, the *bondage of corruption*: In parcels, it bears the names of blindness, darkness, death, hardness, unbelief, enmity, &c. And that deliverance from these, was the very scope and end of redemption, might be made out particularly; I shall instance only two or three generals: *For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil*^l. *Our old man was crucified with Christ, that the body of sin might be destroyed*^m. *God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh*ⁿ. Which texts, lest they might seem

^e Luke 23. 24. ^f 1 Cor. 2. 8. ^g Chap. 1. 21. ^h Chap. 2. 5. ⁱ Chap. 1. 23. ^k Acts 17. 18, ^l 1 John 3. 8, ^m Rom. 6. 6, ⁿ Chap. 8. 3.

seem defective for want of universality, that also is supplied in Tit. ii. 14. *Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from [all] iniquity.* Eph. v. 25, 26, 27. *Christ gave himself for the church, that he might sanctify and cleanse it, and present it to himself a glorious church [not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing.]* But was it not a thing in design only, and liable to frustration? No, it was determined and fixt: For he [shall] redeem Israel from all his iniquities °: And the blood of Jesus Christ his Son [cleanseth] us from all sin †: 'Tis spoken in the present tense, as a thing still and always in doing. And this [all] here must be taken universally; because, if not saved from *all*, it would be, in the end, as if saved from *none*; One mite left on the score, binds over to wrath; especially *unbelief* ‡. Why then should *that* of all the rest be exempted or disputed? Is it, that we think faith so easy a matter, that we need not trouble our Master about it? Few believers have found it so: Or, do we think ourselves better able to deal with our own hearts, or truer to our interest, than he? 'Tis our heart's deceitfulness that makes us think so: Or, shall we impose upon Christ something of ours, to eik out his merits, or to make them effectual? He abhors it; for, *if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing* †: Or, do we aspire to sit on his right hand in the glory of redemption? I know not what it is; but am sure, that something not right lies in the bottom, tho' unseen. For, since the honour of redemption lies in saving from sin, he that saves from unbelief, which is the capital, shares deepest in that honour: Unbelief is the *lock* of our chain and bondage; and, till *that* be unshut, there's no getting loose. Christ's redemption is not like those laws of men, which hold the small, but let the great ones break through: No, redemption aims at the head; and it was so designed from the first †. But how are men saved from unbelief? Is it their own act, or another's? If their own, then 'tis of works; which will not consent with grace †: If another's, that other does it either absolutely, or conditionally: If absolutely, the objection ceases; if conditionally, what was the condition of it? It could be nothing in us *before* we believed; for, *whatsoever is not of faith, is sin*.

° Psal. 130. 8. † 1 John 1. 7. ‡ John 3. 18. † Gal. 5. 2. † Gen. 3. 15. † Rom. 4. 4. & Chap. 11. 6.

fin ^a. It must then be from another cause, and *without* condition, and that can be *only redemption itself*, for nothing else can pretend to it; and the pretensions of *that* are good, for *Christ* is expressly said to be the *author of our faith* ^x: And the evangelist *John* affirms *all* grace to be out of *his* fulness ^y. *Paul* also shews, that *Christ* apprehends us, not because we do, but *that we might apprehend him* ^z. And further, the *Holy Ghost* (who is the immediate operator of all grace) is *shed upon us through Jesus Christ our Saviour* ^a. That faith, which is not from *Christ* entirely as its *author* and *root*, will never lead the soul to *Christ* as its *object* and *centre*. But methinks the doctrine of *conditional* redemption should be forever silenced by that one declaration of our Saviour himself, *I am found of them that sought me not* ^b.

Now, shall this truth be yielded, viz. that *Christ's* redemption made an *end* of *sin*? Or shall we say, that our old man was crucified, *all but his vital parts*? that all works of the devil are destroyed, *except his master-piece*? that *Israel* is redeemed from *all* his iniquities, save only the worst and most condemning? Does the scripture speak fallaciously? or does vain man deal deceitfully in his covenant? I would ask (with great seriousness, for the matter requites it) What good shall redemption do us, if it save only from *some* sins, and not from *all*? or if from *all* excepting *unbelief*? This would too much resemble a pardon for petty trespasses (petty in comparison) while the guilt of our treason lies still upon us? To purchase salvation upon terms of believing, without purchasing faith also, is too like an undertaking to cure a man of his *pleurisy*; upon condition he will be *sober*: What will they do, who content themselves with such a redemption as this?

Lastly, Consider redemption in its type: The peoples sins, under the law, had not been expiated by the sacrifice, without sprinkling the blood; and it was not *themselves* that sprinkled it, but the *priest*: And can we then think, that *Christ* shed his blood for those on whom he will not sprinkle it? that he will not give a little faith to those he died for, when as, without *that*, all that he doth besides will not profit them? Hath he wrought so great a deliverance for his servants, and

^a Rom. 14. 23. ^x Heb. 12. 2. ^y John 1. 16. ^z Phil. 3. 12. ^a Tit. 3. 6. ^b Isa. 65. 1.

and now shall they die for thirst? 'Tis impossible that his love should be so cooled (since his going to heaven) as to be indifferent touching the travail of his soul: Shall he perish for whom *Christ* died, for want of a good word? especially when *that* word can be spoken effectually by no-body else. If any say, He would, but they will not; I answer, This *will-not* is their unbelief, and the *great* thing they are to be saved from; he that is saved from that, is saved every whit; and this *Christ* is to do, by making them willing: A will to believe, is *believing*; and in the day of his power they find it. And for any to say, That a will to believe is not purchased by *Christ*, and effectually applied by him, but depends on something to be done by men, is a great derogation to the merit of his sufferings: It is, in effect, to steal a jewel from our Sovereign's crown, and to wreath it on a fool's cap.

Inferences.

Infer. I. The *impossibility* of frustrating the end of *Christ's* death, is a manifest proof and argument of *peculiar* redemption: For if the salvation of those he died for was the *end* of his dying, and the intent of his death cannot be frustrate, then he had not in his eye and design the salvation of those that are not saved.

Infer. II. Take heed *what* ye hear, and *how*. Beware of those doctrines which tend to enervate the covenant of grace, reducing it to a covenant of works, or somewhat more difficult: A principal one is that which makes redemption *conditional*, and *dependent* upon something to be done by men, which *Christ* is not the doer of. Of its evil consequents I shall mention two;

1. It bereaves us of that solid ground of comfort (for the joy of the Lord is our strength) which the *absoluteness* of redemption intends and offers to us, exposing our naked skin to every blast of temptation. Who can promise the standing of that fabrick which stands on a doubtful foundation? To build hay and stubble on the rock, has not half that danger in it, as gold and silver on the sand: The one shall be saved, tho' with difficulty; the other loses both his work and himself. For let redemption be never so firm and solid in itself, if yet
its

its standing and efficacy depend upon that which is fleeting and unfixed, the ground of our confidence is gone: 'Tis like those pumps that have water enough within, but yield you none, unless you first put in some of your own, which yet ye have not; (like *Jacob's* well, but nothing to draw with.) But for men to annex conditions, is to offer a bar to their own pardon; and, instead of an amendment, to add a destructive proviso to the bill of free grace: That paradox of the preacher seems pertinent here; *Be not righteous over much, neither make thyself over wise: Why shouldst thou destroy thyself?* Eccl. vii. 16.

2. To make redemption dependent on our faith, attributes to created grace an honour that is due only to *Christ*, which redeemed ones should be very tender of. Was he *alone* in the *obtainment* of redemption, and shall we think he needs a *co-adjutor* in its *application*? Shall we impute to that glorious achievement a need of our help to make it successful? No, whatever graces ye have, you must thank *redemption* for them, and not *them* for your being redeemed. The whole constellation shines by a borrowed light; they have none of their own, but what the Sun of righteousness communicates to them. Hast thou faith? have it to thyself, and know it for thy good; take it as an *effect* and *evidence*, but not as the *cause*, of your interest in redemption. Each grace is of use in its place, and beautiful; as each star hath an orb of its own; and to move out of that, is to break the harmony of the spheres: Even gospel-graces legalized, lose their excellency. I must say to faith in this case, Friend, sit down lower; this place belongs to your Author: You are redemption's creature; from *that* you had your birth, and in *that* you live and move: Ye are welcome as a guest, yea, as a chief ruler of the feast, tho' not as the Bridegroom's compere. But true faith, and unclouded, is more ingenuous than to incur such a rebuke.

Infer. III. If all merit and grace be virtually in redemption, and thence dispensed by the hand of our Redeemer himself; this yields both a friendly reproof and direction together: Reproof to expectancy anywhere else; and direction to poor thirsting souls, *where* and *how* to be satisfied. Undone you are in yourselves (that ye find;) and would gladly put this
ruin

tain under the hand of Christ ^d, as one that is able to repair it; thus far ye are right: But something you seek in yourself, that may strengthen your hope, and induce his favour to you. Away with such pretences, and flee to your Redeemer as ye are; for *from him alone is that fruit to be found* ^e. Be as sensible of your deformity and unworthiness as ye can, and walk humbly under the sense of it; but let it not slacken your pace, nor abate your hope. If any thing may render you worthy (that is, a suitable object of mercy) it is your coming boldly to the throne of grace with all your unworthiness about you. 'Tis a disgustful modesty to be shy in accepting from those above us: It looks as if we would not be thought to need their kindness; or else, as if we thought they needed our requital; or, at least, as if we were unwilling to be obliged to them: Much more unbecoming it is, to be backward in accepting the offers of grace from so great a person as our Lord and Redeemer. O the Unnaturalness of our natural hearts, even to our own good! We are pitiful objects of charity: All fulness is in Christ, and may be had for going for; and yet, as if he wanted clients, he is fain to make proclamation, *Ho! every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters; and he that hath no money —* ^f; and, *If any man thirst, let him come to me and drink —* ^g. Great things are proffered; and what's the price? Nothing; it is but *come and take*: And yet this *nothing* will be found to be *something*; yea, a thing both of the *greatest* moment and difficulty. It is one of the *hardest* matters under the sun to become *nothing*, (nothing in ourselves) and to flee directly to *Christ*, that we may be *something*: But go to him even for *this*. Had the prodigal deferred his return till he had better clothes on his back, and a visage more like the son of such a Father, rags must still have been his clothing, and husks his entertainment. Do but consider how it is; *Jesus Christ* calls you, because ye are *blind*, to come to him for eye-salve; and you'll not go till ye can see better: You are *naked*, and he calls you to come and receive change of raiment; and you'll not go till better arrayed: He offers you gold, for he knows your poverty; and you'll not take it, till you have something of your own to give for it, &c. Look over it again, and see if this be handsom dealing either with

^d *Isa.* 3. 6. ^e *Hos.* 14. 8. ^f *Isa.* 55. 1. ^g *John* 7. 37.

with yourself or him. 'Tis free grace in redemption that is to be glorified; but something of your own would *lessen* your need of Christ, and *lower* your esteem of his grace; nay, it would be a means to keep you *from* him, as *farms* and *oxen* did those full guests from the wedding-supper. Consider further, no man was ever accepted of Christ for what he brought to him: They are best welcome that bring *nothing*, and yet expect *all* things. What did you give to Christ, or what did you *for* him, or ever can, that might move him to *die* for you; yea, to be made *sin* and a *curse* for you? Did he go into hell to fetch you thence, and pawn his soul (his precious soul) for your ransom; and can you think that he'll stick at petty matters? Deservedly may you and I be upbraided with, [*O fools, and slow of heart to believe!*] He knows we have *nothing*, and would have us know that he knows it; and withal, that he hath *all* things for us: And, for our invincible encouragement, that all things are *ours* in a way of *right*; his purchase hath made them so: We are his *invited* guests, and shall not need to bring our seat or provision with us. I shall add but one consideration more, *viz.* Whether your keeping off from Christ, till fit for his presence (as ye term it) be the way to better your state? Search, and see, if something like pride be not at bottom: Something you would have, ere you come, that might render you acceptable; and that you can have *only* from him; and you cannot have it, but by coming *without* it. Redemption hath in it infinite treasures of what we want; and our Redeemer is infinitely more pleased to give them forth, than we to receive them. Think therefore, you are always hearing that joyful sound, *Come unto me, all ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest*^h; and, *Him that cometh unto me, I will [in no wise] cast out*ⁱ.

Infer. IV. This gives to believers the highest encouragement in their spiritual conflict. *For if our old man was crucified with Christ, [that the body of sin might be destroyed,] and the intent of his death cannot be frustrate, then sin [shall not] have dominion over you*^k; than which there's nothing more fortifies our faith in fighting against *sin*, nothing more comforts a soul concerning *the work and toil of his hands*^l.

For

^h *Mat.* 11. 28. ⁱ *John* 6, 37. ^k *Rom.* 6. 6, 12, 22. ^l *Gen.* 5. 29.

For, to take away *sin*, being the end of redemption; to make the work sure, *Christ* himself was made *sin*, imputatively, not inherently: All the *sins*, of those he died for, met on him; he and they were so incorporated, as not to be separated but by death; *sin* could not die unless *Christ* died; *Christ* could not die without being made *sin*; nor could he die, but *sin* must die with him: *Whole Christ*, both head and members universally, were all crucified together, and they all rose together; all, excepting *sin*, and that he left in his grave; and let us remember, it is [there.] So that now we have nothing to do, in comparison, but to take the prey; for the enemy is beaten to our hands. *Eleazer* slew, and the people return'd after him only to spoil ^m; and so it is here: And herein is that saying verified, *One soweth, and another reapeth* ⁿ. Our business now, is to display our General's trophies; to tell of his victories; and prepare ourselves for his triumph, that we may be suitable attendants on him at that glorious and long'd-for day.

There are straggling parties, indeed, who watch for our halting; and seldom, else, can they have advantage against us: But their heart is broke; and, if follow'd in our Captain's victorious name, they'll still be recoiling; nothing daunts them more than to see you stand to it. Your adversary would make you a bridge of gold, or any thing, even to the half of his kingdom, so you would sound a retreat, or speak no more in that name. Gird up therefore the loins of your mind; let an holy magnanimity possess you, as knowing your conflict shall end in your being crown'd. You run not for an uncertainty, therefore fight not as they that beat the air: For it is nevertheless true, that your enemy is stubborn, and your constant pursuit will make him desperate; since he may not have quarter, he'll do all he can not die alone; he will stand on his stumps when his legs are off, or ly on his back, and fight (for his malice is implacable :) He will never give over, till quite out of breath; which yet he will not be quite without, while we have any; we expire together. But here lies the odds, that we dying in the conflict, shall rise again with marks of honour, and our laurel hold green to eternity; yea, we shall sit with our glorious Captain in his triumph.

M

triumphal chariot °: But our enemy lies in eternal silence, and his name forgot, or remembred only to greaten our exultation and glory. Only, as before, be sure you stand to it; set your face as a flint, as your Lord and Master did; and know, that as he was not confounded, so neither shall you. All that he had, you have on your side, and the merit of his improvement added to it: What power the Father gave to him, he delegates to you; even a *power over all the power of the enemy*: As it were an *antidote* or *superfedeas*, to invalidate *all* that comes against you. Wherefore then should you doubt? tho' they come about you like bees, *in the name of the Lord you shall destroy them* ^p. Remember the advantages you have; besides the bruising of your enemy's head, and that incurably, your own Head is in heaven, and he is there as on a mount, to behold both yours and your enemy's posture, and to send in relief, which *he never fails to do at a dead lift* ^q: And *he makes intercession for you* ^r: While you are fighting, his hands are up, and never weary; and therefore you may be confident of success. It was by vertue of his prayer that *Peter's* faith did not fail, when there was but an hair's-breadth between him and death: The devil winnow'd, but Christ stood by, and *beld the wind in his fist* ^s. But,

Lastly, Suppose you be foil'd; things go not with you as they were wont, or as you expected; and that casts you back in your faith; makes you cry out, *If it be so, why am I thus* ^t? Here the Lord says to you, (as once to his servant *Joshua*) *Get thee up; wherefore liest thou [thus] (discouraged) upon thy face* ^u? There's something to be done: Find out the troubler of thy peace, and give it no quater; and, if it be too hard for thee, (as certainly it will) call in the mercy promised in *Psal. xii. For the oppression of the poor, for the sighing of the needy, now will I arise (saith the Lord) and set him in safety from him that puffeth at him* ^x: And then go on with your work. Let nothing stop you of your boasting in this region, this *upper* region, of the grace that is in Christ Jesus: In *that* let your strength be renew'd, the journey

° *Rev.* 3. 21. ^p *Psal.* 118. 12. ^q *Isa.* 41. 17. *Ch.* 25. 4. ^r *Heb.* 7. 25.
^s *Prov.* 30. 4. *Jer.* 31. 11. ^t *Gen.* 25. 22. ^u *Josh.* 7. 10. ^x *Psal.* 12. 5.

ourney else will be too great for you^y; and in that strength
our aloft. Take the wings of that eagle, and mount towards
heaven, above all the smoke and dust, both of self-ability
and self-weakness. Make your boast of God all the day
long: In the Lord have I righteousness and strength: Of
myself I can do nothing; but thro' Christ (the strength I have
from his redemption) nothing shall be too hard for me. O
death, where is thy sting? O hell, where is thy victory?
The sting of death is sin, and the strength of sin is the law:
But thanks be unto God, which giveth us the victory, through
our Lord Jesus Christ^z! Amen.



Of EFFECTUAL CALLING.

THE doctrine of *calling* (which I term *effectual*, to distinguish it from that which is *outward* only, and prevails not) respects the *means whereby*, and the *manner how*, God's elect are actually prepared for that salvation he hath chosen them to: It is God's revealing his Son in them; and he doth it by the holy Ghost, whose office it is to *sanctify* whom the Father hath *elect*ed, and Christ *redeem*ed^a. These three acts of grace are peculiar to the three Persons of the sacred Trinity respectively, and are all predicated of the same subjects; and that as a party select, and distinguished from others: They are *chosen out of the world*^b; *redeem*ed from among men^c; and *taken from among the Gentiles*^d.

Next to the glory of his grace, and the honour of his Son, the Lord hath placed the blessedness of his chosen, as the principal *scope* and *end* of all he hath done in the world, or will do. It could not therefore stand with his holy wisdom, to leave those he was pleased to chuse unto salvation to the conduct of their own understanding and will, with such means and helps as they have in common with other men, and thereon to suspend the whole of his great design; for by such a course it would not only be *liable* to frustration, but

M 2

be

^y 1 Kings 19. 7, 8. ^z 1 Cor. 15. 55, 56, 57. ^a 1 Pet. 1. 2. *Yahweh*, ver. 1.
^b John 15. 19. ^c Rev. 14. 4. ^d Acts 15. 14.

be certainly defeated. For prevention whereof, and that the purpose of his grace might stand, he hath made it of the substance of predestination, to prepare and apply the means, as well as to appoint the end; which in sacred language is termed a giving of all things pertaining to life and godliness, 2 Pet. i. 3.

The sum of what I intend on the present subject is comprised in the following proposition, viz.

Prop. That whatever things are requisite to salvation, are given of God freely to all the elect, and wrought in them effectually by the divine power, in order to that salvation to which he hath appointed them.

By [*salvation*] here, I understand the saints perfect settlement in blessedness and glory; and by [*things requisite thereto*] all those gifts, graces and operations, that are any way necessary to their actual obtainment of that state. The [*divine power*] is that ability of working which God hath reserved to himself, and is not moved or governed by the creature's act, but by the good pleasure of his own will.

That divers things are requisite to salvation, needs no proof: My business therefore is to shew,

- I. *What these requisites to salvation are.*
- II. *What root it is they proceed from.*
- III. *Whom they do belong unto, and by what right.*
- IV. *The way and manner of God's dispensing them.*

I. *What these requisites to salvation are.*

They are of three sorts; some to be done for us; some upon us, or in us; and others by us; yet so, as not without the special aid and assistance of the first Agent, that good Spirit who began the work, and worketh all in all. The great thing to be done for us (next after the election) is redemption from sin: This was a work of infinite moment, and as far above the undertaking of creatures; for, 1. The justice of God, that must be satisfied, by bearing the curse due to transgressors; By this we are saved from wrath; and, without

out *this*, divine justice will not open the house of his prisoners. 2. All righteousness must be fulfilled by an absolute perfect subjection to the law: By *this*, we are interested in eternal life; and, without *this*, there is no entering into rest. 3. The devil, who had the power of death, must be destroyed, and his works of darkness (by which he leads captive at his will) dissolved; that life and immortality might be brought to light, and the prey delivered. None of which works could ever have been effected, but by one of the same nature with the parties peccant or aggressing, and yet equal in power and dignity with the Majesty offended; for which cause and end, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, and made under the law, &c. ^e: That what the law could not do because of its weakness thro' the flesh, the Son of God, in the likeness of sinful flesh, might perform; and so condemn Sin in that flesh which gave it entrance ^f. This was the proper subject of the former, head, *viz.* Redemption: The end of which (partly) was, to bring in the next sort of things requisite to salvation, that is, such as are to be done *upon* and *in* the *elect*; namely, their reconcilment to God, and receiving the adoption of sons. This is the actual performance of what was *intentionally* in election, and *virtually* in the death of Christ, as the necessary way and means to their ultimate end. The sum of these requisites consists in *faith* and *sanctification* ^g; the one imports our *right*, the other our *capacity*; *faith* entitles, and holiness *meets*; Both which, tho' express'd as *two*, go always together as if but *one*, and are as inseparable as light from the sun; and, without *these*, our little world would still be in darkness, notwithstanding all the light that shines about us, or within us; neither knowing our danger, nor how to escape it.

1. *Faith*. This, in general, is that *spiritual light* in which we see ourselves by nature *children of wrath*, and wholly unable to change our state; and withal do apprehend God *justifying freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ* ^h; and, to that end, do roll ourselves upon him, and give up ourselves to his laws and government. It is of the essence of *faith*, to empty the soul of *self-ability*. And, 1. Of its own *understanding*: It is a beam of divine

M 3

light

^e Gal. 4. 4. 5. ^f Rom. 8. 3. ^g 2 Thess. 2. 13. ^h Rom. 3. 24.

light, which evidenceth all a man's natural knowledge to be ignorance and darkness, as to spiritual things. The apostle speaks of it, as of a faculty *newly given* ⁱ; and the nature of its new objects requires it, for *the natural man* [*cannot*] *discern the things of God* ^k: They that have the best eyes now, were sometimes darkness. 2. Faith empties the soul of its own *righteousness*; (1.) By discovering the *uncleanness* of it ^l. (2.) By shewing the necessity of a *better* ^m. (3.) In *whom* this better righteousness is to be found ⁿ. (4.) That it may be *attain'd* and had ^o. (5.) That being attained, the soul is *safe*, and may triumph over all ^p. (6.) That this better righteousness and its own cannot stand together ^q. And then, 3. The next work of faith is to empty the soul of its own *strength*; that is, of all confidence in himself, as to the *obtainment* of that better righteousness. He makes it, indeed, his business to be shut of his own, and most gladly would be invested with the righteousness of God; but finds it a matter of transcendent difficulty. Now he's convinc'd it is no easy matter to be saved; since to believe, and to keep the whole law, are things of an equal facility; *i. e.* they are both alike impossible to him: But nothing, he knows, is too hard for God, and therefore *takes hold of his strength* ^r, to work this faith in him; and so, by a faith *unseen*, believes to a faith that is *visible* ^s. 'Tis faith that is at work all this while, tho' the soul knows it not till afterwards.

2. The other grand requisite to salvation is *sanctification*, or personal inherent holiness. *Justification* is by a righteousness *imputed*, *sanctification* *infused*: The former is first in order of nature; they commence together in point of time, even as light in the air at the sun's approach, or as the reversing an outlawry instantly restates the party in his former privileges, or as the cancelling a bill of attainder restores the blood. *Sanctification* is the divine nature communicated, by which the old man is expell'd, with his deeds, or rather subdu'd and brought under; for they are not totally null'd in this life; only proud flesh is put down from its seat (and that's a great matter;) its dominion is taken away, and the seed of God enthron'd in its stead: And so we are said to be *trans-*
lated

ⁱ 1 John 5. 20. ^k 1 Cor. 2. 14. ^l Isa. 64. 6. ^m Rom 3. 20. ⁿ Ch. 10. 4. ^o Ch. 3. 21. ^p Ch. 8. 34 & Ch. 7. 25. ^q Gal. 5. 2. Rom. 10. 3. ^r Isa. 27. 5. ^s Rom. 1. 17.

laid out of Satan's kingdom, or government, into Christ's.^t It is sometimes called *regeneration*, or a being born again^u: The separating a man from his wild stock, and grafting him into the true^x: The forming of Christ in us^y; and the law written in the heart^z; i. e. dispositions according to God, or an heart after his own. 'Tis also term'd, *the passing away of old things, and a becoming new of all*^a: There's a change of principles, scope, and end of a man's life. Not that the old faculties are blotted out or destroy'd, but reduc'd or renew'd, according to the *image of him that created it*^b. As the body, when it is regenerated, (or raised again) shall be the same that was sown; but so chang'd, and dignify'd in its qualities, as if it were another: So, in the soul's regeneration, the same understanding, will, affections do remain; but quite otherwise dispos'd and qualify'd, according to the new objects they are to converse with. And *this* is so main a requisite to salvation, that we are not capable of heaven without it: Even the local heaven would not be a place of happiness to a soul unsanctified; no communion there without concord: And that's the reason why spiritual notions are so disgustful to carnal men; and, if they cannot endure the *shadow*, how should they bear the *substance* and *thing itself*? In this work the soul is *passive*: But being thus quickned by the Spirit of life from God, and set upon their feet, they are capacitated for *action*; and now, (say they, as Daniel, Now) *let my Lord speak, for thou hast strengthened me*, Dan. x. 19. And thenceforth their work and business is, *to walk worthy of the Lord*; to glorify that grace which hath saved them; to walk before God in the daily exercise of those graces he hath given them; and to press after perfection, i. e. a ripeness in grace, or *meetness* for that state of glory which all *these* are preparatory to; to shew forth his praises, the virtues of him that hath called them; making his law their rule, and his glory their end above all; and all in a way of dutiful gratitude: For tho' ye may and ought to have respect to your own salvation, peace and comfort; yet so, as to substitute all to the glory of the grace of God. And take this by the way, to encourage you in your duty, that the glory

M 4

of

^t Col. 1. 13. ^u John 3. 3. ^x Rom. 11. 17. ^y Gal. 4. 19. ^z Heb. 8. 10.
^a 2 Cor. 5. 17. ^b Col. 3. 10. Rom. 8. 29.

of God and his people's blessedness are so interwoven, as never to be divided : While ye keep *that* most directly in your eye and scope, your own concerns are most currently going on ; they fall in together, and keep in the same chanel.

II. *Whence these requisites to salvation do proceed.*

That men might know themselves to be *creatures*, 'twas needful to know the world had a *beginning*, by *whom*, and *how* ; and no less needful to know the *original* of the world renew'd : The not minding of which may have been the occasion of mens ascribing the *new creation* to the concurrence of *free-will atoms* ; which seems at least as irrational as the contingent coming together of the visible frame.

Our present enquiry therefore is, touching the *Author* of faith and holiness : What root they spring from ? Who, or what is the *efficient cause* of regeneration ? What power it is by which the *new creature* is formed, and brought forth ? Our assertion is, *That the new creature is God's workmanship [entirely and alone].* *This* the scripture seems evident for, and delivers it in positive terms in *James i. 17.* *Every good gift, and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights :* Which is so full an answer to the question as (one would think) admits of no reply. But being a truth unacceptable to nature, and such striving among men to entitle the *human* power and will to the fatherhood of this *new creation*, it must be argued : And our argument for it is this, *That the new creature must be wrought either by a [divine] power, or by a [natural] power, or by a concurrence of both [together.]* But,

First, *It cannot be wrought by a natural power ;* and that for such reasons as these :

Arg. I. Because it is a *creature*, and of all creatures the *noblest* and *most excellent*. All the *virtuosi* in the world are not able to *make* an atom : They may *refine* and *sublimate* things that *are*, but cannot *give being* to the *least thing* that *is not*. How then should the natural man give being to the *new creation* ? To suppose such a thing, would be a degrading to the divine nature, a setting the image of the *heavenly* below that of the *earthly* ; for he that builds is worthy of

more

more honour than the thing that is built by him, *Heb. iii. 3.*

Arg. II. Nothing can afford *that* it hath not in itself. Now, every soul in nature is darkness, and possess'd with an habitual aversion from God; but light is not brought out of darkness, nor friendship out of enmity: No man will expect grapes from thorns; the product will be according to that of which it is produced; *every seed will have its own body* ^c: *An evil tree cannot bring forth good fruit* ^d; *that which is born of the flesh is flesh* ^e, and will never be better: Therefore the new creature, being a divine thing, cannot be educ'd of natural principles.

Arg. III. The natural man is not only void of all virtue and property that tends to regeneration, but is *opposite* thereto. To be grafted into the true olive-tree, is contrary to nature ^f; *The carnal mind is enmity against God* ^g: And enmity being a principle incapable of reconciliation, it cannot be supposed it will help to destroy itself. *They will not* so much as *seek after God, nor take him into their thoughts* ^h. Satan they follow with natural motion ⁱ; but, as for the word of the Lord, they profess stoutly, they *will not hearken unto it* ^k: *They have loved strangers, and after them they will go* ^l. So desperately wicked are the hearts of men ^m; they are even made up of *fleshy lusts, which war against the soul*, and whatsoever hath respect to its happy restoration. And this enmity is maintained and animated, (1.) By the darkness that is in them; which all men in nature are filled with; or with *false lights*, which are equally pernicious and obstructive to this work: By reason whereof, the most glorious objects, tho' just before them, are hid from their eyes: They do not, nor they cannot, *discern the things which are of God* ⁿ: They have false conceptions of every thing; *call good evil, and evil good; put light for darkness, and darkness for light*; and the most excellent things are commonly furthest off their approbation. 'Tis a known experiment, that the more spiritual any truth is, the more will carnal reason object against it: *How can these things be* ^o? and, *How can this man give us of his flesh to eat* ^p? By all the understanding that

^c 1. Cor. 15. 38. ^d Matth. 7. 18. ^e John 3. 6. ^f Rom. 11. 24.
^g Rom. 8. 7. ^h Psal. 10. 4. ⁱ John 8. 44. ^k Jer. 44. 6. ^l Chap. 2. 25.
^m Chap. 17. 9. ⁿ 1 Cor. 2. 14. ^o John 3. 9. ^p Chap. 6. 52.

that men have before conversion, they are but more strongly prejudiced against the truth ^q. (2.) This comity is further confirm'd and fix'd by the *naturality* of it. If it were an adventitious quality, it might possibly be separated; but now it *cannot* by any human power. And that it is *natural*, appears, in that the *universality* of mankind is infected with it: It is not *here* and *there* one, but *all* and *every* one, *Jews* and *Gentiles*, are *all* under sin; *none* that *understandeth*, *none* that *seeketh* after God, *none* that *doth* good, *no* not one ^r: *All* flesh had corrupted his way ^t: *Every* imagination of their heart is only evil, and that continually ^u: *Every* man is brutish, and altogether filthy ^v: And this is their root, conceived in sin ^x; go astray from the womb ^y, &c. It also grows up with them; and the longer it lives, the worse it is, and the more impregnable ^z: It is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed [can be] ^a. And tho', at times, they look another way, (like bullets of stone or lead, which, acted by a foreign power, are mounted into the air) their upward motion quickly ceaseth, because it was not *natural*; they come again to their centre of their own accord, and there they live and die, as was verified in *Saul*, *Ahab*, *Agrippa*, and others.

Arg. IV. The new creature cannot be the product of *natural* power, because every thing is receiv'd and improv'd according to the *nature* of that which receives it. Plants, and other creatures, turn all their nourishment into their own species and property. A vine and a thistle both planted in one soil, have the same sun, dew, air, and other influences, common to both; yet each one converts the whole of that it receives into its own substance and kind. You may plant and prune, and dig and dung an evil tree, bestow what cost and pains you will upon it, it does all but enable the more pregnant production of evil fruit: Just so doth the *natural* man, even turn the grace of God into lasciviousness ^b. As to the pure all things are pure, so to the impure all things are defiled ^c. David by his afflictions learned to keep God's law ^d; but Ahaz trespassed yet more ^e. Good *Josiah's* heart melts

^q *Acts* 17. 18. & *1 Cor.* 1. 19,--23. ^r *Rom.* 3. 9,--18. ^t *Gen.* 6. 12. ^u *Chap.* 8. 21. ^v *Jer.* 10. 14. ^x *Psalms* 51. 5. ^y *Psalms* 58. 3. ^z *Jer.* 17. 23. ^a *Rom.* 8. 7. ^b *Jude*, ver. 4. ^c *Tit.* 1. 15. ^d *Psalms* 119. 67. ^e *2 Chron.* 28. 22.

melt at reading the law, he bumbles himself, and falls to reforming ^f; but wicked Jehojakim, he cuts the roll in pieces, and burns it ^g. Thus sin, (i. e. corrupt nature) works death by that which is good ^h.

Secondly, That the new creature is not wrought by the concurrence of divine and natural power [together,] the following arguments shew.

Arg. I. The holy Ghost needs no assistance in his work: Who and where is he that stood up for his help, when he moved on the waters, and brought forth this world into form ⁱ? when he weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance ^k? He that made all things of nothing, cannot be suppos'd to need the aid of any. As man had nothing to do in the conception of Christ's human nature, but the power of the most High was alone in that work; so also it is in forming Christ within us. Why should he call in the aid of another, unless deficient of himself? and he must be greatly put to it, that takes in the help of an enemy.

Arg. II. If the holy Ghost had need of help, the flesh affords not the least, nor can. For, (1.) The natural man is without strength ^l. The best-natur'd man in the world (until regenerate) is but flesh; and all flesh is grass, and the glory of it as the flower of grass ^m; which fades in a moment: 'Tis an arm that has no strength ⁿ; makes a shew, but can do nothing. And it is not weak only in itself, but it renders weak and impotent whatever relies upon it, or may be used by it for any spiritual end. A straw in the hand of a giant will make no deeper impression than if in the hand of a stripling: The law itself, which was ordained to life, is made weak through the flesh ^o. (2.) The flesh is an opposite principle, at perfect enmity against the holy seed; as you see before; It answers, as Pharaoh, Who is the Lord, that I should obey him ^p? Its whole business is to crush the workings of the Spirit; and the conflict ceaseth not, but in the total overthrow of the one party. The flesh and the Spirit always have been, are, and will be two; yea, even where

^f 2 Chron. 34. 27, 31. ^g Jer. 36. 23. ^h Rom. 7. 8, 10. ⁱ Gen 1. 2. ^j Job 38. 4. ^k Isa. 40. 12, 14. ^l Rom. 5. 6. ^m 1 Pet. 1. 24. ⁿ Job 26. 3. ^o Rom. 7. 10. with Chap. 8. 3. ^p Exod. 5. 2.

where the enmity hath lost its *dominion*, it will maintain a *conflict* to the last: And, if the one fights against the other *after* the new creature is formed, it will doubtless oppose the *first* formation of it. (3.) If we shall suppose the flesh able, in any respect, to give assistance in this work; the holy Ghost would none of it. *What concord hath Christ with Belial* ^q? Such mixtures are an *abomination* to him. He would not permit his people to *yoke an ox and an ass together in plowing* ^r; nor to *sow their land with divers seeds* ^t: And if in building an altar their tool were lift up upon it, the Lord reckons it defiled ^u. (4.) Suppose a possibility of conjunction: What would be the issue of it? *When the sons of God went into the daughters of men, giants were born to them* ^v. If creatures of several kinds should couple together, what can be produc'd but a monster in nature? Such monsters in spirituals are hypocrites and temporary believers; in whom there is something begotten on their wills, by the common strivings and inlightnings of the Spirit, which attains to a kind of formality, but proves in the end a lump of dead flesh, it never comes to be a new creature; as you see in *Herod and Agrippa*. An owl's egg, tho' hatcht by a dove or eagle, will prove but a night-bird: The seed of the bond-woman will be carnal, tho' *Abraham* himself be the father of it.

To illustrate this a little farther, I would briefly recount what most probably should influence the hearts of men, and lead them to repentance; with their common, if not constant effect, when left to their free-will improvements. I reduce them to five: A prosperous condition; afflictions; the word of God; the strivings of the Spirit; and miracles.

1. *Prosperity*: This, we find, hath not done it. How many have been the worse, and how few, if any, the better for it? Even *Jeshurun waxed fat, and kicked* ^x. In the time of the Judges, whenever they had respite from trouble, they presently fell to idolatry: When *Uzziah* was strong, *his heart was lifted up to his destruction* ^y. Some there be that are not in trouble like other men; *their eyes stand out with fatness; they have more than heart can wish*, &c. But are they bettered by it? No; *pride compasseth them about like a chain,*
and

^q 2 Cor. 6. 15. ^r Dent. 22. 10. ^t Jer. 9. ^u Exod. 20. 25. ^v Gen. 6.
4. ^x Dent. 32. 15. ^y 2 Chron. 26. 16.

and they set their mouths against the heavens ^a. So true is that maxim, *Let favour be shewed to the wicked, yet will he not learn righteousness: In the land of uprightness will he deal unjustly* ^a.

2. Afflictions and judgments will not do it. It appears by *Amos*, that that people were loaded with variety of judgments, yet they turned not to him that smote them ^b; *The more they were stricken, the more they revolted* ^c. The Lord was wroth with Ephraim, and smote him; he hid his face from him, and was wroth (which, if any thing, should have moved him :) But what cares Ephraim? He went on forwardly in the way of his heart ^d. The Jews continue to this day in their unbelief, tho' wrath be come upon them to the uttermost. The antichristian world, when vials of wrath were poured forth upon them, they blasphemed God, and repented not ^e. Thus, *Bray a fool in a mortar, yet will not this his foolishness depart from him* ^f: 'Tis natural to him, and therefore inseparable.

3. The word of God, and his ordinances: Neither is it in these to turn the heart back again. Of this the people of *Israel* are a pregnant example; to them were committed the oracles of God ^g; no nation had God so nigh them as they ^h; and yet the most stubborn, stiff-necked people that ever the earth bore. *The Lord sends them his prophets, rising early, and sending* ⁱ; and see how they are used! First they *slight his messengers, and send them away empty* ^k; then they fall to *beating and imprisoning of them* ^l; yea, they proceed farther, (for this enmity knows no bounds) some they stoned, others they *slew with the sword* ^m: When was there one that escaped them? At last he sends them *his Son*; Surely, *they'll reverence him*! No, *this is the Heir; come let us kill him* ⁿ. And thus they went on, till there was no remedy ^o.

4. The world of ungodly in *Noah's* time: After warning of the flood, they had the *Spirit of God* striving with them *sixscore years together* ^p; and yet not a man in the whole universe prevailed upon. The people in the wilderness, how many

^a Psalm 73. 3,---9. ^a Isa. 26. 10. ^b Amos 4. 6,---12. ^c Isa. 1. 5. ^d Isa. 57. 17. ^e Rev. 16. 9,---11. ^f Hos. 7. 9. 10. ^g Prov. 27. 22. ^h Rom. 3. 2. ⁱ Dent. 4. 7. ^j 2 Chron. 36. 15, 16. ^k Jer. 25. 3, 4. ^l Jer. 37. 15. ^m Luke 20. 10, to 15. ⁿ Mat. 21. 38. ^o 2 Chron. 36. 16. ^p Gen. 3. 6.

many ways did the Lord strive with them, by mighty deliverances, terrible appearances, merciful providences, dreadful judgments; and this, forty years together! and yet still they went on *rebelling against him, and vexing his holy Spirit* ¹.

5. *Miracles will not do it.* What a multitude of these, mingled with judgments, were shewn upon *Pharaoh*! all which did but further harden ². Then the people of the wilderness: Take but that one instance of *Korah* and his company; *the earth clave asunder, and swallowed up the chief of the mutineers, with all that they had; they went alive into the pit* ³: Two hundred and fifty more were consumed by fire from heaven ⁴. Which one would think should cause them to fear the Lord, and do no more presumptuously; and yet the next thing we hear of them, on the very *morrow*, they are at it again; and that not a *party* of them, but the *whole congregation* ⁵. All which considered and laid together, it follows, with much evidence,

Thirdly, *That the new creature is the product of divine power [alone].* A point of great concernment, if duly considered.

The evangelist *John* is clear on our side, touching this original and pedigree of it; both whence it is *not*, and whence it is: *It is born not of blood; i. e.* It belongs not to, nor is brought forth in, any as they are men made of flesh and blood, nor as they are *Abraham's seed according to the flesh* ¹: Nor is it born of *the will of the flesh*; the carnal and sensual affections have nothing to do in the spiritual birth: Nor of *the will of man*; the rational faculties, by which men are set above the rank of other creatures, even *these* contribute nothing to our *divine sonship*: But it is of *God* ², *i. e.* is his work alone; and the natural man has nothing to do in it: He is as *perfectly unactive* in it, as the dry bones in causing themselves to live ³, or as *Lazarus* in reviving himself; of whom it is said, *He that was dead came forth bound hand and foot* ⁴: Which was such a demonstration of divine power, that the *Pharisees* themselves acknowledge, *If they now let him alone, all men will believe in him* ⁵. (And, if it were not

¹ *Isa.* 63. 10. ² *Exod.* 7. 14.---22. *Chap.* 8. 19. *Chap.* 9. 7. *Sec.* ³ *Numb.* 16. 32. ⁴ *Ver.* 35. ⁵ *Ver.* 41. ⁶ *Rom.* 9. 7. ⁷ *John* 1. 13. ⁸ *Ezek.* 37. 5. 9. 14. ⁹ *John* 11. 44. ¹⁰ *John* 11. 48.

not so, the Lord alone should not be exalted.) And with this falls in that other beloved disciple *James*: *Of his own will begat he us* ^c; i. e. By his own divine power he forms and brings forth the new creation, without any assistance from the old, or co-operation of it: They contribute no more to it, than those who sleep in the dust to their own resurrection. *Peter*, he also tells us, *It is born of incorruptible seed* ^d: And *John*, again, that *it is born of the Spirit* ^e; which is, plainly, to be of the offspring of God. Of like tenor is that of the prophet, *Thou hast wrought all our works in us* ^f; and that of *Paul*, *We are his workmanship* ^g; as also that of the Psalmist, *It is he that hath made us (and not we ourselves) his people* ^h. We find it here, and in *John*, expressed both negatively and positively, as purpose'y and for ever to exclude whatever is in man, from being so much as thought contributory to the new creation; and that the whole work might be father'd upon God only: Which is, indeed, the natural result of all those scriptures which speak of it under the notion of a creature; which necessarily implies, that the whole of it, both matter and form, is from the Creator: For, in truth, a creature's foundation is nothing, besides the good pleasure of God. It may further be noted, that, in *James*, the Father of lights is said to beget it; and in the *Galatians*, *Jerusalem* which is above to be the mother of it; and in *John*, as before, that it is born of the Spirit. Now, if father and mother, begetter and bringer-forth, are both in heaven; what shall the man of earth found his pretensions upon, as to the parentage of the new creature?

And further, it is worthy of remark, 1. What sort of instruments were mostly used in this work. Not the learned, but illiterate men; and, of these, such most eminently as had neither elegancy of speech, nor majestick presence ⁱ. And the end of this was, that it might appear, and men might be convinced, that their faith stood not in (was neither made nor maintained by) the wisdom of men, but the power of God ^k. 2. The natural unaptness of the persons commonly wrought upon to receive those high-born principles; not many of the wise

^c *James* 1. 11. ^g *Pet.* 1. 8. ^d *1 Pet.* 1. 23. ^e *John* 3. 8. ^f *Isa.* 26. 12. ^h *Eph.* 2. 10. ⁱ *Psal.* 100. 2. ^j *2 Cor.* 10. 10. ^k *1 Cor.* 2. 3, 4, 5.

wise and noble, but the poor, base and foolish; (i. e. in comparison of others.) And why *these*? Truly it was to make good the truth that's here asserted, viz. *That no flesh might glory in his presence* ¹. And yet likewise take notice, that the *wise and noble* were not excluded; witness the wife of Herod's steward, *Joseph, Nicodemus, and Sergius Paulus*, a prudent man: Which further illustrates the power of God, in that he did, by those weak and contemptible means, bring in also such as *these*. 3. The scripture's so *emphatically* ascribing this work unto God: Which kind of ascription were very improper, if *faith* and holiness were things to common, and easily attain'd, and the *natural* man so *able and virtuous* an engine in that work as most men imagine. *Paul* styles it, *the faith of the operation of God* ^m: *Isaiah* makes it dependent on the *arm of the Lord* [revealed] ⁿ; i. e. made bare, and put forth to the utmost. Our Saviour, he attributes it to *God the Father*, as [Lord of heaven and earth] ^o. And *Paul* again to the exceeding greatness of his mighty power, even the same by which he raised *Jesus Christ from the dead* ^p; even then, when the sins of all his people lay upon him, and all the malice, strength, and subtilty of the powers of darkness, were up in arms against it: Which was indeed the highest indication of divine power that ever was put forth, or shall be.

III. The next thing to be shewn is, *Who those blessed ones are, to whom these requisites to salvation do belong; and by what title.*

The answer is, *They all do belong to elect persons, and that in right of their election.* *Elect* and *believer* are convertible terms: Every believer is an elect person, and every elect person is a believer, or shall be in his time. This right, indeed, is *nextly* founded upon redemption; but, being *originally* from election, I shall speak here only to *that*. To put effects in the place of causes, and causes of effects, is a great absurdity in *natural* things; and yet how prone are we to it in matters of *divine concernment*! which chiefly comes from

¹ 1 Cor. 1. 26, 27, 29. ^m Col. 2. 12. ⁿ Isa. 53. 1. ^o Mat. 11. 25. ^p Col. 1. 12.

from the *pride* of our spirits, who fain would be some-body in procuring our own happiness; and do therefore ascribe it to any cause, rather than *that* which is *proper* to it. This is a *great evil*; and the more perilous and catching, because espoused by some of no common profession, and that with great pretences of reason for it. To refute which, your most rational course will be to *search* and *consult* the *scriptures*, whose testimony and right reason do always sort together: And if by this *ascent* you follow salvation, and all the condugements thereto, up to their head, you shall find them all to be intirely and absolutely of God, and contained in the same decree; and consequently that *faith* and *holiness* are the *effects* and *certain consequents* of *election*.

The genuine import of scripture-salvation is broad and comprehensive, extending to all manner of requisites which any way conduce to the perfect accomplishment of the thing itself: Outward salvation, whatever belongs to the outward man's preservation; as water, bread, walls and bulwarks, &c. Isa. xvi. 1. *Salvation will appoint walls and bulwarks*; i.e. The promise of salvation implies and carries in it all things pertaining to safety: So, spiritual salvation, whatever pertains to blessedness and glory; as *redemption from sin*, *faith*, *holiness*, and *holding out to the end*: Any of which being absent, would invalidate all the rest; as one round of a ladder plucked out, hinders your ascent to the top. If one gave me a piece of land that is round inclosed, the law gives me a way to it (tho' no express mention thereof in my deed) so as to take the profits; his gift would otherwise little avail me. *Salvation* is *that* the elect are endowed with; *faith* and *holiness* the necessary way to their actual possession: And therefore *these* they must be ordained unto, and are, as well as to salvation itself: For, being *predestinate to the adoption of sons*¹, and to be *conformed to the image of Christ*²; (which is not perfectly accomplished till his appearing in glory³;) they must be predestinate also to all those intermediate dispensations and graces which are requisite thereto. For, right to the *end*, gives right to the *means*: They are therefore said to be *chosen to salvation* [through] *sanctification of the Spirit*, and *belief of the truth*⁴. In order of intention, God wills the end first,

N

¹ Eph. 1. 5. ² Rom. 8. 28. ³ 1 John 3. 2. ⁴ 2 Thess. 2. 13.

first, and then the means; in order of execution, the means first, as directive to that end^a: The end is the cause of the means^a, and election the cause of them both^b.

The promise of *Canaan* to *Abraham's* seed did virtually contain whatever must come between the making of the promise, and the final performance of it: As, (1.) To multiply his seed into a nation (2.) To keep *Esau*, *Laban*, and others, from hurting them. (3.) To provide for them in time of famine. (4.) To preserve and increase them in *Egypt*, notwithstanding the *Egyptians* craft and cruelty to suppress them. (5.) To bring them forth with an high hand, in contempt of *Pharaoh's* resolvedness against it, and his potency to withstand it. (6.) To divide the sea before them, and provide them a table in the wilderness. (7.) To cause their enemies hearts to faint, and become as water. (8.) To send the hornet before them, and to fight for them, &c. (For otherwise the Lord's giving them *Canaan* had been but as the Pope's giving *England* to the *Spaniard*, that is, if he could get it.) And, lastly, To pardon their manifold great and high provocations; by which they exposed themselves to wrath and extirpation daily. So is it in the case of election, it draws with it even all that is tendent to the saints actual investiture with glory. The apostle therefore linketh eternity past, with eternity to come; he makes election and glorification the two extreme points of the compass; calling and justification (which are parts intermediate) he founds upon the first, in order to the last, and gives you their set course, in *Rom. viii. Whom he did foreknow, them also he did predestinate* (to what?) *to be conformed to the image of his Son; and whom he did predestinate, them also he called*^a: And what did he call them to? he called them to holiness, to glory and virtue^a; and whom he called, them also he justified and glorified^b: These all do belong to the same persons, and that by virtue of the decree; and no one of them did ever go alone.

The like succession of causes and effects ye have in the 16th of *Ezekiel*^c. The Lord finds them in their blood, that is, in their natural lost condition: He enters into covenant with them, and makes them his own; there's their election:

^a Rom. 8. 30. ^a Eph. 2. 4, 5. ^b Chap. 2. 8, 10. ^c Rom. 8. 29.
^a 2 Pet. 1. 3. ^b Rom. 8. 30. ^c Ezek. 16. 6, to 12.

election: Then he *washes* them, and that thoroughly; there's their justification: And then *adorns* them; there's their sanctification, which always is consummated in glory. In the 17th of the *Acts*, ye have *Paul* preaching at *Thessalonica*: The same doctrine was propounded to all indefinitely; and it must be so, for the minister knows not the elect from other men. But the Holy Ghost, who *searcheth the deep things of God*, and hath the management of his work committed to him, he knew the elect by *name*; and accordingly took them; *gathered them one by one*; (each one in his proper time) and *open'd their ears to discipline*; making them *what* they were chosen to be. And the same apostle, in his epistle to the *Thessalonians*, where he celebrates the effect of this sermon, brings in their *election* as the *cause* of their conversion; *Knowing, brethren beloved, your election of God*; [for] our gospel came not to you in words only, (as it did to others) but in power ^h. So in the *Acts*, *As many as were ordained to eternal life, believed*; and the Lord added to the church daily (whom did he add?) *such as should be saved* ^k. Effectual calling is a sure demonstration of election, and the first effect by which it can be known.

That precious faith, thro' which we are saved, is obtained through the righteousness of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ ^l: 1. It is given thro' the righteousness of God the Father; and so it either respects his ordaining us to eternal life; in which act he did implicitly engage himself to give us faith, which may therefore be called *the faith of God's elect* ^m; or else it respects his promise made to Christ, that, *setting his soul an offering for sin, he should see his seed* ⁿ; or it may be intended of both. 2. The righteousness of Christ is concerned in it two ways: 1. As the meriting or procuring cause thereof; and so this faith belongs of right to every one he died for ^o: Or, 2. As he is that faithful servant, who gives to every one according as he hath received of the Father for them ^p. In all which respects, it evidently flows from election. To confirm which, Peter says expressly in his former epistle, that they were [elect] unto obedience,

N 2

^h *Acts* 17. 1, to 4. ⁱ *John* 10. 3. ^j *Isa.* 27. 12. ^k *Job* 36. 10. ^l *1 Thess.* 1. 4, 5. ^m *Acts* 13. 48. ⁿ *Chap.* 2. 47. ^o *2 Pet.* 1. 1. ^p *Tit.* 1. 1. ^q *Heb.* 5. 10. ^r *Tit.* 1. 2. with *2 Tim.* 1. 9. ^s *Phil.* 1. 29. ^t *Eph.* 4. 7, 8.

and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ ^a. So, the mystery of his will is made known, according to his good pleasure which he had purposed in himself ^c. The same intentment we have in the *Corinths*; the preaching of the gospel is to them that perish foolishness, but to us who are [saved] it is the power of God ^d: And in *Timothy*, Who hath [saved] us, and called us with an holy calling ^e. In both places saving is put before calling, and then it must be before faith: And how men are saved before they believe, unless by election, (or redemption, which is commensurate with election) doth not appear to us. To this purpose it is further observable, that in *Rom. viii.* the apostle sets predestination before calling ^f; as, in *Timothy* and the *Corinths*, he doth saving: And in *Rom. ix.* he puts calling in a tense subsequent to election or preparing unto glory ^g. The apostle *Jude*, his sentence also accords with it: He directs his epistle to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, and called ^h: Where by [sanctified] he means [elected,] separated, or set apart. In this sense the word is used elsewhere, where it will not admit of any other, *Exod. iii. 13.* I am the Lord that doth sanctify you; and more plainly in *Numb. viii. 17.* All the first-born of the children of Israel are mine: On the day that I smote every first-born in the Land of Egypt, I [sanctified] them for myself. Here no other thing but choosing, selecting, or setting-apart, can be intended; and I see no reason why it should not be so understood in that of *Jude*.

And it is termed an holy calling, not only as it calleth us to holiness; but as it is sacred, peculiar, set apart and appropriated to an holy people; viz. those whom the Lord set apart for himself: Whose eternal sanctifying them in his decree, was the original cause of their being sanctified actually; He loved them with an everlasting love, and [therefore] with loving-kindness doth he draw him ⁱ. And this their actual sanctification is so indubitable a consequent of the decree, and so appropriate to the same persons, that the same word is used for both, as it is also for redemption; For their sakes, says Christ, I sanctify myself ^j. A lightsom instance

^a 1 Pet. 1. 2. ^b Eph. 1. 9. ^c 1 Cor. 1. 18. ^d 2 Tim. 1. 9. ^e Rom. 8. 30. ^f Chap. 9. 23, 24. ^g Jude ver. 1. ^h Jer. 31. 1. ⁱ John 17. 26.

of this we have in *Eldad* and *Medad*, who tho' they came not up to the tabernacle with their brethren, yet, being of them that were [written,] *the Spirit came upon them, and they prophesied in the camp* ^b; (*election* finds out men when they think not of it.) So, the Lord first determines *Jeremy* to his office; then puts forth his hand, and fits him for his work ^c. Even *Christ* himself was first appointed to his mediatory office; and then the Spirit came upon him, because so appointed ^d.

Quer. In the 1st *John* xvi. it is said, that to them which received him, he gave power to become the sons of God; which seems to put their believing before their sonship.

Sol. Albeit that Faith goes before the manifestation of our sonship, yet not before our sonship itself; the adoption of sons is that we were predestinated to, before the foundation of the world ^e. That therefore in *John* must be understood with that of *Moses*, when he pleads with God for his presence with his people; so shall we be separated from all the people that are on the face of the earth ^f. Not that this separation was now to be made; it was done before ^g: But his meaning is, that, by the Lord's going with them, this their separation should be manifested. The same sense of the word ye have in *Matth.* v. Love your enemies; bless them that curse you; that ye may be (that is, that ye may appear to be) the children of your Father which is in heaven ^h. In like manner we become the sons of God by faith, *Gal.* iii. 26.

The budding of *Aaron's* rod was not the cause of God's choosing him to the priesthood ⁱ; nor the falling of the lot upon *Saul*, and afterwards upon *Matthias*, the reason why God designed them, the one to the kingdom, and the other to the apostleship: They were both appointed before, and those events were but the effects of their fore-appointment, and evidences of it ^k. So the giving of the Spirit is that which follows election; Because sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts ^l. Altho' the manifestation of our adoption, and our actual enjoyment of its

N 3

privileges,

^b Numb. 11, 29. ^c Jer. 1. 9. ^d Isa. 61. 1. ^e Eph. 1. 4, 5. ^f Exod. 33. 13. ^g Lev. 20. 24. ^h Deut. 7. 6. *Matth.* 5. 44, 45. ⁱ Numb. 17. 5, 8. ^k 1 Sam. 9. 16. with Chap. 10, 21. *Acts* 1. 24, 26. ^l Gal. 4. 6.

privileges, are *in time*; yet the thing itself we were predestinated to from everlasting ^m. Pursuant to this, our Saviour manifests the Father's name to *the men he had given him* [out] of the world; and [these] receive it ⁿ. The [sheep] hear his voice, and [follow him,] ^o: Of others he saith expressly, *Ye* [believe not,] because ye are [not of my sheep] ^p. He that is of God beareth God's words; ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God ^q. The same reason he gives for his different ministrations towards his own and others: To the one it was [given] to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God; to the other it was [not] given ^r: And therefore, having ended his parables, he dismisses the multitude, as having no more for them; but to his disciples he expounded every thing in private ^r. And ye see he puts it upon election, as that which had invested them with this prerogative above the rest, [To you it is given;] i. e. It belonged to them by God's donation and appointment: They are first saints by election, then saints by calling ^t.

When Christ appeared to Paul to go to *Damascus*, they that were with him were all in amaze; a voice they heard, but knew not what it spake: Why so, since they were as likely to yield as he? It was not indeed intended for them; and therefore their ears were not bored, nor the speech directed to them, but to Paul; and to Paul by name: But why to Paul above the rest, since he was the ring-leader and chief persecutor in the company? Paul was a *chosen vessel*; and this in brief, was the reason of it, as you have it recorded in *Acts* xxii. 14. *The God of our fathers hath chosen thee, [that thou shouldst know his will.]* The Jews had many means of knowing the Messiah, and inducements to believe in him, which the Gentiles had not; and yet these embrace the gospel, while the Jews reject it. Those who sought after righteousness fell short of it, when those who sought it not attained it ^u. For the bottom-reason of which different dispensation, we are referr'd to election; *The election hath obtained, and the rest were blinded* ^x.

How variously are several men affected in hearing the same word?

^m Eph. 1. 4, 5, 9, 11. ⁿ John 17. 6, 8. ^o Chap. 10. 27. ^p Ver. 26.
^q Chap. 8. 47. ^r Matth. 13. 11. ^s Mark 4. 34. ^t Rom. 1. 7. ^u Rom.
 9. 30, 31. ^x Chap. 11. 7.

word? The *sheep* and the *rest* have both the same outward means: One neglects it, attends not at all, or regards not what he hears: A second quarrels at it, as the *Jews* often did: A third is persuaded almost, as *Agrippa* was, and those that would hear *Paul* again of that matter: A fourth is pricked in the heart, and persuaded altogether. 'Tis a stumbling-block to some, foolishness to others, and to some 'tis the power of God: And these [some] are such as were elected; of those to whom the promise was made ¹, and are therefore termed, the called according to his own purpose ², and according to his own purpose and grace, which was given them in Christ before the world began ³: They are first chosen, and then caused to approach unto God ⁴.

There is almost no end of scriptures to this purpose: I shall instance one more, and so close up this particular. All the blessings which the saints are blessed with in time, are all bestowed according to God's decree of election before time; as is manifest from *Eph. i. ver. 3, 4, 5.* where I observe, 1. That election goes before the actual donation of spiritual blessings: For these are given in time, that was before time; and that which comes after cannot be the cause of that which went before it: One effect may be the cause of another, but not the cause of that which caused itself. 2. That the actual donation of spiritual blessings is [according] to election; i. e. election is the rule by which the dispensation is guided: It is adequate with election, and answerable thereto, even as the impression is to the printing-types, or as the fashion of *David's* body to the platform thereof in God's book, and the tabernacle to the pattern shewn in the mount, according to which all things were made, as well in respect of number, weight and measure, as form and figure. Spiritual blessings are not given to one more or fewer, or in other manner, but just as election had laid it forth: Which also is further confirmed by *Rev. xxi. 27.* where we find, that none are admitted into the holy city, but such whose names were written in the book of life; and whosever was not found written in that book, was cast into the lake of fire ^c: Which shews, that, at the latter day, it will be taken for granted,

N 4

that

¹ *Acts 2. 39.* ² *Rom. 8. 28.* ³ *2 Tim. 1. 9.* ⁴ *Psalms 63. 4.* ^c *Rev. 20. 15.*

that as many as were [ordained] to eternal life, believed; and that all and every one without the list of election died in unbelief; that the election obtained ^d, and the rest were blinded ^e. Therefore faith and holiness are not the cause, but the certain effects and consequents of election.

Now, if any should ask (by the way) wherein the special love of God to elect persons discovers itself before their conversion? I cannot assign any plain or open discoveries of it, by which the elect may be known from other men, since all outward things fall alike to all: *The heir, while a child, differs nothing from a servant, although he be lord of all* ^f, by election. And yet there are divers gracious operations of that love towards them, even in common providences, albeit they are not perceived 'till afterwards: As,

1. In keeping alive the root or stem they were to grow from: *This* perhaps was not the least cause of adding fifteen years to *Hezekiah's* life; viz. for *Josiah's* sake, who was to come of his lineage; *Manassah*, who was to be his grandfather, not being yet born: So, those days of tribulation were shortened, and many of the *Jews*, by special providence, kept alive, for the elect's sake that should be of their progeny perhaps two thousand years after.

2. In preserving the elect themselves from many a death they were obnoxious to before their conversion, as he also did *Manassah*: And this was the cause, when Satan had them in his net, and had dragged them to the brink of hell, that *the Lord sent from heaven, and saved them* ^g. *Deliver him, I have found a ransom* ^h; q. d. He is mine, and I have designed him to another end.

3. In keeping them from the unpardonable sin: Thus *Paul*, being a chosen vessel, was kept without that knowledge of Christ which some of the other *Pharisees* had; for otherwise his persecuting the church of God had been incapable of pardon, as appears from *1 Tim. i. 13. I obtained mercy, because I did it ignorantly.*

4. In casting the lot of their habitation where he hath planted, or will plant, the means of grace; or bringing them, providentially, where some effectual word shall be spoken

^d Acts 13. 48. ^e Rom. 11. 7. ^f Gal. 4. 1. ^g Psalm 91. 3. ^h Job 33. 24.

to them. The one is verified in those who dwelt at Corinth; where Paul must preach, and not hold his peace; for, says the Lord, *I have much people in this city*¹: The other in those who were come to Jerusalem at the feast of Pentecost, from all parts of the world; which gave them the opportunity of coming together, and of hearing Peter's sermon, by means whereof thousands were converted². It is farther exemplified by the story of the eunuch³; as also in that of Zaccheus, whose intent reached no higher than to see what manner of person Christ was, being so much talk'd of abroad; and being low of stature he climbs into a tree, and there salvation meets both him and his house⁴.

IV. Our last enquiry is, *of the way and manner of God's dispensing spiritual blessings*: And that is, *effectually, and freely*.

First, *Effectually*. The soul is not turned to God by a twine-thread; nor doth the Lord content himself with *wishing* and *woulding* that it might be so, after the manner of men, who either are somewhat *indifferent* about the thing, or have not wherewith to effect their desires: Nor merely by *propounding*, *moving* and *striving*, by moral suasions, instructions, threatnings, and the like (which are of little avail with a dark understanding, and fixed enmity, which every natural man is acted by :) But by the putting forth of a *power invincible*; a power that will not be said nay; but *what it wills, that it will do*; what it undertakes, it goes thorow with. To do a thing *effectually*, is to do it *perfectly, thorowly, successfully*: So to use and apply the means, that the end design'd is surely brought to pass; and this notwithstanding all the weakness, averiness, and repugnancy of the carnal mind against it.

I might produce instances not a few, touching God's *effectual working* to bring about things of *lesser moment*. How upwilling was Moses to be his messenger to Pharaoh⁵? So opposite to it, that, when he had no farther plea nor excuse to make, he carries it *perversly* towards the Lord; *Send by*
the

¹ Acts 18. 9, 10. ² Chap. 2. 4. ³ Chap. 8. 37. ⁴ Luke 19. 2, to 9.
⁵ Exod. 3, & 4 Chap.

the hand of him whom thou shouldst send, says he ? But God, having design'd him for the work, leaves him not until he had won him to it ? So Pharaoh resolv'd he would not let the people go : But I will stretch out my hand (says God) and he shall let you go. Much more will he make his arm bare for the salvation of his chosen, whom he loved from everlasting : And it must be so done,

Arg. I. Because otherwise the elect should be in no better condition than other men; for, until conversion, Satan hath as fast hold of them as of the rest. Adam's fall was the devil's master-piece : To bring men into his own condemnation, is the trophy he glories in ; and being a Prince both proud, subtle and imperious, you may not think he will be buffeted or complimented out of his hold : Intreaties, menaces, and force of arguments, are of no weight with him ; he laughs at your strong reasons, and counts them but rotten wood : Jesus I know, and his Spirit I know ? ; but what are these ? No, this kind goes not forth by consent ; nothing will move him, but that power which heaven and earth do bow under : He that made him (and he only) can cause his sword to approach unto him, and take the prey from this terrible one. And for this it was, that our Saviour tells the apostles, (when he sends them to turn men from Satan unto God) that all power in heaven and earth was committed to him ? ; and that in this power he will be with them to the end of the world ! : Which was indeed but needful ; for they had surely gone on a sleeveless errand, (a weak and fruitless design) if Christ himself, thus impower'd, had not gone with them. And for the elect themselves, they are (of themselves) no better dispos'd to this work than those that never shall be wrought upon : They are enemies in their minds, darkness, dead in sin, and children of wrath, even as others ; and this they are by nature : Their state, therefore, could not be changed, if a power invincible, and invincibly resolved in what it undertakes, were not engaged in it. Ephraim, tho' an elect vessel, yet, while in nature, was of so bad a nature, that all moral endeavours were lost upon him. Let messengers be sent to him early and late, he pulls away the shoulder :

° Exod. 4. 13. ° Jer. 18. 1. ? Acts 19. 13. ! Matth. 28. 18. † Matt. 28. 20. Luke 9. 1.

12. The Lord was wroth with him, smote him, hid his face from him; he still went on frowardly: Shew him his sickness, so that he cannot but see it; and he sends to king Jareb (takes any course rather than turn to him that smote him) *: Take off the yoke from his jaw, give him the scope of his will; and the first thing he takes to shall be the forbidden fruit: Lay meat to his mouth, that which is meat indeed; and he'll rather starve than eat: (Men left to their own will, will rather go to hell, than be beholden to free grace for salvation). But, says God, *Is Ephraim my dear son?* one whom I bought with a price? *is he a pleasant child* ^u whom I loved from everlasting: And shall I so lose him? Shall it be said, that I rais'd up a creature whom I cannot rule and bring to my bent? Or, that I made him for such an end, as that any thing conducive thereto may not be done for him? Shall *my* will be forced rather than *his*? mine to destroy him, rather than his to be saved? No, I have not done all this to lose him at last; nor have I suffered those unworthy repulses for want of power to prevent them, but that *Ephraim* might see what would become of him if left to the conduct of his own will (free indeed to nothing but his own ruin!) and now I'll heal him: And the first effect of this healing was, *Ephraim's* applying himself to God; *Turn [thou] me and I [shall] be turned* ^x. Those cords of love, by which the Lord draws men to himself, are not love and kindness merely propounded, with frustrable motives to persuade acceptance, but *divine love shed abroad in the hearts* ^y; not written with ink (a thing of human composition) but by the Spirit and power of God. And hence it is that we find those *imperial* terms [*I will*] and [*ye shall*] so much in use about this matter. Thus the Lord began with the serpent; (which was a leading case to all that follows;) *It [shall] bruise thine head*: In which compendious word, the destruction of Satan and sin is effectually provided for. And elsewhere he speaks as much for quickning the soul; *A new heart also will I [give] you, and [I will] put my Spirit within you, and [cause] you to walk in my statutes; ye [shall] be my people, and I [will] be your God* ^z; *They [shall] return unto me* ^{with}

* *Hos.* 5. 13. ^u *Jer.* 31. 20. ^x *Chap.* 31. 18. ^y *Rom.* 5. 5. ^z *Ezek.* 36. 26, 27, 28.

with their whole heart ^a; with many others. The Lord still utters himself in terms of *omnipotency*, as putting forth an *almightiness* of power; which as it needs not, so it will not (yea, it cannot with a *salvo* to his honour) admit the least dependence upon created power, to make it successful: *His word shall not return unto him void; it shall accomplish that which he pleaseth, and prosper in the thing whereto he sends it* ^b: *He that was dead comes forth at his word, tho' bound hand and foot* ^c.

Arg. II. Conversion is a creation-work; which, tho' done by degrees, must be gone thorow with, and that by him who laid the foundation; or all the foregoing parts (as conviction, &c.) will moulder, and come to nothing. As, when Adam was to be made, the Lord first prepares the earth, then moulds it in such a form, and then *breathes into him the breath of life*; else that lump had never been a living soul: So, in the new creation, the Lord works, and goes on to work, and leaves it not, until he hath set it going. He doth not only cause the light to shine into darkness, but gives, withal, a *suitable understanding* ^d, a faculty *conatural* with the object; as without which the darkness would never comprehend it ^e. Ezekiel might have prophesied till doom's-day ere those dry-bones would have liv'd, if the Lord himself had not caused breath to enter into them; and probably he is called *the Father of lights* ^f, (plural) to denote, that as well the light *comprehending* (or *capacitating* our comprehension) is from God, as that to be *comprehended* ^g: *In his light we see light* ^h.

Arg. III. God's *effectual* working in this matter, and the necessity of his so working, may also be argued from the common sense of those already wrought upon, and brought in; by whose prayers and confessions it is evident, that they still needed a powerful and effectual influence to *carry on* the work already begun: *Turn thou me, and I shall be turned* ⁱ; *Quicken us, and we will call upon thee* ^k; *Draw me, we will run after thee* ^l; *Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing, but our sufficiency is of God* ^m; *I live, yet not*

^a Jer. 24. 7. ^b Isa. 55. 11. ^c John 11. 44. ^d 1 John 5. 20. ^e John 1. 5. ^f James 1. 17. ^g 2 Cor. 4. 6. ^h Psal. 36. 9. ⁱ Jer. 31. 18. ^k Psal. 80. 18. ^l Cant. 1. 4. ^m 2 Cor. 3. 5.

not I, but Christ liveth in me ^a, &c. Hence it readily follows, that if those already turned, and made partakers of the divine nature, whose hearts are fixed in the good ways of God, and who desire nothing more than to walk in them, cannot yet keep themselves going without a *continual efficacious* influx and spring from *above*; much less can the natural man (without the like supernatural and divine efficacy) effectually bend himself to a compliance with them: For, *it is an abomination to fools to depart from evil* ^o.

Arg. IV. If the Lord did not work *effectually*, he should lose the honour of his work. If the *efficacy* of grace should depend on the human will (*i. e.* if grace should be rendered *effectual* by some motion or act of the will, which grace is not the author of) then will nature assume the *priority*, *works* will glory over *grace*, and *free-will* will be said to be *better* than *free-grace*: For, that *the less is blessed of the better, is without contradiction* ^p; and that *that which sanctifies, is greater* than that which is sanctified by it, is so obvious, that Christ appeals it to the reason of *fools* and *blind* ^q. If therefore you will grant, that *grace* is better than *nature*; follow it must, that the will is *blessed* and *sanctified* by *grace*, viz. by its powerful and effectual operation upon it. And here, indeed, lies the honour and *efficacy* of *grace*: Not in a *vincible* moving, exciting, perswading, or threatening the will to a compliance; but in taking off its natural bias, and placing it, as it were, on the other side; working the heart into a kindly agreeableness with the divine will, which before was so contrary to it: And thus the Lord doth, and thus he will do, wheresoever he will be gracious, tho' never so much against the present mind and natural propensity of the subject; and yet there's no such thing as *forcing* the will, as ye will see afterwards.

Arg. V. The doctrine of *effectual calling* is further confirmed from the office of Christ as a *Redeemer*; which was not only to purchase, but to put us in *actual possession* of the good things he purchased for us. *Redemption, forgiveness of sins, and reconciliation*, are relatives, commensurate, and inseparable ^r. It is not only a *reconcilable state* that redemption puts

^a Gal. 2. 20. ^o Prov. 13. 19. ^p Heb. 7. 7. ^q Mat. 23. 19. ^r Eph. 1. 7. Chap. 2. 13, 16. Heb. 2. 17.

puts us into, but a state of *actual* reconciliation ^a; it *abolishes* the enmity ^a, makes an end of sin, and brings in everlasting righteousness ^a. On this account our Saviour bears that glorious title, *Thou shalt call his name JESUS*; [for he shall save his people from their sins] ^a: And, *For this cause was the Son of God manifested, [that he might destroy the works of the devil]* ^a. Now, of those works, blindness of mind is the first-born, and foster-mother to all the rest ^a; 'tis that keeps the soul in unbelief, as under locks and bars; and therefore must of necessity be dispelled, which can only be done by causing the true light to shine effectually, as he did the light of this world in the first creation, which the scripture resembles it to ^a. Hence those frequent mentions of his being sent to open the blind eyes ^b; to give light to them that sit in darkness ^c; and to bring forth the prisoners from the prison-house ^d. Which may not be valued as things in design, yet liable to obstruction; but to be as certainly performed as that Christ should die. In the 107th Psalm it is spoken of as done already; *He brought them out of darkness and the shadow of death, and brake their bands in sunder* ^e: And that he speaks it of redeemed ones, appears by ver. 2. First take them as in darkness; and he is so to give them light, as to guide their feet into the way of peace ^f. That story of the blind man, in Mark, is a pertinent shadow of it; Christ spits on his eyes, and puts his hands upon him; as yet he saw but darkly, *men as trees walking*: But he puts his hands on him again, and dismisses him not until he had made him see clearly ^g. Then take them as prisoners, and prisoners in the pit ^h; and he that will deliver them must not only open the gate, but disarm their guard, knock off their shackles, and [bring them forth,] as the angel did Peter, even while the keepers stood before the door ⁱ. He so calleth his sheep, that he leadeth them out ^k: And this he doth, by the blood of his covenant; 'tis that makes those in the pit to be prisoners of hope ^l. And these effects as duly flow from redemption, as light from the sun: 'Twas therefore expressly said, *That the blood of Jesus Christ cleanseth*

^a Rom. 5. 8, 9, 10. Col. 1. 20, 21, 22. ^b Eph. 2. 15. ^c Dan. 9. 24. ^d Mat. 1. 21. ^e 1 John 3. 8. ^f 2 Cor. 4. 4. ^g Ver. 6. ^h Isa. 42. 7. ⁱ Luke 1. 79. ^j Isa. 49. 9. ^k Psal. 107. 14. ^l Luke 1. 79. ^m Mark 8. 23, 24, 25. ⁿ Zach. 9. 11. ^o Acts 12. 6, 7. ^p John 10. 3. ^q Levis. 9. 11, 12.

Sanctified from all sin ^a; and that we are sanctified through the offering of his body once for all ^a. This gave the apostle to argue so positively in Rom. vi. That, if planted together in his death, we shall be also in his resurrection ^o; and to put that emphasis upon it, That, if reconciled to God by the death of his Son, [much more] shall we be saved by his life ^p. That saying of Christ is much for our purpose; And other sheep I have, them also must I bring, and they shall hear my voice ^q: This [must] imports a duty not to be dispensed with; he had received a commandment for it from the Father ^r: And this [shall] that effectual working whereby he subdues all things to himself, and whereby they are made to believe ^s. The sheep, of themselves, ly as cross to this work as other men; What have I to do with thee? cries the posses'd Gadarene ^t. But, being his sheep, he must make them willing ^u. But suppose they stop their ears, then he is to bore them; for he received gifts for the rebellious ^x. Mens averiness does not lose Christ his right, nor shall it render his work ineffectual. For this very end, God raised him up, viz. to bless his people in turning them from their iniquities ^y; and to give them repentance, and that such as hath forgiveness of sins annexed to it ^z; which also he doth as a Prince, i. e. as one invested with power to remove whatever might let the effect of his purpose. To him are committed the keys of hell and death ^a. From these premisses I safely conclude, That what Christ as a Redeemer came to do, that he doth, and will do; and that none of his work shall fall to the ground. What he saith in the 17th of John, is propheticall of what he will say at the latter day; I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do; of all that thou hast given me, I have lost nothing; I have manifested thy Name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world; I have given them the words which thou gavest me, and they have received them ^b. More might be added; but by these I hope it is evident, that Jesus Christ was not only a Redeemer to pay our ransom, but the officer appointed of God to set us at liberty, even that glorious liberty of the sons of God: And this is that power of the Lord which should

^a 1 John 1. 7. ^b Heb. 10. 10. ^c Rom. 6. 5. ^d Rom. 5. 9, 10. ^e 1 John 10. 16. ^f 1 Pet. 18. ^g Eph. 1. 19. ^h Mark 5. 7. ⁱ Psal. 110. 3. ^j Psal. 68. 18. ^k Acts 3. 26. ^l Chap. 5. ^m Rev. 1. 18. ⁿ John 17. 4, 5, 8.

should prosper in his hands ^c; as it hath done, and doth, and for ever shall. And 'tis matter of great consolation to them that take hold of his covenant.

Secondly, All that God doth for men, or gives to them, in order to their salvation, is given and done *freely*. Now, a thing is then said to be *thus* given or done, when it proceeds from the mere good-will and favour of him that worketh, or giveth, without respect to any thing done or deserved by the receiver: 'Tis a *voluntary* act, supposing no obligation on him that gives, nor any attractive or obliging virtue in him that receives, nor yet expectation of recompence from him. Much need not be said to prove the free-giving of the things we are speaking of, did we duly consider, 1. The sovereign greatness of him that gives: It is the *most high God, possessor of heaven and earth*; who is infinitely and independently blessed in himself, and therefore cannot be added unto, nor receive from any creature: Who can give to him, that gives to *all* their life and breath? 2. The superexcellent, unspeakable worth of the things that are given: The first and chief is our Lord *Jesus Christ*; whose dignity was such, that heaven and earth were too low a price to set him at, especially to be given as he was; and in him righteousness and strength, adoption and reconciliation, grace and glory. 3. The vanity and wretchedness of those on whom they are bestowed: Both scripture and experience speak nothing of them in their naturals, but what bespeaks a condition every way deplorable, and incapable of yielding motives for such a gift; as is shewn before. But being so greatly in love with ourselves, and fond of our own improvements, and so stiffly bent to a covenant of works; to help us off those dangerous shelves, let us dwell a while on the following arguments.

Arg. I. is taken from the nature and import of the *covenant of grace*. This covenant is that which all professing Christians profess to be saved by, however they differ about the import and latitude of it. But if we receive the scriptural notion (which needs must be the rightest) we shall find, that it is of the very nature and substance of this covenant, to give *freely* and *absolutely*; without conditioning for any thing to be done by men, as the ground or motive thereof. All that

God



God doth for those he will save, is for his name's sake; which name is recorded in *Exod. xxxiv. 5, 6. The Lord God, gracious and merciful, &c.* To be gracious, is to do well to one that deserves ill; and, if otherwise, it would be but after the *covenant of works, or first covenant*: Which yet was not faulty or defective in itself, for it gave a sufficiency to obtain the benefits proposed by it; which if they had used and improved as they might, there would not have needed a *second*. But the Lord foreknowing the creature's mutability, and consequently what need there would be of another kind of power and grace than that *Adam* was created with, did therefore determine of a *second*, which in scripture is called *the hope of eternal life, which God, who cannot lie, promised before the world began, Tit. i. 2.* It is called the *covenant of grace*, not only as designing the glory of his grace, in the saving of men; but as giving freely, and of mere grace and favour, whatever must bring about that salvation: For where else can ly the difference between the two covenants? It cannot be in respect of the *easiness* and *difficulty* of the duties enjoined; for faith and repentance are much more above the compass of natural power, than to forbear the forbidden tree: But the difference lies in this, That the *new covenant* consists of better promises; and this *betterness* is the free, absolute, independent engagement of God himself, to invest his covenanted ones with all things conducing to the blessedness held forth; as well *that* to be done on *their* part, as on *his own* upon their doing of it; that is, plainly, to give to them, and work in them, whatever in this covenant he requires of them. The law shews matter of duty, but gives not wherewith to perform it; the *covenant of grace* does both, by writing the law in the heart: And, without *this*, it would still have been but a *covenant of works*, be the duties enjoined whatever you will. It therefore runs not upon *conditional* or *fallible* terms, I will [if] ye will; but *absolute* and *sovereign*, [I will] and [ye shall.] This covenant does not only give life upon terms of believing; but faith also and holiness, as the necessary means of attaining that life: And this, not upon your ingenuous compliance (as some term it) or better improvement of what you have in common with other men (such allegations the Lord disallows, and often cautions against) but of *grace*:

'Tis a covenant made up of *promises*; and *promise* (by scripture-intendment) is always *free*; both *freely made*, and *freely performed*, without the desert or procurement of men. Take *Isaac* for instance: *Abraham's* body was now dead, and for *Sarah* (besides her natural barrenness) it ceased to be with her after the manner of women, and yet *Sarah* shall have a son ^a. But how? The *promise* had in it (tho' *Abraham* and *Sarah* had not) whatever might tend to *Isaac's* conception and birth; and for this cause he was called the son of the *promise* ^e, as also *believers* are ^f: They are also termed *heirs of promise*, Heb. vi. 17. and on this account *Christ* is called the *promised Seed*, and the Holy Ghost the *Spirit of promise*, viz. to shew the independent freeness of those divine gifts; the *promise* of sending them, their actual coming, and effectual operations, are all free, and free in all respects. This dew from the Lord waiteth not for men, Micah v. 7.

For further illustration, the *Jews* are a pertinent instance, as ye read in *Jeremiah* ^g: They had done nothing but evil from their youth up, and were a continual provocation; and, when scattered among the nations, were no whit bettered, but caused even the heathen to blaspheme: And yet, notwithstanding all this, the Lord will gather them, and give them an heart to fear him for ever ^h; and this, even while they were not moved, neither could they blush ⁱ. See also with what inexpressible freeness of grace the Lord deals with them in the 43d of *Isaiah*; I, even I, am he that blotteth out thy transgression, — and will not remember thy sins ^k. But what's the introduction to this so great a promise? See it, and wonder at it! Thou hast not called upon me, O *Jacob*, but, thou hast been weary of me, O *Israel*: Thou hast not brought me the small cattle of thy burnt-offerings: Thou hast bought me no sweet cane with thy money; but hast made me to serve with thy sins, and wearied me with thine iniquities ^l: I, even I (whom thou hast dealt so ungratefully with and disingenuously, even I) am he that blotteth out thy transgressions [for mine own sake] ^m. And this was a great thing they looked not for; as indeed, considering themselves, and what their de-

^a Gen. 18. 11, 14. ^e Gal. 4. 23, 28. ^f Rom. 2. 8. Gal. 3. 29. ^g Jer. 32. 30, to 35. ^h Jer. 37, to 44. ⁱ Chap. 8. 12. ^k Isa. 43. 25. ^l Jer. 22, 23, 24. ^m Jer. 25.

meantour had been, they had no reason to look for it. From all which it is clear, that *grace* respects not the *worthiness* of men in what it does for them; nay, it must respect their *unworthiness* rather, as that by which *grace* is more illustrated, and the glory thereof more advanced; in that, *where sin abounded, grace did much more abound* ⁿ. And *Paul* proclaims it as verified on himself; *I was a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and injurious: But I obtained mercy; and the grace of our Lord was [exceeding abundant]* ^o: And hereupon he falls to adoring that *grace*; *Now to the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever, Amen* ^p.

The riches of mercy is made out by *saving the chief of sinners*, and in *quickning them when dead* ^q: And it is very observable, that the apostles, whenever they mention the *grace* of God in *saving, quickning, &c.* give not the least intimation of mens *worthiness, preparedness, compliance*, or any such thing; but [*dead in sins*] and [*quickning*] come one on the neck of the other (as light does upon darkness, which in no sort induces the light, or prepares the dark earth or air for it) as is abundantly evident in all their epistles: And how oft does the Lord declare against all the pretensions of men, as to their *activeness* in this matter, in *Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Hosea, &c.*? And, as a bar to those pretensions, *the holy people* he calls *a people sought out*; and proclaims, *I am found of them that sought me not*. This I shall end with a very observable instance within my own memory; and I bring it not in for proof, but illustration. I knew a man, who, when he came under convictions, endeavoured with all his might to stifle them: His convictions grew stronger, and he hardened himself against them: He saw their tendency; but was so opposite to it, that he resolved in express terms [he would not be a *Puritan* whatever came of it.] To the church he must go, his master would have it so; but this was his wont, to loll over the seat, with his fingers in both his ears: (Here *general or conditional grace* was surely nonplus'd.) But a *chosen vessel* must not so be lost: Now steps in *electing grace*, and, by a casual slip of his elbows, drew out the stoppers, and sent in a word from the pulpit, which, like fire from heaven,

ⁿ Rom. 5. 20, ^o 1 Tim. 1. 13. ^p Jer. 17. ^q Eph. 2. 1, 4.

melted his heart, and cast it in a new mould. Surely in this the Lord did not wait for the man's compliance or improvements; his work was not originated *thence*, nor dependent thereon.

Arg. II. If all that *pertains* to salvation were not given *freely*, salvation itself should not be of *grace*: For to him that *worketh* is the reward not reckoned of *grace*, but of *debt* [†]. But salvation is of *grace*, Eph. ii. 5. *By grace ye are saved*. And again, Ver. 8. *By grace ye are saved through faith*: Where also, lest the adding of faith should occasion a lessening of that *grace*, or seem to detract from the *freeness* of it, he cautiously subjoins, that *this faith* is the work of that *grace*, [Not of yourselves, it is the gift of God.] For, if *grace* be perfectly free in *choosing*, it must be answerably free in *giving* and *applying* the means to bring about the end it hath chosen us to: For if the effect of the means should depend upon something to be done by men, which *grace* is not the doer of, then works would put in for a share in the glory of mens salvation; and so the *grace* of God would be dethroned, and be as if it were not; *grace is no more grace*, as is argued in *Rom. xi. 16*.

Arg. III. Spiritual blessings must be given *freely*, and of *pure grace*, because the natural man cannot perform any such act as might be motive for such a gift. Things *materially* good they may do, as *Cain* in offering the first-fruits; but not *acceptable*, because not done in the due manner, that is, in *faith*; the want of which makes *incense* itself an *abomination* [†]. If without *faith* it be impossible to please God, then it must be impossible to do ought *before* you believe, that may move God to give you *faith*. Salvation is promised to *faith*, remission of sins to *repentance*, the blessed vision to *purity of heart*: But we find not these *graces* promised to any act or qualification inferior to, or going before, the *graces* themselves: Our *holy calling*, and the *washing of regeneration*, we are not entitled to by *works of our own* [‡].

Arg. IV. If any of the requisites to salvation should be given upon condition, reason would it should be *that* which in worth and virtue containeth all the rest, and without which the rest had never been, or been of none effect, and that is

our

[†] *Rom. 4. 4.* [†] *Isa. 1. 13, 14.* [‡] *2 Tim. 1. 9. Tit. 3. 5.*

our Lord Jesus Christ; of whom it is said, that *all the fulness of the Godhead dwells in him bodily* ^u, and that *out of his fulness all grace is received* ^x: The giving of whom was the most superlative commendation of God's love to men ^y, and is therefore termed *the*, or *that Gift of God* ^z, being such a Gift as comprehends all others. And as touching the *free and unconditional giving of Christ*, see that antient authentick record in *Gen. iii. 15. It shall bruise thy head*: Wherein is contain'd an absolute free promise to send the *Son of God* in human flesh, to be a Redeemer. And we evidently know, that his *actual coming and performance* thereof was not suspended on any desert or worthiness of men: How could it, when after the fall they did not, nor could do, any thing but what might turn his heart more against them? For evidence hereof, we need not go out of the context: Do but observe the first *Adam's* carriage, and the manner of it, a little before the promise was made: First they believe the *serpent* rather than *God*; then they break the commandment of life, when they had neither need nor occasion so to do. This done, and finding themselves lost, they do not so much as seek after *God* for help, but rather to *hide* themselves from him; so far from confessing themselves faulty, that they charge *God* foolishly, and shift the blame of their miscarriage upon him; *The woman whom [thou] gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree*;— And *the serpent* (which also is a creature of thy making) *he beguiled me, &c.* Here's nothing in their deportment, that looks like the motive of such a promise. But, tho' they run from *God*, he will not so part with them; yea, he follows them, finds them out, and for a door of hope *freely* pronounceth this gracious promise of sending his Son to destroy this old serpent, the devil; and consequently the serpentine nature, that had now instill'd and mingled itself with theirs. It is the first promulgation of the gospel, and speaks with as much absoluteness as words can express. *It [shall bruise] thy head*. This I insist the more upon, because it is the *first* that was made in time, and *that* out of which all following promises are reduced.

The intent of this promise was *Adam's* recovery and comfort.

Q 3

^u Col. 2. 9. ^x John 1. 16. ^y Rom. 5. 8. ^z John 4. 10.

fort, who doubtless at this time was in a very disconsolate condition, as lying under a fresh sense of the happiness he had lost, and the woful estate he was now plunged into; and therefore 'twas necessary (if *Adam* shall have comfort by it) that the terms thereof be altogether free and absolute; For suppose them to be conditional, as, namely, if *Adam* should now repent and convert himself; if he shall better improve a second stock, (or rather the cankered remnant of that he had at first) my Son *then* shall come into this lower world, to still that enemy and avenger; his life shall go for thy life; I will be friends with thee, and restore thee to thy former state: All this, and more of this kind, had yielded but little comfort or hope to a guilty and defiled conscience, who found himself not only naked, and wholly bereft of his primitive righteousness, but at enmity with his Creator, and a bond-slave to Satan: For such reasonings as these would have broke in like a flood, to bear down and stifle all hopes of future success; viz. If when I was in so blessed a state, and endow'd with power to keep it, upon so slight a temptation I yielded and fell; how shall I rise now I am down, and my strength is gone? If when I had freedom of will, and stood upright, I so easily warp'd into crooked paths; how can I hope to return, and do better, now my will is so perverted, and bent a contrary course? If whilst I had eyes in my head, and saw things with clearness, I yet lost my way and wandered; how should I think to recover it, being now both sadly bewildred, and my eyes put out? How should I bring a clean thing out of an unclean, who kept not my heart clean when it was so? How should I gain more with fewer talents, who ran myself out of all when I had abundantly more? Grapes will not grow upon thorns, nor figs on thistles: Nay, were my primitive state restored to me on the former terms, I could not expect to keep it, having this woful experience of so causeless and dreadful apostasy, &c.

It was therefore importantly necessary, that this first promise, made upon so great and solemn an occasion, and bearing in it all the hopes and comforts of God's people to eternity, should be *thoroughly free and absolute*, and not depend in the least upon any good thing to be done by men as the condition of it. And, if Christ be given *freely*, there's good ground

of arguing thence the free giving of *lesser* things: For, *He that spared not his Son, how shall he not with him freely give us all things* ^a? Is not *the life more than meat* ^b? Is not *Christ* more than faith and all grace? Has God given us the flesh of his Son, which is meat indeed; and will he not restore our withered hand to receive it? It cannot be; especially considering, that *this* may be done with a *word*; and without *this*, the other would be lost, and as water spilt on the ground. But tho' this promise of *Christ* be virtually a promise of all grace, yet, because of our slowness of heart to believe, and to win us off from our legalizing notions, the Lord condescends to gratify his people in *words* as well as *substance*: And therefore,

Arg. V. To make it expressly evident that all spiritual blessings are *perfectly free*, he hath put them all into absolute promises. Not that all promises run in that tenor: Many of them have conditions annex'd, which also (in their place) have a very significant usefulness; 1. As proofs of our willing subjection to God ^c. 2. As directives by what mediums we must get to the blessedness design'd us ^d, and how qualified for the enjoyment of it ^e. 3. As marks and evidences of our being in the way to it, and of those to whom it doth belong ^f. But this annexion of conditions does not imply a power in men to perform them; tho' perform'd they must be, before we come to the promised reward: Nor does the effect of those promises depend upon any act to be done by us, which some other promise doth not provide us with. But that great fundamental promise, on which is founded *our hopes of eternal life*, was *absolute*; 'twas *given afore the world* ^g. Tho' dearly conditional to him with whom the compact was made, yet perfectly free and absolute to us; and therefore the adding of conditions to *after* promises, may not be taken as invalidating that *first* promise, or as a defeazance to it. 'Tis a scripture-maxim, *That the covenant which was before confirmed of God in Christ, the law (which was four hundred and thirty years after) cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect* ^h. The like may be said of pro-

O 4

mises

^a Rom. 8. 32. ^b Matth. 6. 25. ^c Gen. 22. 12. ^d John 3. 16. & 14. 6. ^e Matth. 5. 8. ^f 2 Cor. 7. 1. ^g Mark 16. 16. Rom. 8. 1. John 10. 9. ^h Tit. 1. 2. ⁱ Gal. 3. 17.

A Practical Discourse

promises made in time, viz. That the conditionality of some does not make void the absoluteness of others. As the law was to Christ, such are conditional promises to the absolute; they shew what we should be and do; and, by consequence, that we can neither be nor do as we should; and thence infer to us the necessity of divine grace to undertake for us: And then indeed, and not till then, is the freeness of grace adorable, which promiseth help in terms of an absolute tenor. And accordingly we find, that whatever is in one scripture made the condition of acceptance with God, and eternal life; in other scriptures those very conditions are promised without condition: Some of which we have a prospect of in the following balance, which, being that of the sanctuary, may well be allow'd to cast it. Nor would it be once debated, if men knew their interest; for interest will not lie.

Conditional Promises.

Wash ye, make you clean; cease to do evil; learn to do well: Come now, and let us reason together; and though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snowⁱ.

Repent and turn; so iniquity shall not be your ruin^m. Make you a new heart, and a new spiritⁿ.

Hear, and your soul shall live^o. If thou shalt seek the Lord thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with thy whole heart^p.

Then shall we know, if we follow on to know the Lord^q.

Promises of the Condition.

Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: From all your filthiness will I cleanse you^k. I will forgive your iniquity; and your sin I will remember no more^l.

I will put a new spirit within youⁿ. A new heart also I will give you; and a new spirit will I put within you^p.

Thou shalt return, and obey the voice of the Lord^q. They shall return unto me with their whole heart^r. I am found of them that sought me not^u.

Thou shalt call me, My Father, and shalt not turn from me^v.

ⁱ Isa. 1. 16, --- 18. ^k Ezek. 36. 25. ^l Jer. 31. 34. ^m Ezek. 18. 30. ⁿ Chap. 11. 19. ^o Ezek. 18. 31. ^p Ezek. 36. 26. ^q Isa. 55. 3. ^r Deut. 4. 29. ^s Deut. 30. 8. ^t Jer. 24. 7. ^u Isa. 65. 1. ^v Hos. 6. 3. ^w Jer. 3. 12.

of Effectual Calling.

217

Conditional Promises.

Circumcise therefore the fore-skin of your heart ^a.

Return, O backsliding children ^b.

If ye be willing and obedient, ye shall eat the good of the land ^a.

I will yet for this be enquired of by the house of Israel ^a.

He that endureth unto the end, the same shall be saved ⁱ.

Promises of Condition.

The Lord thy God will circumcise thine heart ^a.

I will heal their backslidings ^c.

Thy people shall be willing ^c. I will cause you to walk in my statutes ^f.

I will pour upon the house of David, the Spirit of grace and supplication ^b.

They shall not depart from me ^k. Who shall confirm you unto the end ^l.

These are some of those many exceeding great and precious promises, by which we are made partakers of the divine nature ^m; and, if duly considered, would much conduce to establish the present truth, which affirms the absolute free giving of all things pertaining to life and godliness ⁿ: And this nothing more plainly contradicts, than to make the dispensements of grace to depend on the wills and improvements of natural men; to exclude which, is a principal scope of absolute promises, *that no flesh should glory in his presence ^o*; since it is God that worketh all in all, both to will and to do, and that of his own good pleasure ^p.

There are yet divers things alledged against this doctrine, which the holy scriptures, with reasons drawn from thence, and sanctified experience, do afford a plentiful bar and answer to: And this service they have done us, to bring some things to mind (before omitted) which may prove to the further clearing and confirmation of the truth.

Object. *All men universally, (others as well as those you call the elect) are endowed with means sufficient for salvation.*

Ans/w. It shall be far from us to lessen the means afforded to any, or their sin in not living up to what they have: They have all means to be better than they are; and yet we

can-

^a Deut. 10. 16. ^a Deut. 30. 6. ^b Jer. 3. 14. ^c Hos. 14. 4. ^d Isa. 1. 19. ^e Psal. 110. 3. ^f Ezek. 36. 27. ^g Phil. 2. 13. ^h Ezek. 36. 37. ⁱ Zech. 12. 10. ^j Matth. 24. 13. ^k Jer. 32. 40. ^l 1 Cor. 1. 8. ^m Jer. 3. 30. ⁿ 2 Pet. 1. 4. ^o Jer. 3. ^p 1 Cor. 1. 29. ^q 1 Cor. 12. 6. ^r Phil. 2. 13.

cannot assent, that all men *now* (since the fall) have the sufficiency alledged: For, of all the rest, the name of *Christ*, and faith in him, must not be excluded; but these *all* men have not. In a great part of the world *Christ* is not so much as named, and *how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard*? And, where the gospel is, *all men have not faith*. For men to believe (or fancy rather) that some excellent person hath interpos'd an atonement, to keep off vengeance from sinful men, (as some speak) is not to believe on the name of the Son of God; but rather to erect an altar to an unknown deity, and to worship they know not what. Our Saviour tells the *Jews*, (who *knew* that *Messiah* cometh) *If ye believe not that [I] am [he], ye shall die in your sins*. For other reasons also, we cannot admit the objection: 1. Because it sets man in the *same* state *now*, as *before* the fall; *then*, indeed, they had a sufficiency to retain their present state; but, ever since, *all* are born children of wrath, and enemies to God. 2. Because the objection, while it *seems* to magnify *common* grace, it nullifies the *special*; as if God no more regarded his own elect than other men. 3. Because it lays a foundation for self-boasting: For, if all have but the *same* means given from above, the *betterness* of any must be from themselves, men must make themselves to differ; which is contrary to all reason, since the *same* means can have but the *same* effect upon subjects alike qualified. 4. Because the scriptures speak expressly the contrary, and that of those who had the likeliest sufficiency of any others, and yet they *could not believe*; and of believers themselves, that *they cannot think*; and of *Christ's* own disciples, (who, of all believers, had the highest means) that *without him they can do nothing*: And if such as *these* can neither *do*, nor *think*, where's the sufficiency boasted of? You say, They have power to believe, if they will; Not so; but, if they will, they have power. *Power* and *will*, in this matter, are the same thing variously express'd: 'Tis common to say we *cannot*, when nothing is wanting but *will*. And, for power to will, (if such a thing could be) without a will to put that power into act; it would signify no more than an arm without strength

¶ *Rom.* 10. 14. ¶ *2 Thess.* 3. 2. ¶ *John* 8. 24. ¶ *John* 12. 39. ¶ *2 Cor.* 3. 5. ¶ *John* 15. 5.

strength (which makes a shew, but can do nothing) like the feet and ankle-bones of him that was born a cripple. But is not *that* a deplorable kind of sufficiency, which leaves without hope, and without God in the world ¹? and yet such is the state of a very great part of mankind. You'll say, perhaps, they had a sufficiency, but by misusage they lost it: And can there be a more palpable instance of a thing's insufficiency, than its inability to preserve itself, and the general successfulness of it? But means may be proper enough, and in their kind sufficient, towards the production of such an event; and yet that event never succeed, for want of something else which also was requisite for it. Some of the *Jews*, by the evident testimonies of *Christ's* divinity, were convinc'd that he was the *Messiah*; but it came not up to a perfect work, *they did not confess him* ²; and this because *the arm of the Lord was not revealed to them* ³; that is (as *Moses* speaks) *the Lord had not given them an heart to understand* ⁴. Planting and watering are proper and sufficient in their kind, as means and secondary causes; but nothing as to increase, without a blessing from God. Who could reason more strongly than *Paul*? or speak more eloquently than *Apollos*? and yet the success of their ministry was, *as God gave to every man* ⁵: *It is God that worketh both will and deed* ⁶: *It is he that openeth the ear to discipline* ⁷, and sealeth instruction ⁸: When his hand is set to, then 'tis authentick and powerful, and not before. Of this, those ancient *Jews* are a down-right instance: They had means of being purged, and yet were not purged ⁹: But afterwards the Lord takes the work into his own hand; *I will sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean; from all your filthiness, and from all your idols will I cleanse you; a new heart also will I give you, and cause you to walk in my statutes* ¹⁰. By which it appears, that the Lord will not only afford them means, as afore-time, and leave the improvement thereof to themselves; (for *that* he saw would not do) but, now, he will take the whole upon himself: Not to exempt them from their duty, but enable them for it; adding also his own

divine

¹ Eph. 2. 12. ² John 12. 42. ³ Isa. 53. 1. ⁴ Dent. 29. 4. ⁵ 1 Cor. 3. 5. ⁶ Phil. 2. 13. ⁷ Job 36. 10. ⁸ Ch. 33. 16. ⁹ Ezek. 24. 13. ¹⁰ Ezek. 36. 25.---28.

divine power to make the means *effectual*; as is plainly implied in that of the prophet *Jeremy*, *I will bring it health and cure, and I will cure them*¹; that is, he will give them an *honest* and good heart, which *shall bring forth fruit to perfection*². These are the means proper and sufficient for salvation; and less than this will not do.

Object. *They have as full a sufficiency as is meet and just for God to give.*

Ans. 1. Is it meet and just to do good? Why not then the chiefest good that men are capable of, which is, to have their hearts perfectly turned to God, and united to him for ever? 2. The objection attributes more to man, in the business of his salvation, than to God: For, if all that God can *justly* or *meetly* do, in order thereto, will not save him, without something done by himself which God is not the doer of; then man will be reckon'd *chief* agent in the work, and so *the ex* will *boast itself against him that handles it*³. Suppose a plaister or medicine to be made of twenty ingredients, and one of them to be of that sovereign virtue, as to influence all the rest; all which, if that be wanting, will but ulcerate the wound, or heighten the distemper; *that one* must be counted the *principal*. 3. It is not to be supposed, that the great and only wise God would set up a creature whose will he cannot justly and meetly over-rule, especially in things requisite to the very *end* for which he was made; nor, that he should make him for *such* an end, as that any thing *conducibile* thereto may not meetly and justly be done in order to its accomplishment. 4. It would not answer the end of *Christ's* receiving gifts for men, yea, for the *rebellious*, to bring in whom, *all* power was given to him. Suppose a general should take in the lesser forts of a revolted city, but leave the fort-royal, which commands all the rest, in the enemy's hand; shall he tell his prince, they *would* not yield, and that, being men of reason, he thought it not fair to *force* them? would this be a fair account of his expedition? I trow not; for it would be to say, in effect, that he did not reduce them because they were rebels. 5. It cannot be righteous or meet for men to affirm, nor for the honour of sove-

reign

¹ Jer. 33. 6. ² Luke 8. 15. ³ Isa. 10. 15.

reign Majesty to admit, that the creature's will should limit, divert or frustrate the will and intent of the Creator. Shall it be at the will of one possess'd, whether or no the devil shall be cast out? Shall every base and pitiful lust have a negative vote to that which has pass'd the Trinity's fiat? It was religiously said of one, *I will not have him for my God, that hath not power over my will.* And, lastly, Suppose a man craz'd in his head, and you intend him an honour or office which he never will be capable of without the full use of his reason; is it not *meeter*, and doth it not argue an higher degree of love, prudence and justice, to cure his distemper, tho' in a way contrary to his present mind, than to wait his complying with your prescriptions, which (as he is) he'll never understand? And what hinders but that God may do so by his people, even give them an heart to know him, and to fear him for ever, save only that this boggy principle of human liberty will not comport with it?

Obj. *But, if a sufficiency of means to repent and believe be not afforded to all, how shall God be just in punishing for neglects?*

Ans. The justice of God will not need our salving, especially by a balm of *our* making: Whether he judge or justify, he is just in what he doth, tho' purblind reason sees now *how*. His judgments are a great deep, not to be fathomed by human comprehension. In sounding at sea, will it follow that there's no bottom, because your line will not reach it? God dealt not so (in respect of means) with any nation as with *Israel*: And the men going with *Paul* to *Damascus*, the Lord would not give *them* to see his face, nor to hear his voice, both which he vouchsafed to *Paul*; and yet he needs no vindication or apology for punishing his unbelief: *They that have sinned without law shall perish without law*, Rom ii. 12. Besides, men are justly obnoxious to punishment, for neglecting, or not improving, the means they have; albeit those means, when made the best of that *nature* can, will not save them: They are punishable for not feeding and not clothing; and yet, by doing these, men are not justified. The least transgression lays open to wrath; and we cannot, by keeping some commands, compensate the breach of *others*.

Obj. *Where*

Obj. Where it is said, I will write my law in their hearts, and cause them to walk in my statutes, &c. there is no more intended by it, but the giving of things or means proper to such an end.

Ans. If one obliged to save your life should thus expound his engagement, you would not think it good payment, nor that he had dealt faithfully with you. The sense objected cannot be the mind and limit of that most gracious promise: For, 1. The promise must be as broad and large as the precept; It would else be too short to repose our confidence in. If then the precept intends as much as the words of it do literally import, then also doth the promise: But the precept not only requires an using the means that tend to the duty injoin'd, but the perfect, effectual performance of the duty itself, both as to matter and form; therefore doth likewise the promise. And then it will follow, that to write the law in the heart, and cause us to walk, &c. is more than a means; it is the *thing itself*. 2. That doctrine is hardly bestead, and not much to be credited, which, for its support, must put such a construction on the highest and most absolute promises that God hath made, as would render them weak and fruitless things. 3. Where God hath absolutely said, that such a thing *he will do*; for men to put in conditions or limitations, is to raze or interline a record; which is a *felonious act*: And how he will deal with those who *add to*, or *take from*, the words of his prophecy, you have recorded in the last chapter of his book: ('Tis ill trifling with sacred things.) 4. A physician that undertakes to cure a man of his phrensy, and to keep him in his right mind, is not said to have done his work, or made good his word (whatever means have been applied to him) if the patient continue his former distraction, or relapse into it. 5. There is no need or reason why the Lord should promise, or make shew of promising, *more* than he intends to perform (for that would be as a broken staff;) or, why he should express himself in terms of a *fuller* or more *absolute* engagement, than might in all points consist with his wisdom, justice, holiness, &c. 6. *Lastly*, The objection is further excepted against and rejected, not only as it makes man the chief agent in his own sal-

salvation; but as denying that God doth any thing more for them that are *saved*, than for them that *perish*. If men make themselves to differ, the gospel-design of *magnifying grace* is dash'd at once. And truly, 'tis matter both of wonder and grief, to see how industriously witty some men are, to enervate the promises of God; as if they could not accept of salvation, unless their *own wills* may stand partners with *his grace*.

Obj. But is it not said, *To him that hath shall be given* ^a?
i. e. *He that uses common grace well, shall have special?*

Ans^r. 1. If that gracious promise of writing the law in our hearts, intends only the affording of means, (which is but *common grace*) where shall we find a promise of the *special*? The well-using of *common grace* is indeed a duty incumbent upon all, but is no way meriting, or moving God to bestow the *special*: He is above all human motives, and is not wrought upon by them, as men are. This is seen by *Paul*, whom *special grace* took hold upon, even while in the geat of misusing that which is *common*: There was no space of time between his *being a persecutor*, and his *obtaining mercy* ^b. 2. What proportion is there, in value, between an handful of *clay* and a talent of *gold*? Infinitely more is the disproportion between the grace of *faith*, and *all* that a natural man can do for the obtaining of it: *They that are in the flesh cannot please God* ^c. 3. Whatsoever is not of *faith* is *sin*, but a man's *sin* cannot be a motive for his *good*: To plead your improvements, is to make your filthy rags an argument why God should accept you. Remember the condition he was in, that proffer'd *money* for the *gift* of the *Holy Ghost* ^d. Improvements for *faith* is no better. 4. It would not become the wisdom, power, or grace of God, to build on a foundation made ready to his hand: He needs it not, nor will it sort with his design, which is to have his *grace* acknowledged the *alpha* and *omega* of mens salvation. *Lastly*, A *will* to improve is as much from God as the *thing* to be improved. A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from above ^e: The *thing* given, and *power* to receive or improve it, are both from thence: And things from above are not

^a *Matth.* 25. 29. ^b *1 Tim.* 1. 13. with *Acts* 9. 4, 5, 6. ^c *Rom.* 8. 8.
^d *Acts* 8. 18, 19. ^e *Job* 3. 27.

not fetch'd down by men, but they come down when and upon whom the Father of lights pleaseth ¹.

Obj. Men are commanded to make them a new heart ; which must imply an ability so to do : For how can it be just to require things impossible, and that under so severe a penalty ?

Ans. Whatever is implied in the command, such allegations do surely imply, that the framers of them are much unacquainted with the scriptures, or extremely rash in drawing conclusions from them. There are reasons enough, and holy ends, which do justly warrant such commands, without supposing those to whom they are given, able now to perform them : As, 1. Perhaps the Lord speaks it ironically ; deriding their vain confidence, as *Elijah* did the priests of *Baal*, when he bids them cry aloud, for he is a god ^h : Will you hence infer, that *Baal* was a god ? or, that idols can shew things to come, because the Lord bids them do it, thereby to evidence their godhead ⁱ ? or, that *Adam* had advantaged himself by his fall, because the Lord says, *The man is become like one of us* ^k ? The like form of speech is sometimes used concerning *Babylon* ; *Take balm for her pain, if so be she may be healed* ; even then, when his device was to destroy her ^l. So here, as upbraiding those carnal *Jews* with their fond opinion of self-sufficiency, freedom of will, and power to do great matters ; *Make you a new heart, for why will ye die ?* q. d. You know that the end of these things is death : You pretend to an high pitch of ability, that men may be as good as they will, and turn when they please, and yet you go on in any evil way : If ye can make you a new heart, do it ; why will ye, by neglecting so easy a matter, fall under a sentence of death ? 2. To let men know God hath not lost his right of commanding, tho' they have lost their power of obeying. Time was when they had it, and power to keep it ; but, having lost it, God is not bound to restore it, nor unjust in punishing those neglects which arise from the want of it. It is man's duty to seek after God, tho' it be a [peradventure] whether they shall find him or not ^m. 3. Hereby to convince them, what was that one thing necessary, viz. the change of heart ; as, without which, all labour is spent in vain upon them ; as in the pa-

¹ *Yam.* 1. 17. ² *Ezek.* 18. 31. ^h *1 Kings* 18. 27. ⁱ *Isa.* 41. 23. ^k *Gen.* 3. 22. ^l *Jer.* 51. 8. with *Ch.* 50. ^m *Acts* 17. 27.

parable of the sower. The root must be holy before the fruit; grapes will not grow upon thorns; nor the stony, thorny, or high-way ground bring forth to perfection ^a. When *Ephraim* was turned, then he repented, and not before ^o.

4. That being convinced of the necessity of such a change, and finding their own endeavours wholly ineffectual (as *Paul* did) ^p; they might see also the necessity of free grace and of the divine power to do it for them, and so have their eyes turned off from themselves, and drawn thitherwards, even towards those hills of strength, which the church had an eye to when they prayed, *Turn thou me, and I shall be turned* ^q.

5. If the giving a command from God infers in men a power to obey; then it will follow, that men have a power to keep the whole law, and that without turning aside to the right hand or to the left; and to make themselves holy, as God is holy; for *these* are commanded ^r. But, 6. That the Lord intends not such a conclusion should be made upon his commands, appears from the 17th *Jer.* ver. 1. *The sin of Judah is written with a pen of iron, and with a point of a diamond graven on the table of their heart, i.e.* so as not to be blotted out by human wit or strength. And therefore, 7. He tells them expressly, It is as impossible for them to make themselves a new heart, as for the *Ethiopian* to change his skin ^s: For who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean ^t? They that sanctify themselves, and they that offer swines flesh, shall both be consumed together, *Isa.* lxvi. 17.

Obj. *Why then are men enjoined attendance on the means, if there be so little in them?*

Ans. If there were no other reason or end, this were enough, that God had commanded it: That binds us to use the means, tho' not the means to effect the thing it is used for. Nor is the means so much to be considered, as God's institution and appointment; nor the use thereof to be rested on, but the grace and power of God giving influence thereto; who himself is not bound to means or method. Ordinarily he is found in his own way, and out of it we are not to look for him.

Obj. *But to what end is the gospel preached in terms universal,*

P

sal,

^a *Luke* 3. 12, 15. ^o *Jer.* 31. 19. ^p *Rom.* 7. 8, 9, 23. ^q *Jer.* 31. 18. ^r *Deut.* 5. 32, 33. ^s *2 Pet.* 1. 15. ^t *Jer.* 13. ^u *Job* 14. 4

sal, and universally to all, if some particular and determinate persons only can receive it?

Answe. The counsel of God concerning election is secret; the minister knows not who are the objects of it, and therefore must preach to all, according to his commission. The Lord deals in this, as in the matter of lots: *Saul* was fore-appointed to be king; yet all *Israel* must come together, and lots must be cast on the whole nation, as if the person were yet undesign'd ^u. The falling of the lot was wholly contingent as to men: Another might have been taken as well as he it fell upon; but the Lord disposed it, and cast it on the right person ^x. So touching the gospel, it is sent to a place where (perhaps) but one or very few elect persons are, and those only shall be taken by it; and yet it must be published to the whole city promiscuously: But the Holy Ghost, who *knoweth the deep things of God*, brings it to the hearts of those for whom it is prepared, and there it fixeth: Which the jaylor, *Lydia*, and other examples make evident.

Obj. *Man is a rational creature, and accordingly to be proceeded with: But this way and manner of conversion destroys all freedom of will, and makes conversion a compulsory thing.*

Answe. The will cannot be forced. The *man* may be forced to *act* against his will, but not to *will* against his will; or, he may *will* that to-day, which yesterday he willed *not*: But this change is so far from being an infringement, that 'tis rather an effect and demonstration of his freedom. There are three sorts of compulsion; violent, natural and rational. 1. *Violent*; when a man is constrained to *do* that which his *will* is *opposite* to: Thus the *Israelites*, to serve the *Egyptians*, and to go into captivity: So also *Paul* and other saints are led captive to *that* they would not ^y. But the *will* in conversion comes not under this kind of constraint, nor any thing like it. 2. There is a *natural* compulsion. Thus men and other creatures are compelled to eat, drink, sleep and breathe; there needs no violent hand to impose it, nor arguments to persuade to it; they do it by instinct, which God hath endowed them with, for their own conservation: This kind of compulsion is proper to the soul converted, in reference to a spiritual life and actions. 3. There is also a *rational* compulsion, which

^u 1 Sam. 9. 16. with Chap. 10. 20, 21. ^x Prov. 16. 33. ^y Rom. 7. 9.

which is nearest the case in hand : This is, when the understanding and judgment are *convinced* of the goodness, necessity, or expediency of a thing, which before he judged *otherwise* of. For this, see the *prodigal's* reasons for returning to his Father ^a, and the *lepers* for going to the *Syrians* camp ^a: Their reason told them, It was better to go where there was hope, than tarry where there was none. See also the arguments for the *saints* living to *Christ*; the love of *Christ* constrains them; they cannot but so judge, *viz.* that, if *Christ* died for them, they are bound to live to him ^b: Yet no breach of their liberty, albeit that other while they were otherwise minded.

The first of these (*viz.* that which is *violent*) our doctrine hath nothing to do with. It is true, there is a *drawing* in conversion, and there would be no conversion without it; *No man can come to Christ, except he be drawn* ^c. Which *drawing* implies an *averseness*, or at least a *disability*, in him that is *drawn*; and consequently, a kind of *force* or *extrinsical power* put forth upon him. But let me say, It is *such a force* as the inlightned soul most gladly subjects itself unto, and would not be from under the power and blessed influence of it for a world. Let it therefore be observed *how* the Father draws: It is in the most genuine and kindly way that can be conceived; he draws by *teaching* ^d: Not as *Gideon* taught the men of *Succoth* ^e, nor as the task-masters drew the people to their burdens ^f; but as *Jacob* was drawn into *Egypt*, who need not be *forced* to dislodge and remove his tent, when he found himself surrounded with famine, and heard there was corn in *Egypt*; that the king had sent waggons for him, and provisions for the way; telling him withal, that the good of all the land was before him; especially considering that his beloved *Joseph* was there alive, and in greatest honour, ready to receive him ^g. In like manner, when the soul hath a fight of the holiness of God, and of its own vileness; of the purity, straightness, and just severity of the law, with its own uncleanness, crookedness, guiltiness, and disability either to keep it, or bear the vengeance of it; that in God alone is all its blessedness, and that yet it cannot possibly come at him but as dried stubble to a devouring flame; and yet again, if he

P 2

comes

^a Luke 15. 17. ^a 2 Kings 7. 3, 4. ^b 2 Cor. 5. 14. ^c John 6. 44;
^d John 6. 43. ^e Judges 8. 16. ^f Exod. 5. 16. ^g Gen. 45.

comes not, he dies in the place where he is, and must dwell with everlasting burnings; and withal hears of a *Mediator*, who came from heaven to save such as himself is, and who casts out none that come to him, and by whom he may come to God both safely and acceptably: There will need no violent hand on the will; even *love to himself makes the soul wings*. There is indeed a violent (or rather almighty) constraint and casting out of him that did usurp upon the will, and pervert it, by deluding the understanding with false glosses and carnal reasonings; which being dispelled by the true light's shining, the will falls in with it, and follows with perfect freedom. Christ offered no violence to the *man*, when he cast out the legion; but thereby restored him to his proper freedom: For we presently find him at *Jesus' feet clothed, and in his right mind*^h; desiring *now* to dwell with him, the sight of whom *before* was a torment to him. Here, no man will say, the patient was *wronged*, tho' his will was *cross'd*; if any do, there's cause to enquire whether himself be yet in his right mind. When the faculties are put in order by renovation, the understanding is the spirit of the will; which therefore looks and goes the same way as of course, as the wheels did after the living creaturesⁱ, without any foreign or violent constraint: It hath *now* a spring within it, by which it is moved and guided (itself being also renewed and sanctified) according to this renewed light: As a needle that is rightly touched, needs not be forced to look towards the pole; it will do it by sympathy: *If the eye be single, the whole body is full of light*^k.

But, suppose the thing objected to be true, (namely, that in conversion the will suffereth violence) it no way deserves to be stiled *cruel* or *tyrannical*, as some (extremely tender in nature's concerns) do presume to speak, nor indeed to be complained of in the least, since the tendency and issue thereof is an infinite good. What *father* would not cross the will of his child, rather than see him destroyed by his fool-hardiness? Shall parents, as it were, force their childrens will for their good, and be blameless? and shall not much more the Father of spirits, that we may live^l? Was it not a mercy to *Jeremiah*, that *the word of the Lord was as fire in his bones, that*
he

^h *Luke* 8. 35. ⁱ *Ezek.* 1. 19. ^k *Mat.* 6. 22. ^l *Heb.* 12. 9.

he could not forbear speaking ^m; rather than be confounded for holding his peace? How much better is it to enter into life halt or maimed, than go into hell with a whole skin! I hope there is none so much besides themselves as to judge otherwise of it, or complain of their being compelled to go to heaven, tho' it were by a whirlwind and chariot of fire. At first, I grant, 'tis pure necessity drives to Christ; but afterwards, his personal excellency and loveliness constrain to abide with him; (a sweet and blessed compulsion!) And now you would not leave him again, altho' the first necessity of your going to him were quite at an end. But still we say, as before, that the will is not violated, but changed, and that in a due and orderly way, by being made subject to an inlightened understanding, than which there is nothing more pleasant and natural to it.

Inferences.

The inferences from this doctrine I reduce to two sorts;
1. *Cautionary*, to prevent the misusing so great a truth:
2. *Directive*, to draw forth some of the spirits of it into practice: And of these intermixedly and briefly, tho' capable of much enlargement. In general, take notice, that the scope and design of the doctrine is not to foster remissness in duty, nor to countenance a stupid or carnal quiet; but to set forth the fulness, freeness, and prevalent efficacy of divine grace, with the creature's nothingness (as to any considerable act) in this matter. More particularly:

Infer. I. Presume not yourself interested in the promise of eternal life, until you find in yourself those necessary evidential qualifications of faith and regeneration, or at least a truly earnest and restless pursuit after them; *I will not let thee go, except thou blest me*, Gen. xxxii. 26.

Infer. II. Let not the means be despised, or lightly regarded, because of themselves not sufficient to save. Where the means are, the Lord expects that men should use them; and we read not of any saved without, where they might be had.

Infer. III. Let no man sit still in the wilful or careless neglect of his duty, pretending, that, if elected, he shall surely be saved; if not, all he can do will not help him. Such a disposition argues a great height of pride, or fullness of

spirit, and enmity against God: Flee from it, as from hell; for 'tis truly that death which hell follows after: As, on the contrary, ye can hardly have a more hopeful symptom of your state, than a serious attendance upon God in his way. And, in seeking to know your election, begin at the right end, give all diligence to make your *calling* sure, and the certainty of your *election* will fall in upon it.

Infer. IV. Take notice, from the import and tenor of the contrary doctrine, what standing need and usefulness there is of those often repeated cautions, to *try the spirits, search the scriptures, take heed how you hear*; and not to be led by *fair shews in the flesh*. The more smooth and pleasing notions are to the carnal ear, the more to be suspected, and thoroughly examined before they pass. Let the drift of the law and testimony determine the question; and that will tell you, those doctrines are not to be held guiltless, that cry up that *excellent* creature *man*, with the strength and capacity of natural reason, the sufficiency of free-will-grace, power of improvement, (and truly I know not what, for they are not after the pattern of wholesome words) making *these* the great hinge whereon the design (that glorious design) of grace in election, the mediation of Christ, and the holy Ghost's operations, must all hang and move; yea, be frustrate too, and come to nothing; except the reason of man will dethrone itself, and submit to that which it reckons foolishness. *Godliness is a mystery* ⁿ, and a great one, ('tis a *spiritual* mystery) which it could not be said to be, if reason could comprehend it. With all your care and circumspection, flee from that dangerous quicksand, which the *Jews* sunk into and perished ^o: And how many in our days are in danger of it! It hath slain its thousands, for others single tens. As preventive of this, I would put in a threefold memorial.

1. That there is a *specifick* difference between *moral* virtues and *divine*, or holiness of truth. True holiness has all morality in it; but all that is called moral may be without true holiness, nor will ever rise to it; sublimation does not vary the kind, holiness must have a root of its own. He that best knew the nature of things, and what may be made of them, affirms it as irrational to think otherwise, as to ex-
pect

pect figs from thistles ^p. That they proceed from several heads, appears from their several ends. What rises from the divine nature, directs its course towards God, and ceases not until it arrive at him; and what rises in self, terminates there, as a circle; wheresoever it begins, there it ends, fetch it never so far a compass. *Paul* was a moralist of no ordinary size; his often quoting it, shews the esteem he once had of it: But, *when it pleased God to reveal his Son in him* ^q, he counts it *all but dung* ^r; which he would not have done, had the new creature sprung out of the old: But thus far he was, when he knew better things, from his former fondness; and so shall we. Think not, therefore, to find in yourselves the materials of gospel-holiness, or to raise them out of the dust of your natural endowments; which, tho' of good use in their place, will not bear of the right kind ^s, till headed by the *ingrafted word* ^t. He that thinks to draw saving graces out of natural principles, does but spin out his bowels to die in his own web.

2. You may not think to obtain special grace, upon your improvement of that which is common: He that does, builds on a wrong foundation, and is yet under a covenant of works; under which no man was ever saved, or shall be ^u. This was the case with those *who followed after the law of righteousness, and did not attain to it*: What was it that hindered? *They sought it (as it were) by the works of the law* ^x: And yet the Gentiles, *who sought it not, attain'd it* ^y. Where note (by the way) that those who do *not at all* seek after righteousness and life, are as likely to speed, as those who seek it *unduly*, that is, by works of their own. In vain is salvation looked for from the hills of natural freedom, free-will-grace, human improvements, or whatever else is of highest esteem with men: None in such danger of being broke off (that is, of losing *that* they profess and seem to have) as those who are *high-minded*, who stand on their terms, and will not yield without taking their baggage with them. It was the very same with these carnal Jews, *We have Abraham to our father, were never in bondage to any*

P 4

man

^p Mat. 7. 16. ^q Gal. 1. 15 ^r Phil. 3. 8. ^s Mat. 12. 33. ^t James 1. 21, ^u Gal. 3. 10. ^x Rom. 9. 31, 32. ^y Rom. 9. 30.

man ^a; and, *Are we also blind* ^a? If thy carnal heart hath been hankering that way, and is now brought off, bleſs the Lord for it; remember the danger thou haſt eſcaped, and come no more *there*: And bear in thy heart, as a frontlet between thine eyes, that good word recorded in *Jeremy*, which ſhews the danger of making *fleſh thine arm*, and the bleſſedneſs of *truſting only* in the LORD ^b. And this, I verily think, is the cauſe that ſome, who have made a fair profeſſion, do fall off and wither; they make the promiſes of grace *conditional*, and the efficacy of them to depend upon their free-will's diſpoſe, and treat them accordingly. Such faith is but of human extract; it is of *men*, and therefore it comes to nought; whereas, *if it were of God, it could not be overthrowen* ^c.

3. The *human* wiſdom is no competent judge in this matter. Ye may as well try metals on a brick-bat, or judge of colours by moon-light, as of ſpiritual things by natural reaſon; they are *above* it, tho' not *contrary* to it. Nor will the clearneſs of light *without*, help in this caſe: High-noon and midnight are both alike to one that was born blind; the light of the ſun, if ſevenfold, would but more dazle the ſight that is not adapted for it. Divine things are not viſible but by an organ ſuitably diſpoſed; in the want of which, the ſcripture itſelf is too oft perverted, and the *letter* of it ſet up to obliterate its *meaning*. The very diſciples of Chriſt knew not the ſcriptures, but as he *opened their underſtanding* ^d, and ſhone into it: And, enabled by *this*, they looked upon and handled the word of life as *ſuch* ^e; they *beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten Son of the Father* ^f; when at the ſame time the learned ſcribes, with all their moral and literal endowments, ſaw no ſuch thing, but counted him a *deceiver*, and one *poſſeſt* ^g. *The things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God*, and he to whom the Spirit will reveal them: *But, the [natural] man (while ſuch) receiveth not the things of the Spirit* ^h: *They are [fooliſhneſs] to him* ⁱ; *neither [can] he know them, becauſe they are [ſpiritually] diſcerned, and not otherwiſe.*

But,

^a *John* 8. 33. ^a *John* 9. 40. ^b *Jer.* 17. 5, 6, 7. ^c *Acts* 5. 38. ^d *John* 5. 20. with *John* 20. 9. & *Luke* 24. 45. ^e *1 John* 1. 1. ^f *John* 1. 14. ^g *John* 7. 12, 20. & *Chap.* 10. 20. ^h *1 Cor.* 2. 14. ⁱ *1 Cor.* 1. 18, 19. & *Hiab.* 1. 5.

But, he that is spiritual (endowed with power from on high ^k) judgeth all things; yet he himself is judged of no man ^l: No unspiritual man understands him, nor his principles; 'tis a new name which no man knows but he that hath it ^m. Hence they are called unintelligible notions; and, *What will this babler say? when he preached Jesus, and the resurrection of the dead* ⁿ. And, for this cause, the apostle still prays for those he writes unto, that God would give them the Spirit of wisdom and revelation, and inlighten the eyes of their understanding ^o. (Where note, that one of the great things they were to discern, was, the exceeding greatness of the divine power put forth in them that believe ^p; and, that they might abound in knowledge, and in all judgment; and this, that they might approve things that are excellent ^q, or try things that differ, as the margin hath it.) So, for the Colossians; he ceased not to pray for them, that they might be filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wisdom and [spiritual] understanding ^r. Which scriptures plainly import, that there is not in every man this knowledge, nor yet enough in the best: For, why should he pray so solemnly for that which is common, or easily attained? So, then, wisdom is the principal thing ^s; and it must be wisdom from above ^t, without which the mind is not good, nor capable of right judgment, however garnished with human habiliments: But, endowed with this, those other will be serviceable handmaids; if the eye be single, the whole body shall be full of light. Those lesser lights are yet of use, and may serve to rule the night, (which they were made for) but, when the day-star is up, they vanish; then those wild beasts of human abilities ly down in their dens, and man goes forth to his work ^u, with another kind of skill and power than ever he had before, and with better success. Therefore get wisdom, and with all thy getting, get understanding ^x: 'Tis a well-spring of life to him that hath it ^y: The image of God and eternal life begin here ^z. The first step towards it is your sense of its want; *He that thinks he knows any thing, knows nothing yet as he ought to know* ^a. The more

ye

^k Luke 24. 49. ^l 1 Cor. 2. 15. ^m Rev. 3. 17. ⁿ Acts 17. 18. ^o Eph. 1. 17, 18. ^p Ver. 19. ^q Phil. 1. 9, 10. ^r Col. 1. 9. ^s Prov. 4. 7. ^t James 3. 17. ^u Psal. 104. 22. ^x Prov. 4. 7. ^y Prov. 16. 22. ^z John 17. 3. Col. 3. 10. ^a 1 Cor. 8. 2.

ye know in truth, the deeper sense shall ye have of your scanty attainments. *He that will be wise, let him become a fool* (in his own sight) *that he may be wise* ^b. Whom God will teach knowledge, and make to understand doctrine, he weans from the milk, and draws from the breasts ^c of their mother-wit and carnal understanding. Your next step is, to seek wisdom where 'tis to be had, viz. at the fountain-head, *the Father of lights* ^d. He that thinks to obtain of himself (a phrase too much in use with some) goes to a wrong door; and is but as likely to speed, as a beggar that asketh an alms of himself: And hence it is, that, in so many seekers, there are so few that find. When *Solomon*, from a sense of his childhood in knowledge, sought wisdom of God, he obtain'd it; when of *himself*, tho' better stock'd than before, he failed; *I said I will be wise, but it was far from me* ^e: He seem'd (at this turn) to be of the free-will persuasion, and he sped accordingly. He therefore puts upon this course a mark of ignominy; *He that trusteth to his own heart is a fool* ^f. I heartily wish it may not be said to any among us, *Thy wisdom and thy knowledge, it hath perverted thee* ^g. And, having once got this spiritual faculty, preserve it like fire upon the altar, let it never go out ^h: And, for your growth in it, live up to what you know; *He that will do his will, shall know of his doctrine* ⁱ.

Infer. V. If the divine power be so absolutely necessary, then rest not on means or ministry, tho' the best; use them as means, but still have your eye towards that power and grace which alone can make them effectual. *Elisba* smote the waters with *Elijah's* mantle; but it was the [God] of *Elijah* that parted them hither and thither, to make a way over ^k. Men rolled the stone from *Lazarus* his grave; but [Christ] was he who brought *Lazarus* forth ^l: So, the minister preaches Christ; but 'tis God only that gives an understanding to know him. Our business is, to mind our duty, and to have our faith in God as the principal part of it: For he it is, who is both the *maker* of our plaister, and the *layer* of it on; who also doth influence and manage it for us, from

^b 1 Cor. 3. 18. ^c Isa. 28. 9. ^d James 1. 5. ^e Eccl. 7. 23. ^f Prov. 28. 26. ^g Isa. 47. 10. ^h Lev. 6. 13. ⁱ John 7. 17. ^j 2 Pet. 1. 5. ^k 2 Kings 2. 14. ^l John 11. 41, to 44.

from first to last; he is both *author* and *finisher* ^m; *It is God that worketh all in all* ⁿ.

Infer. VI. In looking over the several parts of this great work, and parties concerned about it, let not the grace of Jesus Christ be overlooked; nor let it be lightly considered, how little (indeed less than nothing) you or I have done to induce or help it on. See how manifestly our Lord and Redeemer approves himself the good Shepherd: He is not satisfied to send his servants, but he goes himself; and such is his care and love to our souls, that he leaves no place unsearch'd, ranges the briars and thickets, baulks neither mountains nor valleys, no, not the valley of the shadow of death; nay, he knows that there he's most likely to meet them, and rests him not until he has found. He doth, as it were, forget the ninety and nine of his very sheep, that are already brought in, (yet so, as not to leave them without a good guardian) and all to fetch in a straggler; which having found, he doth not yet think it found, till he have it at home in the *fold*. It is not enough with him, to move, argue, persuade, threaten; and, if they will not comply, let them take their course, and feed on the fruit of their doings: His mercies are not like our free-will mercies to ourselves: To see them but deeper plunged by all he hath done for them, would not be to see of the travail of his soul and be satisfied. But, if all this will not do, (and he knows it will not) he apprehends his lost sheep, (as he did *Manasseh* and *Paul*, or as an officer does a fugitive) lays it on his shoulders, and brings it home; which plainly shews the sheep's averiness to return: For, if it would either *lead* or *drive*, the Shepherd would not trouble himself to bear it on his back. O that the love and faithfulness of Christ might have its weight on our hearts, to love him highly, and ourselves only for his sake, who saves us, at first, against our wills, in saving us from our self-willedness; and so making us willing to be saved indeed!

Infer. VII. If all that pertains to salvation be given in right of election, then let every soul that seeks for spiritual gifts, and would be sure to speed, apply himself to *electing love*; and let all your thankfulness for all that you have, or hope

hope for, be referred to that love: For *that* is the rock out of which they are hewn, the fountain and spring from whence they proceed. See the bounty and nobleness of it! Electing love not only provides your *home*, but sends you *waggon*s and *provision* for the way. Regard not *your stuff*, whatever you have of *your own*, be it good, or be it bad; for *the good of all the land is yours*. Make mention of nothing that is properly *thine*, except the *greatness of thy sins*, as *David* °; the power of indwelling corruption, as *Paul* †; thy inability to serve him, as *Joshua* and *Jeremy* ‡; that without faith thou canst not please God, nor give glory to him; that without holiness thou canst not shew forth his virtues, nor answer the end for which he hath chosen thee: And finally, that thou canst be sanctified by *that* will only, which wills thy sanctification †.

When *Moses* would prevail for the gracious presence of God with that people, what does he plead for it? *Remember* (says he) *this nation is thy people*; and *wherein shall it be known that I and thy people have found grace in thy sight? is it not in this, that thou goest with us* †? Here you see, he makes God's presence with them, an evidence of his having chosen them; and, from his *choosing* them, he draws an argument why he should be *with* them. *Moses* durst not say, '*They are a people that keep thy commands; they are persons of a very honest, ingenuous disposition* (as some speak); *a tractable sort of men, that have complied with thee, and better improved thy favours than their neighbours have done; therefore own them, and go with them:*' No, but *consider, I pray thee, that they are thy people; thou hast chosen them above all people* ‡; and therefore deal with them above the rate of thy dealing with other men.

In like manner, having receiv'd any special favour from God, sacrifice not to your better deservings; but as *Daniel*, who, tho' a man of singular wisdom, yet says he, *This secret is not revealed to me, for any wisdom that I have more than any living* †. Thus also we find *David* deporting himself, when *Nathan* brought him that gracious message from God, how great things he would do for him and for his house; what does

° *Psal.* 25. 11. † *Rom.* 7. ‡ *Josh.* 24. 19. *Jer.* 1. 6. † *Heb.* 10. 10.
† *Exod.* 33. 13, 16. † *Deut.* 10. 15. † *Dan.* 2. 30.

does *David* put it upon? *Thou Lord God knowest thy servant*; i. e. *Thou knowest that I have nothing which might move thee to this munificent bounty: But, for thy words sake, and according to thine own heart, thou hast done all these great things* ^x. This is the voice of the man after God's own heart.

Again, suppose you have done any signal service for God; retire into self-abasement, and magnify God that he was pleased to vouchsafe you that honour. Thus also did *David*, when, setting his affection to the house of God, he had gathered that huge incredible mass of treasure for the building of it: He wonders not so much at his having gotten it, (tho' that might well be wondred at) as that he had an heart so freely to devote it to that sacred use; *Who am I* (says he) *and what is my people, that we should be able to offer thus willingly? for all things are of thee* ^y. He acknowledgeth their willingness to offer, to be as much of God, as the offering itself. And *Paul*, having laboured more abundantly than all the apostles, put from himself the honour of it; *Not I, but the grace of God that was with me* ^z.

Three or four things, in seeking for spiritual blessings, be sure to keep still in your mind.

1. That you must be nothing in yourself. New wine is not for old bottles; the bottles must first be undone, and made up anew; or else the wine will be spilt, and the bottles perish ^a. All your imaginary righteousnesses, wisdom, strength, &c. must be parted from you; and 'tis as necessary as to leave your *made* ground to build on the *firm* rock.

2. That spiritual blessings are a gift, and will not admit of any plea which may seem to make them wages. *Lazarus* loved *Christ*, yet would not his sisters use that as their argument; but, *Lord, be whom [thou] lovest is sick* ^b. What the scripture holds forth as a motive with God, that you may plead, and that's his name: And indeed nothing else is pleaded at the throne of grace. Esteem not yourself the better for what you may carry with you: Think not to be accepted because of your *present*; it is not your *money* ^c, nor your *double* money in your hand, that will fetch you corn from above, tho'

^x 2 Sam. 7. 20, 21. ^y 1 Chr. 29. 14. ^z 1 Cor. 15. 10. ^a Mat. 9. 17.
^b John 11. 3. ^c Isa. 55. 1. John 7. 37.

tho' it may from *Egypt*: Silver and gold, your own works and worthiness, are of no value at the mint of free grace; but *where* it is, and *thence* ye must have whatever may render you welcome at the court of heaven.

3. Be not over solicitous how you shall speed; nor think you shall fare the worse for coming in so *tatter'd* and *pitiful* a condition. Free-grace is compassionate, rich, bountiful: You are not the less welcome because you bring nothing: The best qualification is to find yourself ill-qualified, empty, hungry, poor, naked, blind, miserable. Electing love hath provided enough, and *more*: Not *bread* and *water* only (tho' these are very welcome to an hungry and thirsty soul;) but *wine* and *milk*, *wine on the lees*, *a feast of fat things*^d: Not *aprons* made of *fig-leaves*, or *coats* of *beasts skins*; but *long robes of linen*, *fine and white*^e: Not money made of leather, or base metal, that would burden one to carry a month's provision of it; but *gold*, and of that the finest, and tried in the fire^f; which hath nothing of dross or cankerling rust adhering to it. And, if thou have but *little*, look on that *little* as an earnest of *more*; *To him that hath shall be given*: *Altho' thou be but smoking flax, he will not quench thee*^g. But, to make sure this important work;

4. Be sure you leave not out your Mediator, the Lord *Jesus Christ*. Electing love doth all in him, and so must you: Ask all in his name, and then say, *Lord, he is worthy for whose sake thou shouldst do this*. And withal, take heed of *patching*; join not law and grace together, lest the rent be made worse: The righteousness wherein you must appear before God, is not made up of divers sorts and pieces, partly his and partly your own; but a seamless vesture, wrought throughout of one kind of substance, and by one hand: In *this* you may approach with boldness, and touch the top of the golden sceptre.

Inf. VIII. Having so firm and impregnable a rock to found your faith upon; why should the greatest of difficulties, even the power of inbred corruption, discourage any soul from casting itself upon electing love, as that which is perfectly able, and the very design of it is, to *subdue* iniquity, as well

23

^d *Isa.* 25. 6. ^e *Rev.* 19. 8. ^f *Rev.* 3. 18. ^g *I/a.* 42. 3.

to *pardone* it? It chose us, not because we *were* or *would* be holy, but *that we might be* so ^a; and, to that end, undertakes the *whole* of our work for us. It is between us and sin, as it was between *Israel* and the *Canaanites*; until the Lord began to drive, they did not stir; they were giants, too big for grasshoppers to deal with; had iron chariots, and cities walled up to heaven: And yet that company of grasshoppers turn'd them out; and this, because the Lord, who gave them that land, was on the head of them; he went before them, and cut out their way for them: While he drove, they were driven; when he ceased, the work stood still ⁱ; nay, his own people were routed and put to the worse ^k. And we shall find both *Moses* and *Joshua* still using arguments fetch'd from the covenant that God had made with them, by which always they were supported. Let us do likewise, make election our *all*, our bread, water, munition of rocks, and whatever else we can suppose to want: Here we are sure of supply and safety; 'tis a tower that's really walled up to heaven; a never to be emptied cloud of *manna*, and a *Jacob's well* that's never dry: 'Tis deep indeed, and you have nothing (of your own) to draw with; yet be not disheartned; stay by it, and the well itself shall rise up to you ^l, rather than you shall want.

Infer. IX. Having done all you can, and in the midst of your doing, *walk humbly*, as living on another's bounty. Assume not to yourself, but ascribe the whole of your salvation, and of all the conducements, thereto, to electing grace, and hang on that root alone: Even faith itself, as it is the believer's act, is not to be rested in, nor to share in this glory. We may say of faith, as he to *Felix*, whom *Cesar* set over them, *By thee we enjoy much quietness*; but the honour chiefly belong'd to *Cesar* who gave them that governor. Give our faith its due; *accept always, and in all places, the benefits you have by it, with all thankfulness* ^m; for it does you many good offices, and you cannot indeed live without it: Only in the throne, let *grace* be above it; for that's the *potentate* which puts faith in that capacity, and maintains it there; and the truth is, true faith is best pleas'd with its own place. To this end, the Lord tells his people, it was not *their sword*,
nor

^a *Eph.* 1. 4. ⁱ *Psal.* 44. 2, 3. *Exod.* 23. 28. ^k *Josh.* 7. 4. ^l *Num.* 21. 17. ^m *Acts* 24. 2, 3.

nor *their* bow, that drove out their enemies. But, say some, it was the sword and bow which God put into their hands, and which they manfully employ'd: No, God will not have men arrogate so much to themselves; but to acknowledge, *It is God that subdues our enemies under us* ⁿ. The people with *Gideon* he reckons *too many* to give the *Midianites* into their hands; why? lest they should vaunt themselves against him ^o. Faith, and other graces, are mighty *only* thro' God: As they are his *workmanship*, so 'tis he only can keep them *going*, (as a watch or other engine cannot wind up itself.) To frame a *perpetual motion*, no man hath ever attain'd; no, not in trifling matters. As thou hadst no hand in changing thy heart at first, so neither of thyself in carrying on the work afterwards: All our sufficiency is of God; even all the strivings of the saints are *according to the workings of God in them* ^p. A good tree will bring forth good fruit; but not without sun, air, dew, and other heavenly influences; for, if separate from these, the tree itself will die: So, without a continual communication of vertue from above ^q, the new creature can neither *act* nor *live*. Depend therefore on that radical grace (*i. e.* on the *God of all grace*) for preserving and actuating the grace he hath given you: Rest not in this, that you know God; but rather, that you are known of him.

By this (I hope) the proposition is made evident, with something of its usefulness, *viz.* That whatever things are requisite to salvation, are freely given of God to all the elect, and wrought in them effectually by his divine power, as a part of that salvation to which they are appointed; and are all contained in the decree of election. And I cannot but reckon it one (and that a principal part) of those works of God that stand for ever; and is so perfect, that nothing can be taken from it, nor any thing added to it; and is a good introduction into, yea, and argument for, the final prelevance of *believers*.

ⁿ *Psal.* 60. 12. ^o *Judges* 7. 2. ^p *Col.* 1. 29. ^q *Cart.* 4. 16.



OF PERSEVERANCE;

OR

*The invincible Progress of BELIEVERS in
Faith and Holiness.*

FOR the firmer support and comfort of his people, (notwithstanding the present weakness of their faith, and daily infirmities of the flesh) as also, to allure and bring in others, who are hankering about the door, or yet in the high-ways and hedges; it hath pleased the holy and only wise God to indulge us with plain and positive assurance of the certain continuance, and going on, of all who have *once* believed and received the grace of God in truth, albeit that many concern'd in this assurance attain not to it. That faith and holiness do inseparably follow election, is shewn before: Our business now is to shew, that faith and holiness are of an abiding nature, and shall never be lost; and this is that we call PERSEVERANCE, which being the *crown* and *glory* of all the former points, and that which secures to us the comforts arising thence, being also as much impugned as any of those, the proof and confirmation thereof is apparently necessary, and tending to profit. And I trust, it shall not only appear that the doctrine is *true*, but also replete with arguments promotive of holiness, by which the contrary opinion will best be contradicted: For so it is, in the wisdom of God, that every truth has *that* in it, which properly tends to its own defence and establishment. 'Tis the property of men truly wise, to enterprize only attainable things, and things worthy their wisdom; as also, so to frame and model the *means*, as not to miss their intent: Much more must it become, and be incumbent upon, him who is Wisdom itself, so to do. If then the ultimate end of all things is the glory of God, and the second great end the salvation of his chosen; it may well be concluded, that the properest *means* for at-

Q

tain-

tainment are pitch'd upon, and those *such* as will compass his end. Hence also we may be satisfied, that all intermediate occurrences (however improper in their own nature, and *casual* to us) were all fore-appointed of God, and that by a decree most wise and fixed; and consequently are, and shall be, so dispensed and over-ruled, as not to hinder, but help on, and bring about, the thing principally design'd; which therefore shall not (*cannot*) miscarry, nor be *finally* defeated. However, therefore, men of corrupt minds may stumble at the word, change the truth of God into a lie, and turn his grace into lasciviousness; and some others, not of design, but by mistake, and unacquaintance with the true state of the question, may disapprove and object against it: Yet may not the truth be discarded, nor its friends shy to own it; but strive the more industriously, by their sobriety, meekness, holiness, and all good fruits, to make the world know, that *so the pure all things are pure*; while to other men (thro' the impurity of their own spirits) all things are defiled and turned into sin. And in particular, that the doctrine of God's unchangeable love to his chosen, and their endless abiding therein, is noway an inlet or encouragement to sin, or remissness in duty; but the most powerful strengthner against apostasy, and most effectual quickner to gospel-obedience.

The substance of what I intend lies in this proposition, *viz.*

That all and every one of God's elect, being once regenerate and believing, are and shall be invincibly carried on to the perfect obtainment of blessedness and glory.

Towards the evidencing of this truth;

I. Let us take in things of a *lower* consideration than that of eternal salvation, and observe how those persons formerly instanced, being destined of God to eminent service in the world, were carried thorow, and that compleatly, to the end of their work; notwithstanding the greatest of difficulties and natural impossibilities, which stood in the way to obstruct it: By which will appear the *certain effect* of God's purposes, and will contribute not a little to illustrate the point in hand.

1. I begin with *Abraham's seed*. In *Gen. xii. 7.* the *land* of

of Canaan is given them by promise: *Isaac*, in whom this seed should be called, was not yet born; nor yet, until both his parents were past age ^a. To help this, the Lord brings back the sun many degrees; makes it a new spring-time with them, and gives them *Isaac* ^b. When *Isaac* was married, his wife proves barren: After twenty years waiting, the Lord (in answer to prayer) gives her conception ^c. Now, two children they had; the elder of which the Lord rejects ^d, and the other, to whom the promise belonged, in danger every day to be kill'd by his brother, and so the line of the promise in danger of failing ^e. *Jacob*, to save his life, flees to *Padan-aram* ^f; there *Laban* deals hardly with him ^g, and, when he made homewards, follows him with evil intent: But the Lord in a dream takes him off ^h. No sooner is he escap'd from him, but *Esau* comes against him with four hundred men, fully bent to revenge the old grudge ⁱ: The Lord turns his heart in a moment, and melts him into brotherly affection; that, instead of destroying *Jacob*, he professes himself to be his guard and convoy ^k. When *Simeon* and *Levi* had so highly provoked the *Canaanites*, that it was a thousand to one but they would come and cut off *Jacob's* family at once ^l, the Lord causes a terror to fall upon them, that they do not so much as look after them ^m. When a seven years famine was coming on the land (likely enough to eat up poor *Jacob* and his house) the Lord by a strange providence sends a harbinger to make provision for them in *Egypt* ⁿ. When oppressed by the *Egyptians*, and all means used to destroy them, and that both with craft and cruelty, the Lord so orders the matter, that the more they were oppressed, the faster they grew ^o; and by an high hand brings them out at last. In the wilderness, they carry themselves as unworthily towards God, as ever people did; doing all that in their lay to cut off the entail of that good land, by their unbelief, and daily repeated rebellions; insomuch that the Lord threatens to dispossess them: But, for his promise sake made with *Abraham*, withdraws his hand, and spares them. I might instance also the great straits and dangers they were in

Q 2

^a Gen. 18. 11. ^b Chap. 21. 2. ^c Chap. 25. 21. ^d Ver. 23. ^e Chap. 27. 41. ^f Chap. 28. 2. ^g Chap. 31. 41. ^h Ver. 23, 24. ⁱ Chap. 32. 6. ^j Chap. 33. 4, 12. ^k Chap. 34. 25. ^l Chap. 35. 5. ^m Chap. 37. 28. with Chap. 41. 54. ⁿ Exod. 1. 13.

at the *Red-sea*, which the Lord divided for them; afterwards for want of water, which he brings them out of a rock; then for bread, which also he gives them from heaven: How they were denied passage by *some*, and way-laid by *others*; and yet carried on and delivered: And at last, how the Lord drove out those giants, whom they despaired of overcoming; and so gave them the land in possession, according to his promise hundreds of years before: *There failed not ought of any good thing the Lord had promised; it all came to pass* ^p.

2. *Joseph*. Little *Joseph* is one the Lord will honour, which in several dreams he intimates to him ^q: His brethren therefore hate him; and to frustrate his dreams (which signified their subjection to him) they conspire to kill him, ^r: And how shall *Joseph* escape? They are ten to one, and he the least. *Reuben*, who, being the eldest, was most concern'd in point of honour to hinder *Joseph's* advancement; he shall relent at the very motion of making him away, and, out of respect to his father, shall deliver him ^s. Well, tho' they will not presently kill him, they'll cast him into a pit, where, in all likelihood, he must perish: But, in the good providence of God, the *Ismaelite* merchants pass by in the very instant, ere any wild beast shall have found him, or his brethren determined worse against him ^t; to whom they sell him, and by them he is brought into *Egypt* (far enough out of *Jacob's* enquiry) and sold to the captain of *Pharaoh's* guard, a person likely enough to deal roughly with him. But here the Lord owns him; and, to bring him into favour, makes all that he doth to prosper: Which his master observing, puts the management of all his estate into *Joseph's* hands ^u. Now, there's fair hopes of his coming to honour: But how soon is it dash'd! *Joseph* being a goodly person, his lascivious mistress tempts him to folly; which the fear of God keeping him from, she misreports him to his master, charging her own wickedness upon him. Hereby *Potiphar's* favour is lost, and *Joseph* cast into prison, and laid in irons ^x. Now all hopes of preferment are gone, and what will become of his dreams? Yea still the counsel of the Lord, that shall stand;

^p *Ysbua* 21. 45. ^q *Gen.* 37. 7, 9, 11. ^r *Ver.* 18. ^s *Ver.* 22. ^t *Ver.* 24, 28. ^u *Chap.* 39. 3, 4. ^x *Gen.* 37. 7, 9, 17, 20. *Psal.* 105. 18.

stand; and this downfal of *Joseph* shall prove another step to his rising: And, to make way for it, two of *Pharaoh's* servants shall fall under their lord's displeasure, be put in prison, and committed to *Joseph's* keeping: Here they shall dream, *Joseph* shall interpret, and the event shall answer it. Now the day begins again to dawn upon *Joseph*, and, by the chief butler's restoration, some hopes of his enlargement: But this again is soon overcast; for the butler forgot him ^y: Notwithstanding all which, the providences of God do still pursue his decree, and cease not till *Joseph* is lord over *Egypt*, and his brethren bow down before him ^z.

3. *David*. God promiseth *David* to give him the kingdom, and anoints him to it ^a. What, notwithstanding all possible interveniencies? Yes, for the promise is absolute: Hath the Lord said it, and shall he not do it? If therefore *Saul* cast a javelin at him (unsuspected) to nail him to the wall; a sharpness of eye, and agility of body, shall be given him, to discern and avoid it ^b. If he determine evil against him, *Jonathan* shall advertise him of it ^c. If he send messengers to *Naioth* to apprehend him, they shall forget their errand, and fall a prophesying: And if he sends others, and others after them, they shall do likewise; yea, *Saul* himself shall turn prophet for a day and a night together, that *David* may have time to escape ^d. If he be in a city that will betray him, and not a friend among them to advise him of it, the Lord himself will be his intelligencer and send him out ^e. If *Saul's* army have compass'd him, and no way left to escape; the *Philistines* shall invade the land, and tidings shall come in the very instant, and take him off ^f. If an host do encamp against him, he'll not be afraid ^g: Why so? The Lord had made an absolute promise; and therefore, if no help on earth, he shall send from heaven, and save me ^h. Yea, *David's* wavering at times, and the weakness of his faith, shall not hinder it; and the reason of all was this, *The Lord took him to be ruler over his people, and therefore he was with him wheresoever he went* ⁱ.

4. *Josiah*. A child shall be born in the house of *David*, *Josiah* by name, who shall offer the bones of *Jeroboam's*

Q 3

priests

^y *Genesis* 40. 23. ^z *Chap.* 41. & *Chap.* 42. 6. & *Chap.* 50. 18. ^a *1 Sam.* 16. 12. ^b *Chap.* 18. 11. ^c *Chap.* 19. 7. ^d *Ver.* 20. — 24. ^e *Chap.* 23. 13. ^f *Ver.* 26, 27. ^g *Psalms* 27. 3. ^h *Psalms* 57. 3. ⁱ *1 Chron.* 17. 7, 8.

priests upon his altar ^k. If therefore *Athaliah* determine to destroy all the seed-royal, *Joash* shall be stol'n from among the rest, and sav'd ^l; and by him *David's* line shall be continued: And *Herziah*, tho' sick unto death, he shall not die, but be healed, as it were, by a miracle; and fifteen years added to his life, rather than *Manasseh*, who must be *Josiah's* grandfather, shall be unborn ^m.

5. *Paul*. *Paul* was a chosen vessel, appointed to preach *Christ* to the *Gentiles*, and at last to bear witness of him at *Rome*: And this must be done, altho' bonds, imprisonments, and death itself, do attend him in every place. If therefore they ly in wait for him at *Damascus*, and watch the gates night and day, to kill him; he shall be let down by the wall in a basket, and so escape them ⁿ. If all *Jerusalem* be in an uproar to kill him, the chief captain shall come with an army, and rescue him ^o; tho' no friend to *Paul*, nor to his cause. If more than forty men have bound themselves with an oath, that they will neither eat nor drink till they have kill'd him; his kinsman shall hear of it, and by his means the chief captain shall be his friend again, and grant him a sufficient convoy ^p; and this attempt shall be an occasion of sending him to *Rome*, where his last testimony is to be given. If *Jews* and *Gentiles* make an assault together, to use him despitefully, and to stone him, he shall be aware of it, and, by fleeing, save himself ^q; by which means also the gospel shall be further spread. But suppose he be left in their hands, and they so far prevail as to stone him, and drag him out of the city ^r; then, sure his work's at an end: No, all this shall not hinder, death itself shall not separate *Paul* from his work. It is not his being once stoned, nor his thrice suffering shipwreck, nor his being in deaths often, nor any thing else, that shall make void the purpose of God for his bearing witness of *Christ* at *Rome*; as is abundantly evident by the stories of him, and the event at last.

Other instances might be produced to the same effect; but by these we may take an estimate of the thing under proof, and rationally infer, that if the Lord be so exact and punctual in performing his word touching these lesser things, carry-

^k 1 *Kings* 13. 2. ^l 2 *Kings* 11. 2. ^m *Chap.* 20. 6. ⁿ *Acts* 9. 23.
^o *Acts* 21. 31, 32. ^p *Chap.* 23. 14. — 23. ^q *Chap.* 14. 5, 6, 7. ^r *Ver.* 19.

ing on his work through such a press of natural oppositions, much more will he be, in securing and bringing about the eternal welfare of his chosen: That as he dealt by his people of old; *he bore them upon eagles wings* ^c, (above the reach of danger) and *kept them as the apple of his eye*, with all possible care and tenderness) *until he had brought them to himself* ^e: So will he carry it towards his elect; for he values the world but little, save with respect to them.

II. Now, for a more direct proof of the proposition: Tho' two or three witnesses might suffice to establish it, yet since the scriptures do abound with testimonies for it, (the collection whereof may be very useful to us, for the help of our faith in a time of temptation, as also to fortify our soul against the assaults of such as teach final apostasy) I shall somewhat enlarge in reciting them, with some of those genuine deductions that flow from them. In the Old Testament are many petitions and resolves made by holy men, which import the truth of this doctrine; as, *That the Lord will perfect that which concerns them*: *That he will not forsake the work of his own hands* ^u: *That he will guide them by his counsels, and after receive them to glory* ^x; and that, in the mean time, *none of their steps shall slide* ^y; and this, because *it is God that girds them with strength, and he will make their way perfect* ^z: (with abundantly more; as also in Paul's epistles) In every of which is implied a promise of the thing prayed for, or concluded upon; for, without such a promise, they could not have done it in faith, nor justly have given them down as matter of instruction to others. But, we know, they spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost ^a; who knowing the deep things of God, what his decrees were, and what was contained in the *promise of eternal life before the world* ^b, drew out their hearts to believe, and fortified their prayers accordingly.

But, besides these, we have many express promises and affirmations of it. In the tenth of *John*, our Saviour says, *his sheep shall never perish*, ver. 28. which is, in effect, their faith shall never fail; for, safe they cannot be from perishing, without the securement of their faith. Again, speaking of the

Spirit

Q 4

^c Exod. 19. 4. ^e Dent. 32. 10. ^u Psal. 138. 8. ^a Psal. 73. 24.
^y Psal. 37. 31. ^z Psalm 18. 32. ^x 2 Pet. 1. 21. ^b Tit. 1. 2.

Spirit of holiness which believers receive from him, *John iv.* 14. he saith exprelly, *Whoſoever drinketh thereof, ſhall never thirſt; but it ſhall be in him a well of water ſpringing up to everlaſting life,* (then it ſhall not be dried up) *Prov. x.* 30. *The righteous ſhall [never] be removed, i. e. they ſhall never fall back into their former ſtate; and the reaſon is, be- cauſe the way of the Lord is ſtrength to the upright, v. 29.* Whether by [*the way of the Lord*] be meant *his way* or manner of dealing with upright perſons, which is, to increaſe *their ſtrength* (according to *Job xvii. 9.*) or, of the genuine property of God's ways, which is, to afford that peace and ſatisfaction to thoſe who walk in them, that they are daily more habituated and connaturalized to them, and eſtranged from all ways elſe; they are *both* to the purpoſe in hand, *Prov. xxiv. 19. A juſt man falleth ſeven times, and riſeth up again; he falls not ſo as to ly where he fell; he falleth not into miſchief, as the wicked doth; yea, he rather gets ground by his fall, as ver. 5. A man of wiſdom increaſeth ſtrength; from the ſenſe of his own weakneſs, he is led to ſtrength everlaſting, as was Paul, 2 Cor. xii. 10.*

Prov. xii. 21. There ſhall no evil happen to the juſt; then, not the greateſt and worſt of evils, which is, to depart from the living God. So, ver. 3. The root of the righteous ſhall not be moved: His fruit may ſometimes be blighted, or blown off, and his branches toſs'd with a tempeſt; but ſtill his root is where it was, his life is hid, and free from all commotion, and ſhall therefore renew both his fruit and branches; He that truſteth in the Lord, ſhall not ceaſe from yielding fruit.

Jer. xxxii. 40. I will put my fear in their hearts, that they ſhall not depart from me. This, ſay ſome, is the promiſe of affording them means, but not of effecting the end; there- fore ſee *Chap. iii. 19. Thou ſhalt call me my Father, and [ſhalt not] depart from me:* And this, becauſe he worketh effectually in them that believe^d; as at firſt in cauſing them to believe, ſo now in maintaining and perfecting their faith.

Pſalm lxxxiv. 11. The Lord withholdeth no good thing from them that walk uprightly. And if ſo, then continuing to walk uprightly, ſhall not be withheld from them: Which deduction is alſo warranted by this; *That the righteous ſhall*

hold on his way, and he that [hath] clean hands shall be stronger and stronger^e; as also from Prov. iv. 18. The path of the just is as the shining light, which shineth more and more unto the perfect day. And David further backs it, where, from his present faith, he concludes his future progress; I have trusted, I shall not slide^f; and this, because the Lord holdeth his soul in life, and suffereth not his feet to be moved, Psalm lxvi. 9.

Mark xvi. 16. He that believeth shall be saved: And John xi. 26. Whosoever liveth and believeth in me (says Christ) shall never die, i. e. He that once has faith shall never lose it: For to say, He shall keep it, if he do not lose it, (as some would give the sense) had been a comfortless and empty notion, and injudicious way of speaking. This is yet further confirmed by John v. 24. He that believeth [is passed] from death to life, and [shall not] come into condemnation: The reason of which is this, that their faith is founded on a Rock; which wind and waves may beat and brake themselves against, but never the Rock itself, nor that which is built upon it^g. He that trusteth in the Lord, is as mount Zion, which [cannot] be removed^h: No, not so much as one of the stakes of that tabernacle shall be removed, and that for everⁱ: They shall not be ashamed nor confounded, [world without end,] Isa. xlv. 17.

It would very much allay that superlative cause of rejoicing, [that our names are written in heaven,] if possibly they might be blotted out again; since we find in ourselves so great a proneness to revolt, which every one acquainted with his own heart must acknowledge: But we are sure, Christ would not propound to us a fallible ground of rejoicing; for, that kind of dependence, he is evermore calling us from. Believers are indeed sometimes foil'd, but never overcome: Tho' they fall, and that seven times in a day, (as was said) as often do they rise again: And 'tis no disparagement to their Leader, (nay, 'tis the glory of a general) to give his enemy advantages, and take them again at his pleasure, to his enemy's greater confusion and overthrow. Satan got nothing by his winnowing Peter: Peter lost some of

^e Job 17. 9. ^f Psalm 26. 1. ^g Matth. 7. 25. ^h Psalm 135. 1. ⁱ Isa. 33. 20. ^j 1 Pet. 2. 6.

of his chaff, which well might be spared; and the tempter lost many an after-advantage: For, the world of believers have been the more wary ever since. To this I shall only add that of the holy apostle, in *Rom. viii.* He was persuaded (that is, he was thoroughly swayed in his faith, to believe it for himself, and deliver it down to the ages to come, as a truth infallible) that *neither height nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord, ver. 38, 39.* He reckons up all that can be named; and, lest any thing might have slipped him, he brings in *height* and *depth*, as being those two extremes that take in all, and more than men can think: And then resolves, that even *these* shall not be able to do it. And surely, if neither the super-celestial height of God's holiness, nor the infra-infernal depth of sinful sin, shall separate from that day of glory which the sons of God were predestinated to, and for which they were both made and redeemed, called into, and gone for; then are believers roundly secur'd against final apostasy.

III. A third sort of evidence for confirmation are certain arguments or reasons why the saints must needs persevere in faith and holiness.

By [*needs must*] I understand no other kind of necessity than well consists with *perfect freedom*; such as was upon *Paul* to preach the gospel, which was a work he rejoiced in; and such as was upon *Jesus Christ* to bring home his sheep, and to lay down his life for them: He *must needs suffer*, *Acts xvii. 3.* yea, he was *strained 'till it was accomplished*, *Luke xii. 50.* That it was written in his heart, was no hindrance to the freedom of his will.

Arg. I. The first argument, in proof of perseverance, is founded on the saints *extract* or *original*; *They are born of God*¹. And this hath the force of a double argument;

1. As *God is their Father and eternal Root*. Our Saviour holds forth this relation, as the ground of our faith in prayer¹; and he begins with it himself, when he prays for his own glory, and that his disciples might be partakers of it². To the same end, he frequently useth that stile of *Father* in the gospel of *John*; (as taking delight in mentioning that relation)

¹ *John 1. 13.* ² *Matth. 6. 9.* ³ *John 17. 1.*

lation) *The Father himself loveth you* ^a; and, I ascend to my Father, and your Father ^o. It is to strengthen our faith in God (thro' himself) on the account of his Fatherhood to us. *The Father loveth the Son* ^p; and, he loves his believers, as he loveth Christ himself ^q: On which ground the apostle concludes, that he cannot but give us all things else ^r. Believers are the product of his love, both in respect of election and regeneration, and, being so, he cannot but have a paternal affection for them; to administer to them whatever tends to their sustentation and growth, and to keep off whatever would intercept or weaken his gracious influences towards them: *Having once loved them, he loves them for ever* ^s. They may therefore be confident, that *what he hath begun in the Spirit, he will not let end in the flesh* ^t; that, *having begun a good work, he will also perform it*: For, as they have their spiritual being from him, as the Father of it; so 'tis as natural to him to derive his virtues into them without intermission, as for a vine to send up its sap into its own branches, or the sun to cherish the plants of its own production. All the natural affections that are in creatures towards their own, are but drops of his immense fulness: A mother may possibly forget the child of her womb, but the Lord cannot forget his offspring; *That none may hurt them, (nor they themselves) he will keep them night and day, and water them every moment* ^u: *They are born by him from the belly, and carried from the womb; and even to their old age he will carry them and deliver them* ^x.

2. The new creature, as it comes from God, so it exists in him, and lives upon him; and 'tis natural to it, to seek its nourishment where it had its original: Nothing can satisfy it, but that great deep from whence it sprung; as a new-born child, that has not the use of reason, will hunt for the breast by natural instinct, and not be quiet without it. As soon as ever Paul was converted, *Behold, he prays* ^y. Having once received the Spirit of Christ, they cannot but incline after him, as *Elisha* did after *Elijah* upon the casting of his mantle on him ^z: It is natural to them, as for sparks to fly upwards.

They

^a John 16. 27. ^o Chap. 20. 17. ^p Chap. 3. 35. ^q Chap. 17. 23.
^r Rom. 8. 32. ^s John 13. 1. ^t Phil. 1. 6. ^u Isa. 27. 3. ^x Isa. 46. 3, 4.
^y Acts 9. 11. ^z 1 Kings 19. 19, 20.

They are said to be *baptized with fire*; not only because of its *purifying* nature, but in respect of its *aspiring* quality; it will be mounting, and not rest till it comes to its own *element*. Obstructions many it meets withal, but still it presseth onwards, and by degrees bears down all before it, and carries that with it in which it dwells, to the place of its birth; as the *dove* could not rest, 'till she came to the ark, whence she set out. This is lively set forth by our Saviour in *John vii.* 38. *He that believeth in me, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living waters*; [*rivers*] that bear down all opposition, and rivers of [*living*] waters: Not land-floods, which are but of short continuance; or standing-pools, subject to drying up; but *rivers*, and those *such* as have an immortal head. We see how all things tend to their centre; *The wicked sleep not unless they do evil*^a. They can bear the want of things most necessary to their *being*, rather than cease from sin: They are of the serpent's brood, and the *lusts of their father they will do*^b. Judas was a devil, and that carried him headlong to his own place^c. And if being born of the devil, habituates men with so strong and restless a bent to devilish lusts, the divine nature must needs work as efficaciously towards God, and God-like actions; his love constrains them^d: And, if it were not so, the *ingrafted word* had never born an human stock to heaven. The first-fruits of the Spirit possess them with an *earnest expectation and longing* for the harvest^e. 'Tis true, the remainders of the old man will still be opposing the new, and many contests there are between them: But grace (like him that is advocate for the king) will ever have the last word, and will also go out victor. Ye may see it in *Jeremy*; the word of the Lord was made a reproach to him, he therefore resolves to stifle it, and *will no more speak in his name*: But how succeeds this carnal resolution? *The word of the Lord was in his heart as fire shut up in his bones, he was weary of forbearing, he could not hold*^f. And *Jonah*, when he thought himself cut off, and in the belly of *bell*; Yet (saith he, yet) *will I look again towards thy holy temple*^g; (as the needle that is rightly touch'd never rests but in pointing towards the pole.) And, when obstructed

^a Prov. 4. 16. ^b John 8. 44. ^c Acts 1. 25. ^d 2 Cor. 5. 14. ^e Rom. 8. 23. ^f Jer. 20. 8, 9. ^g Jonah 2. 2, 4. Psal. 84. 6, 7.

in their course, they cry the more earnestly, *Oh, when shall I come and appear before God* ^h!

Arg. II. Another argument is taken from the graces themselves which are the subjects of perseverance, *viz.* faith and holiness: Which let us consider, first, as they are a gift; then, in the genuine use and property of them.

1. As they are a gift. They are of those good and perfect gifts which come down from above, from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, nor shadow of turning ⁱ. This attribute of God's *unchangeableness* is fitly and significantly added, to shew, that as good and perfect gifts are from God, and from him only, so, that he never changeth in his purpose concerning those to whom he once gives them, they are of those gifts which are *without repentance*: As also, that these his gifts do partake of his own *invariableness*, they cannot die nor turn to be any other than what they are at first, save only in point of perfection. There can happen no after-unworthiness in those he gives them to, which he did not foresee when he gave them, (which seems to be implied in the following words, *Of his own will begat he us*) and in no cause why he should withdraw them, which would not as well have hindred his giving them at first. As the word of God is not *yea* and *noy*, so neither are his gifts. They are also God's *workmanship*; And we know (saith Solomon) that *whatsoever God doth, it shall be for ever; nothing can be put to it, nor any thing taken from it* ^k.

2. Let *faith* and *holiness* be considered in the genuine use and property of them. Nothing so indangers the soul, as self-fulness; *faith*, therefore, was ordained to nullify that, and devolve the soul on another, *viz.* Christ; which the more it does, the safer it is; and, having once done it, it never undoes it again. *Faith* also is an active grace, and diligent, and therefore thriving; he that hath it, shall have more of it ^l, (then sure he shall not lose that he hath!) It is always travelling, and never tired; 1. Because it travels in the strength of *Omnipotence*, which never fains nor is weary ^m: And, 2. Because it works by love ⁿ, which is the most kindly and efficacious principle of service and great acts.

^h Psal. 42. 2. ⁱ James 1. 17, 18. ^k Eccl. 3. 14. ^l Luke 19. 26.
^m Jsa. 40. 26. ⁿ Gal. 5. 6.

acta. Love is an endless skrew; it has truly attain'd the perpetual motion, it enables to endure all things, and faileth not^o. All that God doth for his people is from love^p, and all that they do for God, grows from the same root; *they love him*, because *he loved them first*^q. Love is that which renders a work both pleasant to the agent, and acceptable to the object of it: Faith, therefore, working by love, shall never be weary of its work, nor fail of its end; *It is of faith, that it might be by grace*, and consequently *sure*^r. And as for *holiness*, (which is a disposition according to God, and capacities for the blessed vision) a little of it, in truth, is of infinite value; the very *smoke* of it shall not be quenched^s. And it would be strange if a thing so *precious* should be liable to *putrefaction*, but it is not; yea, it changeth other things, but is itself never changed. It is of a spreading nature; compared therefore to leaven, put into the soul, and hid there, 'till the *whole lump* be seasoned. It is of an *assimilating* property, there is an heavenly *tincture* in it, which sanctifies all that it toucheth; [*To the pure all things are pure*]^t. It also mortens for converse with God, and it draws and engageth the soul to him; *there* it is in its proper *element*, and out of which it cannot live: And by this converse it is both increased and sublimated.

A natural body, once in being, can never be reduced to nothing: How then should things of divine substance? They are *born of incorruptible seed, which liveth and abideth for ever*^u: And as the seed is, such will be the fruit; the older it grows, the stouter it is; *He that hath clean hands, shall be stronger and stronger*^v. They are the *holy seed*; and therefore, tho' they cast their leaves (at times) *their substance is in them*^w, by which they are all still renewed. Holiness is the seed of glory; and holy persons are in glory, (as to its kind and the certainty of their obtainment;) albeit it has no glory at present, in comparison of that which shall be, as the seed of a rose or lily, compared with the flowers they will grow into, and which are virtually in them. According with this, is that of our Saviour, *He that believeth [hath] everlasting life*^x: It argues the certainty of their perseverance; *The law of his*

God
^o 1 Cor. 13. 7, 8. ^p John 3. 16. ^q 1 John 4. 19. ^r Rom. 4. 16.
^s Matth. 12. 20. ^t Tit. 1. 15. ^u 1 Pet. 1. 23. ^v Job 17. 9. ^w Isa. 6.
 13. ^x John 3. 36.

God is in his heart, none of his steps shall slide ^a: And therefore he saith, *Destroy it not, there is a blessing in it* ^b.

Arg. III. Another proof arises from the *nature, extent, and design of providence*; or from the intent and purpose of God, in that great variety of things which believers are exercised with in the world. There are three things considerable to make out this argument;

1. *That there is a divine providence which governs the world*; as in dividing to the nations their inheritance, and bounding their habitations, at first; so, by continuing them in possession, or ousting them, at his pleasure; and this sometimes by very unlikely means, and over-ruling things accordingly. *Seir* being given *Esau*, and *Ar* to the children of *Lot*, and their term not yet expired, the Lord inclines them to let *Israel* pass thorow, and to give them meat for their money; whereas the *Amorites*, who were destined to destruction, he hardens their spirits, and makes them obstinate ^c, that they deny them passage, and come out against them in battle. So, when he would translate the *Chaldean* monarchy to the *Persians*, he enfeebles the one, but stirs up the other's spirits, and girds them with strength ^d. How oft doth the scripture repeat, that the Lord reigneth; that he puts down one, and sets up another ^e; that he doth according to his will in the armies of heaven, and amongst the inhabitants of the earth ^f? How evident is it in his humbling of *Pharaoh*, *Nebuchadnezzar*, and others? This providence reacheth to all manner of persons, times and things, and circumscribes them: It leaves not the least thing to a contingency; even ravens, sparrows and lilies; yea, and the hairs of your head are all numbred, and under the conduct of the providence of God ^g.

2. *That the design and course of God's providence is to accomplish his purpose*. As providence governs the world, so purpose is the director of providence. He is a provident man that orders his affairs prudently; i. e. so that nothing is wanting, nor any thing spent in waste. Both these are in the providence of God eminently: For, 1. It is all-sufficient; supplies all needs; gives all things pertaining to means and end. 2. It does nothing in vain, nothing superfluous

^a Psal. 37. 31. ^b Isa. 6. 5, 8. ^c Deut. 2. 29, 30. ^d Jer. 15. 11. ^e Isa. 45. 1, 5. ^f Psal. 93. 1. 97. 1, 75. 7. ^g Dan. 4. 35. ^h Matth. 6. 26.

frivolous or impertinent to his purpose. Things most usual to men, are levell'd at a set and certain end; *What the Lord speaks with his mouth, he fulfils with his hand*^h; and his act shall not vary a tittle from his decree: For *known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world*. Whence was it that *Esau* tarried so long at hunting, that he was over-faint? that *Jacob* was making pottage just when *Esau* comes in, which set his appetite on edge after it? but *that the purpose of God according to election might stand*; the elder must serve the younger; which now came to pass by the sale of his birth-right. And thus the providence of God makes even the profaneness of men subserve to his end. The Lord had determined to cast *Judah* and *Jerusalem* out of his sight for their obstinacy; and to this end (that is, to make way for it) *it came to pass, that Zedekiah rebelled against the king of Babylon*ⁱ: It was to fulfil the word of the Lord before declared^k, tho' that was far from the rebeller's intent. So he gave *Cyrus* all the kingdoms of the earth, that he might build his temple at *Jerusalem*; and it was to fulfil his purpose before also recorded, as is evident^l. In like manner *Herod*, *Pilate*, and the *Jews*, they all conspire the death of Christ, and each party on a several account, not thinking in the least to fulfil the determinate counsel of God; yet *that* was it which *providence* intended, as is plain by *Acts* ii. 23. As also the soldiers, in parting his garments, and piercing his side: It was their barbarous rudeness which put them upon it; but *providence* designed to make good a prophecy; *These things [therefore] the soldiers did*^m. All that God doth in the world, is the transcript or impression of his antient decrees.

3. *That the providence of God never fails of its end*. If he will work, who shall let it? For, *our God is in heaven, and doth whatsoever he will*ⁿ. And what will he work? *the things that are coming, and shall come*^o: *He hath both devised, and done it*^p. His purpose is to preserve his people; and therefore, *No weapon that's formed against them shall prosper: Whosoever gathers together against them, shall fall for their sake*^q: For, *As he hath purposed, so it shall stand*.

^h 1 Kings 8. 24. ⁱ 2 Kings 24. 20. ^k 2 Chron. 36. 21. ^l Jer. 22. 23.
^m John 19. 24. ⁿ Psalm 115. 3. ^o Isa. 44. 7. ^p Jer. 51. 12. ^q Isa.
 54. 15, 17.

And ^r. The scriptures abound with instances of this kind. As on the contrary, when the Lord will execute judgment, the thing shall be done, be the means never so weak and improbable; *Tho' the army of the Chaldeans were all wounded men, yet shall they burn Jerusalem with fire* ^r; *Shamgar shall kill six hundred men with an ox-goad* ^t; and *Samson a thousand with the jaw-bone of an ass* ^u. These things considered, and laid together, (tho' mostly referring to temporal things) do strongly inforce the argument for things of spiritual concernment; inasmuch as things of eternal moment are worthy of more peculiar regard and security.

Now, all a believer's exercises, which may seem to endanger him, are either from the guilt of sins committed, from the power of indwelling corruption, from Satan's temptation, or persecution from the world; none of which come on them *accidentally*, but as things *fore-appointed* of God, and for a good intent. It is *for the elect's sake that all things else have their being* ^x; and *are all caused to work together for their good* ^y: As namely, to humble them for sin; to wear them from the world; to indear JESUS CHRIST to them; to shew them the usefulness of ordinances; to exercise and try their graces; to purge out their dross; to enable them to succour others; to demonstrate the wisdom, power, and faithfulness of God towards them; to meeten them for glory; and to make them grone and long to be clothed-upon with their house from heaven: As might plentifully be made out by the scriptures, and the visible effects thereof upon those who have been exercised thereby. To instance a few particulars: *David*, after that great miscarriage in the matter of *Uriah*, with his broken bones upon it, walked the more humbly and warily all his days; he was also the more intent on that great duty of *teaching sinners the way of God* ^z. *Peter*, he also got ground by denying his Master: Thereby he came to see his own weakness; the need he had of Christ's support, and continual prayer for him; and we hear no more of his carnal confidence, after that: But, what a clamour and outcry does he make against our adversary the devil ^a! to warn others, by his own example, what danger they are in

R

by

^r Isa. 14. 24. ^s Jer. 37. 10. ^t Judges 3. 31. ^u Ch. 15. 15. ^x 2 Cor. 4. 15. ^y Rom. 8. 28. ^z Psalm 51. 13. ^a 1 Pet. 5. 8.

by a carnal confidence. And, doubtless, what the tempter got by Peter's fall, he lost the double of it by the after-watchfulness of others; for that's the designed end, to *strengthen, stablish, and settle them* ^b. Paul had a messenger of Satan let loose upon him, to buffet him; the end of which was to humble him, and to shew him the sufficiency of the grace of Christ. 'Tis likely also, that he got as much by that *thorn* in his flesh, as by his *rapture* and *revelation*: To be sure, they did well together, and pois'd him the better for his work. The like effect upon Job ^c. Mary Magdalene, the remembrance of the seven devils which once possess'd her, and of that love which cast them out; how did it heighten her love to Christ, and keep her heart in a melting frame! *She loved much, because much was forgiven her* ^d. The people's forty years travel through that great and terrible wilderness, among fiery serpents and scorpions; it was to *prove* them, and to *do them good* in the latter end ^e. They were also sent into captivity *for their good* ^f: This was *all the fruit* intended, *to take away their sin* ^g, and *to make them partakers of his holiness* ^h. These things indeed at present are physick which nature desires not; yet are they as needful in their season as our food, and in very faithfulness we must have them; which also is evident by the scope of of the new covenant, as will appear afterwards. Now, these things considered and laid together, I think it may be well inferred, that *all these things worketh God with man*, not to destroy him, but to *bring back his soul from the pit* ⁱ; they are all made to turn to their salvation; they have always triumphed over them, and been *more than conquerors through him that loved them* ^k, and ever shall. And if this be the fruit of all that doth or can befall a believer while in this world (and there's no more of evil or danger when this is done) then welcome let them be (by the grace of God) as another demonstration of their INVINCIBLE PERSEVERANCE. *Whoso is wise, and will observe these things; even they shall understand the loving-kindness of the Lord* ^l.

Arg.

^b 1 Pet. 5. 10. Luke 22. 31. ^c Job 23. 10. with Ch. 40. 4. & Ch. 42. 6.
^d Luke 7. 47. ^e Dent. 8. 15, 16. ^f Jer. 24. 5. ^g Isa. 27. 9. ^h Heb.
 12. 10. ⁱ Job 33. 29, 30. ^k Rom. 8. 37. ^l Psalm 107. 43.

Arg. IV. A fourth argument for the saints perseverance is built on their *union with Christ*, which is of that intimacy, that the scripture sets it forth by terms of nearest relation, as foundation and building, vine and branches, father and children, husband and spouse, head and members: Yea, they are *both* called (interchangeably) by the *same name*; he is called *Jacob*, and they are called *Christ* ^m. And (which is more, if more can be) he communicates to them *that title* which one would think *incommunicable*, viz. *The Lord our righteousness* ⁿ. And this union is such as can *never* be dissolved: There's the like oneness between Christ and them, as between the Father and Christ; as is plain by that passage of his prayer in the 17th *John*, ver. 21. *That they all may be one*, (how one?) *as thou Father are in me, and I in thee, that they may be one in us*. They are so near to him, that they are said to be *of his flesh and of his bones* ^o; as also, that they are *one spirit* ^p: He and they are actuated by the same Spirit, as the head and members of the same body are by one soul. And this is the reason why believers *cannot* walk after the flesh; *the Spirit of life which is in Christ Jesus* (as their root) *rules in them* ^q; they are *preserved in Christ* ^r, as *Noah* was in the ark, or as branches in their own stock. For this difference is still to be noted, that believers have not this life in themselves, as Christ hath; but they have it in him, which is *better* for them than if in their own keeping: For, being in him as in a root, it is *natural* to him to communicate to them, and as natural to them (by vertue of the divine nature communicated to them) to derive from him; and consequently, *because*, and while *he lives*, *they shall live also* ^s: *He that hath the Son, hath life* ^t; and they have it in a way of *right*; as he that is possessor of the soil, has right to all that grows upon it. All that is Christ's is theirs; there's is a happy commutation of interests; their debts, with the consequences thereof, are devolv'd upon him; and all that was his, imputed and communicated to them. And his care of them is such, that he will be able to say at the latter day, *Of all that thou hast given me, I have lost nothing* ^u: He will not leave a hoof

R 2

be.

^m Psalm 24. 6. with 1 Cor. 12. 12. ⁿ Jer. 23. 6. with 33. 16. ^o Eph. 5. 30. ^p 1 Cor. 6. 17. ^q Rom. 8. 2. ^r Jude ver. 1. ^s John 14. 19. ^t 1 John 5. 12. ^u John 17. 12.

behind. The *signet* on his right hand (men of shining out-sides) may possibly be pluck'd thence ^a; but the *least joint* of his finger shall not; no man that is *compos mentis* will suffer the *meanest* part of himself to gangrene and perish, if it be in his power to help it: How then should our Lord Christ? who, besides the natural affection he hath to those of his own body ^y, hath also received a commandment from the Father to keep them safe ^z, and is perfectly qualified in all respects to make it good. On this account, as well as others, they are *compleat in him* ^a. Believers are *so* one with Christ, that whatsoever he did, they are said to do it with him; *circumcised* with him ^b; *crucified* with him ^c; *buried* with him ^d; *rose* with him ^e; *ascended* with him ^f; and they *sit in heaven* with him ^g. It is no more possible for believers to miscarry finally, than for Christ himself to be held under the power of the grave; there is one *law* for them both. 'Tis a faithful saying, *If we be dead with him, we shall also live with him* ^h; *if we suffer with him, we shall be glorified together* ⁱ. As Christ once raised dies no more ^k; so none of those, raised with him, shall return any more to corruption: For he gave himself for his church, not only to sanctify and cleanse it *once*, but *once for all*; and to *present it without spot or wrinkle at the last day* ^l: *By that one offering, he perfected for ever them that are sanctified* ^m. These are those *sure mercies of David* recorded in the 55th of *Isaiah*, and explained in the 13th of the *Acts*.

It is not for nothing that our blessed Lord and Saviour so often repeats that good word and promise, concerning believers, (which surely he did, as being greatly pleas'd with the thoughts of it) *I will raise him up at the last day*; and, *I will raise him up at the last day*--- ⁿ. *q. d.* I will be with him unto the end of the world, and see him safe in heaven: And this may be said of it, (as by *Joseph to Pharaoh*) *The thing is doubled, because it is established of God, and he will bring it to pass* ^o.

Arg. V. Another argument for believers invincible perseverance is, That all the attributes of God do stand engaged for

^a Jer. 22. 24. ^y Eph. 5. 25. ^z John 6. 40. ^a Col. 2. 10. ^b Ver. 11. ^c Rom. 6. 6. ^d Ver. 4. ^e Ver. 5. ^f Eph. 4. 8. ^g Ch. 2. 6. ^h 2 Tim. 2. 11. ⁱ Rom. 8. 17. ^k Ch. 6. 9. ^l Eph. 5. 25, 26, 27. ^m Heb. 10. 14. ⁿ John 6. 39, 40, 44, 54. ^o Gen. 41. 32.

for it. *Vertue invincible* has undertaken it; therefore must it needs succeed.

1. **POWER.** In *Jer.* xxxii. 27. God's sovereign power over all flesh is laid down as the ground of their faith touching their return from captivity, and his giving them a new heart, and for his so keeping them, that they *should not depart from him any more*, as they had done ^p. So, when he would strengthen his fainting people, he styles himself, *the everlasting God, the Lord, the Creator of the ends of the earth, who fainteth not, neither is weary* ^q. And, which is yet more, his *right hand*, and the *arm of his strength*, are engaged by oath ^r. In the *2 Tim.* i. 12. the apostle argues the certainty of his salvation, from the power of God; (which he could not have done with any good reason or comfort, had not that power been engaged for it) *I am not ashamed.*—For *I know [whom] I have believed, and that he is [able] to keep that I have committed to him, against that day.* And he gives the like counsel to others, where he points at the [power] of God, *to make all grace abound in them* ^s. The calling also of the *Jews*, and grafting them into Christ, is laid on the *same rock*; for God is [able] to graft them in again ^t. In *Eph.* vi. he tells them what kind of enemies they were to wrestle with, viz. *principalities, and powers, and spiritual wickednesses in high places* ^u, a sort of adversaries too potent for spirits hous'd in clay: But, to harness them fit for the battle, he shews them a power that's *higher than those*, and indeed much more above them than they above us; and with *this* he would have them to invest themselves: *Be strong in the Lord, and in the [power of his might]* ^v. This is an armour compleat; aptly term'd, *the [whole] armour of God* ^w; and in this strong tower believers are safe. So likewise in *Eph.* i. to confirm them touching the hope of his calling, he brings in the [mighty power] of God, even *that exceeding greatness of his power, by which he raised Jesus Christ from the dead, and set him at his own right hand, far above all principalities and power, and putting all things under his feet* ^x: Wherein he sets forth Christ as a pattern of what God will do for believers; they shall be raised, and set above all, as he was. And

R 3

tho'

^p *Jer.* 32. 36, to 41. ^q *Isa.* 40. 28. ^r *Ch.* 62. 8. ^s *2 Cor.* 9. 8. ^t *Rom.* 11. 23. *Col.* 1. 11. ^u *Eph.* 6. 12. ^v *Jer.* 10. ^w *Jer.* 11. ^x *Ch.* 1. 12, 22.

tho' they sometimes fall (*for there is no man which sinneeth not*)^a, let it make them more wary, but not discourage them: For they shall not be [utterly] cast down^b; and this because the Lord upholdeth them with [his hand.] The archers may shoot at them, and sorely grieve them; yet shall their bow abide in strength, and the arms of their hands be made strong by the hands of the mighty God of Jacob^c. And well it is for us, that the divine power hath undertaken this difficult work, and that the scriptures do so clearly avouch it; for nothing less could be a buttress sufficient to stay our faith upon, touching our holding out to the end: But, because *he is strong in power, not one faileth*^d.

2. *WISDOM*. This is an ability to fit and direct means to their proper end. In matters of less concern, we find the Lord so laying his work, that it cannot miscarry: If therefore it be his good pleasure to ordain men to salvation, his wisdom requires that it be in such a way as is sure to succeed; and that all sorts of impediments be either prevented, or so overruled, as not to interrupt, but become subservient to, his great end. Having counted his cost, and paid it off, and also began to build; it behoves his wisdom to see that his work be done, and brought to perfection^e; and accordingly to provide suitable instruments, such as he knows will do, and yet not over-do, the thing intended: Much like to the husbandman's sorting his seed to the nature of the soil, and threshing instruments to the capacity of his grain; he will not use a wheel, where the rod will serve; nor a rod, where the wheel is needful: And this he hath from his God, who instructeth him to discretion^f. So the Lord stayeth his rough wind in the day of the east-wind^g: He doth not only design the end of a man's journey, but every step in it is of his ordering^h; The Lord preserveth his going out, and his coming inⁱ. In Isa. xxvi. 7. the Lord is said to weigh the path of the just; which is not meant only of his observing their works, and dispensing to them accordingly; but as prepondering what they are to do, and what is requisite for their doing of it, and apportioning their strength and assistance answerably. As, at making

^a 2 Chron. 6. 36. ^b Psalm 37. 24. ^c Gen. 49. 23, 24. ^d Isa. 40. 26.
^e Luke 14. 29, 30. ^f Isa. 28. 25, ---28. ^g Chap. 27. 8. ^h Psalm 37. 23.
ⁱ Job 31. 4. ^j Psalm 121. 8.

making the world, *He weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance*^k, that its parts might be of equal weight; or as one that's to run in a race, and must carry weights about him, it will be his wisdom to have them evenly pois'd: So the Lord sets one thing against another in our soul's concerns. *Paul* therefore brings in this wisdom of God, as well as his power, to help their faith touching their establishment^l. And the apostle *Jude*, in the close of his epistle, gives glory to God, *as the only [wise] God, upon the account of his keeping them from falling, and presenting them faultless before the presence of his glory*^m.

3. HONOUR. The concernment of God's honour is also an important argument for proof of this doctrine: The Lord's manner of dealing with his people of old, and the reason of it, is an instance above contradiction. The promise of giving them *Canaan* was not more absolute than the promise of salvation to believers; nor was it less clogged with conditions, threatnings and cautions (which were afterwards added:) But, the promise being once made absolute, *To thy seed will I give this land*ⁿ; the Lord held himself obliged in honour to make it good. How oft did he seem to be pouring out his wrath to destroy them? first in *Egypt*, then in the wilderness, &c.^o. And what kept it off, but the interest of his honour? This put him upon finding out ways to deliver them; *I wrought* (says he) *for my name's sake*^p: The Lord did, as it were, labour to suppress his righteous fury, incensed by their intolerable provocations: His name and honour were concerned, and that held his hands; he had once made an absolute promise, which therefore must be made good, tho' they made themselves never so unworthy of it. We likewise find in the 48th of *Isaiab*, that they had dealt very treacherously, than which nothing is more provoking: But says the Lord, *For my name's sake will I defer mine anger*: And again, *For mine own sake, even for [mine own sake] will I do it; for how should my name be polluted*^q? The Lord will overlook a thousand transgressions, rather than expose his name and honour to reproach, as once it was by a temporary suspension; to recover which, and that his name might be

R 4

fan.

^k *Isa.* 40. 12. ^l *Rom.* 16. 25, 27. ^m *Jude*, ver. 24, 25. ⁿ *Gen.* 12. 7. *Chap.* 15. 18. ^o *Ezek.* 20. 8, 13, 21, 22, 40. ^p *Per.* 14. ^q *Isa.* 48. 9, 11.

sanctified, he will bring them home again; yea, tho' it be in the eyes of men a thing *impossible*, and they themselves do think so likewise; for, *Our hope is lost, and we are cut off*, say they ^r; and again, *My hope is perished from the Lord* ^t. Whether at home or abroad, they still caused his *name* to be profaned; and, for this his *holy name*, he had pity on them ^t: For, if he should have cast them off for ever, it would have been said, that he did not foresee how unworthy a people they would be; or, he was not able to keep them in their own land, nor to bring them back again; or else, that he was changeable in his purposes, and not true to his word, &c. Some reflection or other they would cast upon him, which he would not bear. All which, and much more of like kind, is applicable to believers with respect to their perseverance.

4. *JUSTICE*, or *Righteousness*. There can hardly be found a firmer support, or more full consolation to believers, than that the *justice* of God is engaged to save them; for, *the righteous Lord loveth righteousness* ^u, and cannot deny himself. He would not justify any, no, not his very elect, but in a way consistent with his *justice*: For which cause, he set forth his Son a propitiation for sin. Surely then, having received the atonement, he will not expose his *justice* to censure, by leaving them in anywise obnoxious to condemnation. Salvation now is their *due*, his *grace* hath made it so, by both giving and accepting such a price for it, as engageth righteousness itself to save them; for, *who shall condemn, since 'tis Christ that died* ^x? It is as righteous a thing with God to give rest to his people, as tribulation to those that trouble them ^y. Paul therefore builds his expectation of the crown, upon this attribute as well as any other; *Henceforth is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord the [righteous] judge shall give me at that day* ^z. The *righteousness* of God secures to them their *holding out*, to *finish their course*, and to keep *the faith*, as well as the reward when their work is done. God is not *unrighteous* to forget his [peoples] *labour of love* ^{*}, much less [Christ's.] This gave the apostle to be persuaded better things of those he writes to, than to be subject to falling away.

^r Ezek. 37. 11. ^t Lam. 3. 18. ^u Ezek. 36. 20, 21. ^v Psal. 11. 7.
^x Rom. 8. 34. ^y 2 Thess. 1. 6, 7. ^z 2 Tim. 4. 8. ^{*} Heb. 6. 10.

way ^a. The blood of the everlasting covenant is engaged to make them perfect in every good work, to do his will ^b. Yea, they shall bring forth fruit in their old age ^c; and this, to declare that the Lord is upright, and no [unrighteousness] in him ^d.

5. The **FAITHFULNESS**, or truth of God, is also concern'd in the final perseverance of believers. For, having drawn them from all created bottoms, to a total reliance on himself; he cannot but give them that they have trusted him for. The Lord will not be to his people as that broken staff *Egypt* was to the *Jews*, to fail them at their greatest need; which is, when they are lost, driven away, broken and sick, and perhaps have no mind to return; as *Ephraim*, who went on forwardly ^e: Then is the fit time for the faithfulness of God to discover itself, by seeking them out, bringing them back, binding them up, healing and comforting them ^f. To heal their backslidings, as it shews the freeness of God's love, so his faithfulness. The Lord will not behold iniquity in *Jacob* ^g; i. e. he will not take notice of it, so as to recede from his word: For he could not but see their perverseness and murmurings, for which he punished them severely, and sometimes made as if he would disinherit them; but still he remembered his covenant, and that restrained it. The Lord had blessed, and therefore men could not reverse it, neither themselves by their insufferable contumacy, nor *Balaam* with his enchantments ^h. The Lord loveth judgment, (i. e. truth and faithfulness;) and therefore he forsaketh not his saints, they are preserved for ever ⁱ. The saints are in league with God, they have made a covenant with him by sacrifice ^k; and 'tis a league of his own propounding, by which he hath obliged himself to protect them. And, tho' men may break their compacts, the holy One of *Israel* will not; he is not man that he should lie, nor the son of man that he should repent ^l. *David* having made God his fortress, concludes from thence, that the name of God was engaged to lead and to guide him ^m. Those *Corinthians* were as liable to temptations as other men who fell by them; for they had strong remain-

^a Heb. 10. 9. ^b Chap. 13. 20, 21. ^c Psal. 92. 14. ^d Ver. 15. ^e Isa. 57. 17, 18. ^f Ezek. 34. 16. ^g Numb. 23. 21. ^h Ver. 20. ⁱ Psal. 37. 28. ^k Psal. 50. 5. ^l Numb. 23. 19. ^m Psal. 10. 1. with Psal 31. 3. 4.

den of corruption, (as appears by both the epistles) and a subtil adversary to observe and draw it out: Besides, they were highly gifted, and so the more ready to think themselves above the rank of ordinary Christians; than which nothing could more expose them to danger: But, notwithstanding all these disadvantages, they shall be kept; the *faithfulness* of God, that secures them, and shall confirm them unto the end ⁿ; for, *God is faithful* (says he) *by whom ye were called*. It is as if he had said, God would never have called you into the fellowship of his Son, if he had not resolved to keep you there. So again, he tells them, *God will not suffer them to be tempted above that they are able* ^o; and he brings it in as an inference from the *faithfulness* of God. He likewise lays the stress of his confidence for the *Thessalonians* being preserved blameless unto the coming of Christ, upon the same attribute; *Faithful is he that calleth you, who also will do it* ^p. And, when he would move the *Hebrews* to purpose to hold fast the profession of their faith without wavering, he uses the same engine still, [*Faithful*] *is he that promised* ^q. Peter, he directs the saints to commit their souls unto God, in well-doing, as unto a [*faithful*] Creator ^r. Now, the scripture always propounds to us such attributes and motives as are proper to the matter in hand: And therefore, in styling God, here, a faithful Creator; 'tis as much as to say, *He that hath wrought you for this self-same thing, is God* ^s; who is faithful to his purpose, or first intent of his work, and will therefore perfect it, notwithstanding the fiery trial you are to pass under ^t. You may therefore build upon it, and commit yourselves to him accordingly; for *his faithfulness shall not fail* ^u, and consequently not yours.

6. *MERCY*. This attribute also freely contributes to the saints perseverance. *Mercy* respects men in distress, to support and bring them out, not having of their own to help themselves: This none are so sensible of as believers; *them* therefore will mercy especially provide for, *Hos. xiv. 3. In thee the fatherless find mercy. Psalm lix 14. The God of mercy shall preserve me. Mercy is the name of God, and his glory* ^x. *Mercy is his way; All the paths of the Lord are*
mercy

ⁿ 1 Cor. 1. 8, 9. ^o 1 Cor. 10. 13. ^p 1 Thess. 5. 23, 24. ^q Heb. 10. 23.
^r 1 Pet. 4. 19. ^s 2 Cor. 5. 5. ^t 1 Pet. 4. 12. ^u Psalm 89. 33. ^x Exod. 34. 7.

mercy ⁷: And it is his pleasant path, called therefore *his delight* ⁸; it pleaseth him above any thing, yea, *he takes pleasure in them that hope in his mercy* ⁹. We may say, in a good sense, *His throne* (i. e. *his glory in the world*) *is upholden by mercy* ¹⁰. It is *mercy* that makes men to fear him ¹¹. The 136th Psalm throughout is an *encomium* of mercy, as *that* which doth all for us; and this, because it *endures for ever*. In the 138th Psalm the prophet grounds his confidence touching his perseverance, upon this attribute expressly, *viz.* that *God would perfect that which concerned him, because his [mercy] (which began the work) endureth for ever*. The great covenant is *founded* in mercy, and is therefore stiled, *the sure mercies of David*, Isa. lv. 3. I shall not add touching this attribute: For, if all the *rest* be on our side, (as you see they are) the *mercy* of God must needs be for us; for 'tis *that*, indeed, which hath engaged and brought in all the *rest*.

Arg. VI. The saints perseverance may also be argued from the *ends* of their *being*, with the *Author* of those ends: This the scripture puts weight upon. Their *ends* are to glorify God, and to be glorified with him; but neither of these can be attain'd without persevering: Not the first, for nothing so dishonours God as apostasy; not the latter, because such only as endure to the end shall be saved. They must therefore persevere, or those ends will be frustrate; which will not stand with the Author's interest or authority. That *these* were the *ends* of their *being*, is evident, Isa. xliii. 21. *These people have I formed for myself*; and v. 7. *I created him for my glory*. The apostle also is very express for it in 2 Cor. v. where, speaking of that divine building in the heavens prepared for believers, he tells us, *They were wrought for that self-same thing*. The manner of expression is worthy of remark: It is not barely said, *This end, or this thing, we were made for*; but, in effect, *This very thing, and nothing else*, (to be sure, *nothing less*) was the scope and end of our creation, both old and new, even of all God's workmanship upon us. And as evident it is, that God himself is the *Author* of those ends, and that *therefore* they cannot miscarry.

Upon

⁷ Psal. 25. 10. ⁸ Micah 7. 18. ⁹ Psal. 147. 11. ¹⁰ Prov. 20. 28.

¹¹ Psal. 130. 4.

Upon this ground the Lord would have his people to found an *undaunted* confidence; as may well be gather'd from his so frequent indigitating of it. In *Isa. xliii.* he thus fortifies them against the forest of evils; *Fear not, for [I] have redeemed thee; [I] have called thee.* And, *v. 7. [I] have created him; [I] have formed him; yea, [I] have made him, [I, even I the Lord.] v. 11. and chap. xli. 10. Fear thou not, for [I] am with thee, [I] will strengthen thee, [I] will help thee, yea [I] will uphold thee:* The emphasis lies in the person *active*, [*I*] *i. e.* I the LORD, (a note of infinite significancy and security to believers!) The apostle also in that *2 Cor. v.* that believers might know themselves *invincibly* secur'd, he points us to GOD, as the great Author of those important ends, and almighty Undertaker for their accomplishment; *He that wrought us for the self-same thing is GOD.* It is as if he had said, It is impossible we should lose the thing we were wrought for, because it is GOD that wrought us for it. It is not the designment of an idol, that is, of some ignorant, rash, fallible, or mutable agent, such a one as may possibly be surpris'd by unlook'd-for accidents, circumvented by a sublimer understanding, overborn by a power above him, or recede from his purpose, thro' levity and fickleness of his nature, &c. but it is GOD, who is *wise in heart, and mighty in strength*, *Job ix. 4.* It is he from whom all things that are have their being, and are perfectly under his rule and obedience. He had eternity before him, to lay his design surely; and accordingly, *He declareth the end from the beginning.* It is therefore as impossible for him either to do, or neglect to do, or suffer to be done, any thing whereby his purpose might suffer disappointment; as it is impossible that God should lie. He would never have set up those ends as the sum and upshot of his design, if he had not determin'd to see them made good. And therefore (as says the apostle) *We are always confident, that when absent from the body, we shall be present with the Lord, 2 Cor. v. 6, 8.* This is also further confirm'd by that compendious promise, *Jer. xxxi. 33. I will be their God, and they shall be my people.* Every word here hath a peculiar emphasis; 1. That he will be a [*God*] to them; 2. [*Their*] God; and, 3. [*For ever*]: This [*I will*] imports both a *fixed resolution*, and *time without limit.*

It is as if he had said, Tho' other lords *have had* the rule over you, and you have *still* a proneness to revolt to them, it shall not be; I will not be outed any more; I'll heal your backslidings, and be your *God still*: I'll carry it towards you, and for you, as becomes a *God* to do; and I will make you *such a people* as becometh *God* to own; *I will not be ashamed to be called your God*, Heb. xi. 16. It would indeed be both a disparagement and dissatisfaction to God, if his people should fail of *that* he made them for; which certainly cannot be, because God is theirs; and, if God be theirs, all things are theirs, both this world and that to come, 1 Cor. iii. 22, 23.

Arg. VII. Lastly, For the final perseverance of believers, a principal argument is fetch'd from the *sovereign decree of election*. I call it *sovereign*, partly because it is the *highest* manifestation of God's absolute dominion over his creatures in chusing whom he would, and passing by the rest; partly also, because all sorts of things whatsoever are subjected to it, and made subservient to its final accomplishment. And this I take for a principal reason why election is so frequently placed in eternity, (or before the foundation of the world) *viz.* to shew, that the very fabrick of the world, and all occurrences therein, were so contrived and framed in God's decree, as having election for their primary scope and end: That this first Cause is the *supreme* Moderator of *all intermediate* causes, and is itself subject to *none*. It was not any loveliness in elect persons which moved God to love them at first; so neither shall their unlovely backslidings deprive them of it, tho' it may be eclipsed by their own default, to the breaking of their bones. The Lord chose them for that blessed image of his own, which he would afterwards imprint upon them; and this he still prosecutes thro' all dispensations.

That elect nation the *Jews*, they apostatized from God, and did worse than any other; yet would not the Lord utterly cast them off. In *Samuel's* time their wickedness was very great; yet, saith he, (to stay them from *total* apostasy) *the Lord will not forsake you*: But what's the ground of that his confidence, and grand warranty? The very same that now we are upon; *The Lord will not forsake you, because [it hath pleased the Lord to make you his people:]* Not because they

they remembered their duty, and return'd to God; but because *he remembred for them his covenant*: In pursuance whereof, he long maintained their title, notwithstanding their often repeated forfeitures; and, when in captivity, brought them home again. And indeed, there's nothing so melts the heart of *those* in covenant with God, as that *the Lord should be pacified towards them after all their abominations* ^t. The manner of God's dealings with this people is especially instructive to help the faith of the spiritual election upon all occasions, as holding forth the *special* regard the Lord has for them because of his *covenant*; that tho' he may and will punish their iniquities, yet his loving-kindness he will not take from them. And he puts it still upon his having once chosen them, as ye have it in *Jer. xli. 9. I have chosen thee, and not cast thee away*. This latter clause [*and not cast thee away*] seems added to shew, that *his chusing* them was an *act irrepealable*: *q. d.* I knew beforehand what thou wouldst do, and how thou wouldst prove; and if I had meant ever to cast thee off, yea, if I had not resolved against it, I would not have chosen thee at all: But, since I have, be sure I'll stand by thee, *I will strengthen thee, I will help thee, yea, I will uphold thee with the right hand of my righteousness*.

It is true, the body of that nation, for their unbelief, are now broken off; there is a suspension of the outward part of the covenant: Not that God intends an utter rejection of them; for such as have part in the *special* election are always saved ^u, and the time will come when *all Israel* shall be saved: For, as touching the *election*, they are beloved still, tho' yet unborn. For their sakes it was, that *those days of tribulation were shortened*, *Mat. xxiv. 22.* which answers to that in *Isaiah lxxv. 8. Destroy it not, there is a blessing in it*. The Lord will not so much regard what they have done or deserved, as what his covenant is concerning *Abraham's seed*; which minding of his covenant is from the *unchangeableness* of his *purpose*: And therefore, tho' broken off at present, *they shall be grafted in again* ^x; tho' driven into all lands, scattered into corners, mingled with the heathen, and become so like them, as not to be known asunder; yet being his *chosen*, and within his *covenant*, he will bring them out of their holes, and

^t *Ezekiel 16. 62.* ^u *Rom. 11. 7.* ^x *Jer. 24.*

and gather them [one by one] ^v: He will do it so accurately, exactly, punctually, that *none* shall be wanting; *Tho' sifted among all nations, not [one] grain shall fall to the earth* ². The reservation mentioned in *Rom. xi.* was God's omnipotent safeguarding his elect, when the rest of the nation fell to idolatry: They had gone *all* as well as *some*, had not election held them back; 'tis therefore said to be [according] to the election of *grace*: Election was the pattern, and reservation the copy of it. And that this was not a single case, or restrain'd to that present time, is evident from *Mat. xxiv.* where our Saviour foretels, that the subtilty of deceivers, and temptations of the times, shall be such, and the torrent rise to that strength, that it will be *next to impossible* not to be carried away by it: But for the *elect* they are safeguarded; how? By the coming in of the *first* and *sovereign* cause, by the vertue of which, the whole force and influence of those *second causes* shall either be prevented, or removed, mitigated, inverted, shortned, or over-ruled ³; and the faith of his sealed ones so confirmed, that they shall not be hurt by them ^b; yea (and which is more) those very things, which are destructive to others, shall work life in them. This turn'd *Balaam's* curse into a blessing to *Israel* ^c, and *Paul's* affliction to his *salvation* ^d: They are to *them* a cause of *lifting up the head* ^e. And, if it were not so, the apostle could not exhort us to *count it all joy when we fall into divers temptations* ^f; but that in the midst thereof *he keepeth the feet of his saints* ^g: For (says God) *they are my people, children that will not lie* ^h; *q. d.* They are of those I have chosen and set apart for myself, and therefore they shall not frustrate my purpose in chusing them; which seems implied in the word [so] *so he was their saviour*; I will save them, because I have made them my people.

And further, 'tis worthy your notice, that this sovereign decree is always regnant; a kingdom that beareth rule over all, and shall [never] be broken ⁱ. *Psal. lxxxix. 34. My covenant will I not break, nor alter the thing that is gone out of my lips; my covenant shall stand fast with him, ver. 28.*

It

^v *Isa. 27. 12.* ² *Amos 9. 9.* ³ *Mat. 24. 21.* ^b *Ezek. 9. 6.* *Rev. 7. 3.*
^c *Dent. 23. 5.* ^d *Phil. 1. 19.* ^e *Luke 21. 28.* ^f *James 2. 1.* ^g *1 Sam. 2. 9.* ^h *Isa. 63. 8.* ⁱ *Dan. 2. 44.*

It is meant of the covenant made with *David* and his house, or rather with *Christ* and his spiritual seed, of whom *David* was a type. And, that we might have strong consolation, the Lord is pleased to bind it with an oath; *Once*, (i. e. once for all, and once for ever; it was so full, perfect, and absolute that it needed no alteration, amendment, or repetition) *Once have I sworn by my holiness, that I will not lie unto David*, ver. 35. And how impossible it was that this covenant should be broken, appears by *Jeremy*, who, speaking in the name of the Lord, delivers it thus; *If you can break my covenant of the day, and my covenant of the night, that there should not be day and night in their season; then may also my covenant be broken with David my servant* ^k: Here note, by the way, that day and night take their turns; but still it is in their season. And *David* himself says of it, that *it is a covenant [everlasting] ordered in all things, and [sure]* ^l; i. e. whatever might possibly fall in to interrupt it, there was *that order* observed in the composition of the covenant, and such a power laid up within it, as should certainly overrun and bear down those impediments, triumph over *all*, and hold on its way: (As all the tempests and tumults that happen in this lower world, can in nowise obstruct the course and harmony of the superior orbs) he therefore declares in high, yet humble expressions, that he desires no other or better security for his salvation. And it is not unlikely, that *David* and *Solomon* were both of them left to those great and grievous backslidings, to give proof of the *sureness* of this covenant; which indeed was sufficiently done by them, and tried to the uttermost: For they both broke the covenant on their part; and yet the covenant was not nulled: No thanks to them, but to that *sovereign grace* that had laid in provision before to prevent it, by making it *absolute* and *unrepealable*. Yet will not the Lord connive at their miscarriages; but, *If his children forsake my law and break my statutes, I will visit their transgressions with the rod, and their iniquity with stripes: [Nevertheless] my loving-kindness will I not utterly take from him, nor suffer [my] faithfulness to fail* ^m. There was indeed (at times) a seeming to *make void* this covenant ⁿ, and great complaints are made upon it (as well there might) but

^k Jer. 33. 20, 21. ^l 2 Sam. 23. 5. ^m Psalm 89. 31, 32, 33. ⁿ Ver. 39.

but it revives, and looks fresh again; joy comes in the morning, as is evident by the close of that psalm, *Blessed be the Lord for evermore, amen and amen!* Its return was the more welcome for its temporary absence; and therefore he meets it with a double gratulation, *amen and amen!* It was but in a little wrath that he hid his face from them, and that but for a moment of time; but, with everlasting kindness will I have mercy on thee, saith the Lord thy redeemer. The mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed;—but my kindness shall not depart from thee, neither shall the covenant of my peace be removed, saith the Lord that hath mercy on thee °. In *Jeremy* another impossibility is instanced, to shew the eternal validity of this covenant; Thus saith the Lord, If heaven above can be measured, and the foundations of the earth searched out beneath, I will also cast off all the seed of Israel, for all that they have done, saith the Lord ° The LORD (you see) has made himself both the *Alpha* and *Omega* of this great sentence; to shew, that both ends of the covenant are in his own hands.

By these scriptures (with many others) it is apparent, there shall be no failure on God's part, and consequently none at all, because he hath taken on himself the performance of the whole, not so as to exempt us from our duty, but reduce us to it, and carry us thro' it: Believers therefore shall be invincibly secured to the end of their faith, the salvation of of their souls.

Yet doth not this doctrine go free of contradiction; and truly, considering how plain and pertinent the scripture is for it, it may well be conjectur'd, that if the first impugnors of perseverance had not found themselves in a *toil*; and necessitated to oppose it, for the maintenance of other principles they had before espoused, and which would not stand with this, they would never have set themselves against it. But errors (like truths in *that*) do hang together, or, as links in a chain, the first mover draws the rest after it: But, I trust thro' help from above, all the objections that are laid against this doctrine, shall (by one hand or other) prove to its farther confirmation. The chief that have occurred to me are

S

these

° *Isaiah* 54 8, 10. ° *Jeremiah* 31. 37.

these that follow; and, if I had met with *any* more considerable, I hope I should not have shunn'd their trial.

Object. The doctrine of absolute perseverance deprives men of the sharpest bit which God hath given them, to curb the unregenerate part of the soul; we mean the fear and dread of eternal fire.

Answer. The law is good, if lawfully used; so is fear, in its time and place, but out of that it is as a bone out of joint. The law works by fear, as a school-master unto Christ: It is ordinarily the first occasion of our motion towards believing. The heir, whilst a child, may be under the tutorage of fear: But when faith is grown up, then cast out the bond-woman and her son; fear shall not be heir with faith: For, tho' it be a good servant, 'tis an ill master. For fear to predominate faith, is for servants to ride, while princes walk on the earth, which is an error the earth cannot bear ⁹. Believers (especially such as know themselves so to be) receive not the Spirit of bondage again to fear ¹: They are acted now by another principle, as a horse that is thoroughly broke and well wayed, it is better managed by a gentle hand, than a biting curb. Faith works by love; it is not henceforth the fear of wrath, but the sense of Christ's love in delivering from wrath, that both curbs the unregenerate part, and carries to higher acts of obedience than fear is capable of; altho', at times, all sorts of motives may be needful to keep us going, and the Lord for exercise of our graces, and other holy ends, may let the dearest of his children long conflict with their fears, under which he yet supports them, and brings them forth like gold at last. See *Ethan's* complaint, and the close he makes, in the 89th Psalm: See also that excellent treatise, *A child of light walking in darkness*, &c.

There be two sorts of fear; of God, and of the creature. *Creature-fear* believers are still called from, and with good reason, as ye will find after. *Godly fear* is quite another thing, 'tis a grace of the largest import: No saving grace, but *this* fear is put for it, or joined with it; which juncture shews its import in that place. 'Tis sometimes put for Faith, Gen. xxii. 12. with Heb. xi. 17. sometimes for love, Psal.

⁹ Eccl. 10. 5, 6, with Prov. 30. 21, 22. ¹ Rom. 8. 15,

Psal. cxxx. 4. with *Luke* vii. 47. For reverence also, *Psal.* lxxxix. 7. *Levit.* xix. 3. *Heb.* xii. 28. For vigilance and circumspection, 2 *Cor.* vii. 11. For subjection, or observance, *Mal.* i. 6. Holiness also is coupled with fear, 2 *Cor.* vii. 1. So is meekness, 1 *Pet.* iii. 15. So also is knowledge, wisdom, and good understanding, *Prov.* i. 7. *Psal.* cxi. 12. Sometimes the whole of religious worship is intended by it, *Judges* vi. 10. *Isa.* viii. 13. *Job* i. 1. & 8. This fear ariseth from the sight of God's holiness, greatness, just severity against sin, with the freeness of his grace, sureness of his covenant, fulness that is in Christ, and our interest in him, wherewith that slavish fear of hell will not consist. On this account, the [Lord our God] is said to be a [fearful name] *Deut.* xxviii. 58. i. e. 'Tis the only object worthy of our faith, love, reverence, and religious worship: And, according to this sense of the word, *Blessed is the man that feareth always.* But, touching the fear of hell, as supposed the best curb to sin, and promoter of perseverance; it ought to be rejected. How far it may influence an unregenerate person, as a curb to his lusts, is not the question here: But if *Saul* and *Judas* ran headlong to hell, with this bit in their mouths; then the sharpest bit is not the most effectual curb. Arguments against it are obvious; 1. That by which God purifies the heart, and whereby believers are strengthened to a concurrence with him in that work, is surely the properest curb to sin; that also which weakens and tends to destroy the root, must needs be more effectual than that which only hinders some puttings of it forth: But all this is done by faith; this lays the ax to the root. By faith God purifies the heart^t; and every one that hath this hope, purifieth himself as he is pure^t. There's no such vertue ascribed to the fear of hell; but plainly, the spirit of fear is opposed to the Spirit of love, of faith, and of a sound mind^u. 2. That which has the place of an end in Christ's delivering from enemies, can be no lett to perseverance; but, that we might serve God [without fear] has the place of an end in that deliverance^x. 3. That which the scripture holds forth as an help to perseverance, cannot be an hindrance to it;

S 2

but

^t *Acts* 15. 9. ^t 1 *John* 3. 3. ^u 2 *Tim.* 1. 7. ^x *Luke* 1. 74, 75.

but the scripture holds forth *faith and confidence* in God, as a principal help to perseverance ^v. 4. *That which irritates the unregenerate part, cannot be said to curb it; but this does the fear of wrath: When the commandment came, sin revived* ^z, i. e. it took occasion by the law's restraint, for the stronger resurgence against it; and so, the law *worketh wrath* ^a, as a torrent stopp'd in its course grows more impetuous. Cain was an instance of this ^b, and even Paul in his unregeneracy ^c: When thoroughly convinced of sin, if grace step not in as its guardian, the soul's undone. That scripture, *Matth. x. 28.* gives the objection no countenance; the fear there intended, is that which hath faith and love in it: *Fear not them which kill the body, but fear him that is able to destroy the soul and body in hell.* The two objects of fear he puts in the balance; to shew how little reason we have to balk our duty for fear of men, whose power can but reach to a bodily death; and how much more to fear him that has the keys of death and of hell, that is, who hath power to cast into hell, might justly have done it, and yet hath saved us from it: And this fear is love; as is evident by *Matth. x. 37.* where speaking of the same thing (*viz.* cleaving to Christ, parting with all for him) 'tis expressly called love; *He that loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy of me.* And, for ought that appears to the contrary, it might be the fear of hell that made the slothful servant to hide his talent; *I knew thee that thou art an hard man,—and [I was afraid]; and went and hid thy talent in the earth* ^d. 'Tis also to be observed, that, before the great tribunal, the [*fearful and unbelieving*] stand linked together ^e. But whatever influence the fear of hell may have upon persons *unregenerate*, as a curb to their lusts; the doctrine of *perseverance* deprives not of it; for *this* concerns only *believers*.

The objection is further excepted against;

1. Because it puts an *indignity* on the wisdom of God, as if he had taken from believers some expedient help to perseverance, by giving them *absolute* promises; whereas we should rather suspect our own understandings, and renounce those

^v Rom 6. 12. Heb. 3. 14. Ch. 10. 35. ^z Rom. 7. 9. ^a Ch. 4. 15. ^b Gen. 4. 5. ^c Rom 7. 10, 11. ^d Matth. 25. 24, 25. ^e Rev. 21. 8.

those opinions which necessitate such unnatural deductions to support them: For, do but separate the promises from their *absoluteness*, and their strength is gone; they would prove, as the law, *weak through the weakness of the flesh* ^f. The Lord knows that believers have the most difficult work, and deepest sense of their own insufficiency, and that nothing more weakens their hands than doubting and fears, and for *that very cause* hath made his promises *absolute*. Thus he armed *Joshua* to the battle; *There shall not any man be able to stand before thee all the days of thy life; I will not leave thee nor forsake thee*; and thence draws him an argument, to be *strong and of a good courage* ^g. Thus also *Samuel* (in the place fore-mentioned) when the people were greatly perplexed because of God's displeasure towards them; to confirm them in their duty, he comforts them against their *fears*: *Fear not; ye have done all this wickedness, yet turn not aside from following the Lord* ^h. And what's the strong reason by which he fixes them? *For the Lord [will not] forsake his people* ⁱ. *Paul* likewise exhorting believers to that great duty of keeping down sin, that it might not reign; because the sharpness and heat of the conflict might otherwise make them recoil, he gives them, as an high cordial, *assurance of victory*; tells them expressly, that *sin [shall not] have dominion over them* ^k. Of the same mind were *Peter* and *John*: The one directs to *give all diligence to make our calling and election [sure,]* and this as a principal means to *keep us from falling* ^l; and the other makes it the very scope of his whole epistle, that believers might *[know]* they have eternal life, and that they might *[go on]* in believing ^m. Which kind of arguments had been very improper and unduly applied, if giving them *assurance* touching the event, had not been a strengthening of them in their duty; and much more, if it would have proved an indulgence to the flesh.

2. Let *fear* be considered in its ordinary and natural effects; and 'twill easily appear, that nothing is less pleasing to God, or more unapt for the service of perseverance. As a man's principle is, such will be his obedience; slavish observance is the best that slavish fear can produce, which is

§ 3

noway

^f Rom. 8. 3. ^g Josh. 1. 5, 6. ^h 1 Sam. 12. 20. ⁱ Jer. 22. ^k Rom. 6. 14. ^l 2 Pet. 1. 10. ^m 1 John 5. 13.

noway acceptable to an ingenuous spirit: God loves a cheerful giver, not Samaritan worship, (for fear of lions) ⁿ. Such service will also be weak and wavering: For nothing so unsettles the mind as fear; it enervates the soul, and takes away its strength. Nabal's heart died within him for fear ^o; and the soldiers, that kept the sepulchre, were as dead men for fear ^p. The obedience, therefore, which comes from thence, can be but a dead obedience; the effect cannot rise higher than the cause. Pharaoh let Israel go, because of the plagues; which being a little removed, he repents his obedience, and chides himself for it ^q: And those hypocrites, tho' fearfulness had surpris'd them, remained hypocrites still ^r. This fear will also consist with the greatest impieties: Those very Samaritans, who thus feared the Lord, did also worship their graven images ^s.

3. Fear puts upon using unlawful means: Isaac to deny his wife ^t; David to lie, and feign himself mad ^u; Peter, and other holy men, to dissemble ^x. It sends men to Egypt for help, as it did the Jews ^y; yea, to hell, as it did Saul ^z. Therefore both Satan and wicked men are still endeavouring to put God's people in fear, as they would Nebemiah, whereby his work had ceased ^a. And Satan stood at Joshua's right hand to resist him, i. e. to accuse him; and so to put him in fear, because of his filthy garments, thereby to discourage him in the work of his office ^b.

4. Let fear be compared with its contrary, which is faith. This removes the mountain, while fear fixes it, yea, makes it seem to be, where no such thing is. Fear made the unbelieving spies to bring up an evil report of the good land, and to fancy impossibilities of obtaining it ^c: Faith made Caleb and Joshua magnanimous; Let us go up at once (say they) and possess it, for we are well able to overcome it ^d; yea, they shall be bread for us ^e. These two, who feared no miscarriage under an absolute promise, were carried in; all that doubted were shut out. Peter, while confident, walked on the waves; when he began to doubt, he began sink ^f. It was
faith

^o 2 Kings 17. 25. ^p 1 Sam. 25. 37. ^q Mat. 28. 4. ^r Exod. 14. 5.
^s IJa. 33. 14. ^t 2 Kings 17. 41. ^u Gen. 26. 7. ^x 1 Sam. 21. 13. ^y Gal.
 2. 12, 13. ^z IJa. 30. 2. ^a Hos. 7. 11. ^b 1 Sam. 28. 7. ^c Neh. 6. 13, 14, 19.
^d Zech. 3. 1. ^e Num. 13. 31. ^f Jer. 30. ^g Ch. 14. 9. ^h Mat. 14. 29, 30.

faith made those worthies *valiant to fight*, enabled one to chase a thousand ^e; when *fear* caused a thousand to flee at the rebuke of one, yea, at the *shaking of a leaf* ^h. An *handful* of obedience, springing from *faith* and *confidence* in God, is more acceptable to him, than *sheaves* and *loads* arising from *fear of wrath*. If *Paul*, for fear of hell, had given his body to be *burned*, it had been *nothing* ⁱ: But *faith* and *love* render small things of value with God, even the widow's mite, and a cup of cold water. And 'tis worthy of remark, that, when the fruits of the Spirit are reckoned up, *this fear* is not so much as named among them ^k. And certain it is, that the more sensible and lively our love is to God, the less will be our fear of hell; for *perfect love casts out fear*.

5. If *fear* were such an effectual curb to sin, or help to perseverance, there would not be such promises of *delivering* God's people from their fears, nor would they so affectionately bless God for their being delivered, nor so resolutely set themselves against it; neither would there be many commands and injunctions laid upon them, not to be afraid.

(1.) For commands against fear. *Fear not thou, O my servant Jacob*,—*for I will save thee: Fear thou not*,—*I will correct thee in measure* ^l, i. e. meetly and proportionably, according to the scope of my covenant, which is to save thee. The Lord would not have us think ourselves in danger of being cashier'd when we are chastened; which seems to be the import of that in *Isaiah*, *I have chosen thee, and not cast thee away; fear thou not* ^m. So, to the Hebrews, *Cast not away your confidence* ⁿ: And Christ to his disciples, *Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid* ^o; (nothing brings such perturbation of mind as fear.) And, *Fear not, little flock; (why?) it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom* ^p. Innumerable are the injunctions laid upon God's people against fear, *Isaiah* xxxv. 4. *Chap.* xliii. 5. *Chap.* xliv. 2. *Jer.* xxx. 10. *Joe*! ii. 21. *Zeph.* iii. 16. *Hag.* ii. 5. *Zeck.* viii. 13, 15. *Matth.* x. 28. *Acts* xxvii. 24. *Rev.* i. 17, &c. Therefore freedom from this fear is no impediment to perseverance.

S 4

(2.) Pro-

^e *Job.* 23. 10. ^h *Lev.* 26. 36. ⁱ *1 Cor.* 13. 3. ^k *Gal.* 5. 22, 23. ^l *Jer.* 45. 27, 28. ^m *Isa.* 41. 9, 10. ⁿ *Heb.* 10. 35. ^o *John* 14. 27. ^p *Luke* 12. 32.

(2.) Promises of delivering from fears. *Jacob shall be in quiet, and none shall make him afraid*^a: *He shall not be afraid of evil tidings*^b: *He shall be quiet from fear of evil*^c. The promise is not made to fear and fainting, but to faith and confidence; *Be of good courage, and he shall strengthen thy knees*^d. If it had been the mind of Christ that believers should still be under this fear, he would not have told them, *they are passed from death to life, and shall not come into condemnation*^e: *That they shall sit upon thrones*^f: *That their inheritance is reserved in heaven for them, and they kept for it, and that by the mighty power of God*^g. The result of all which is, that, *having these promises, we should cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God*^h.

(3.) Examples of christian resolution not to fear. *Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear none evil*^a. *Isa. l. 7. Therefore (that is, because the Lord God hath promised to help him; therefore) have I set my face as a flint, and I know that I shall not be confounded.* *Psaln lvi. 4. I will not fear what flesh can do unto me.* *And Psalm xlix. 5. Wherefore should I fear in the days of evil, when the iniquity of my heels shall compass me about?* These, if any thing, should have put him in fear; but his faith resolves against it, according to *Isa. xii. 2. I will trust, and not be afraid, i. e. he would not willingly admit the least mixture of fear with his faith; and good reason for it, since the joy of the Lord was his strength*^b.

(4.) Instances of thankfulness for deliverance from fears. *O magnify the Lord with me, and let us exalt his name together.* (But what's the occasion of this joyful triumph?) *I sought the Lord, and he heard me, and [delivered me from all my fears]*^c: *And therefore will I offer in his tabernacle sacrifices of joy; and the reason of it was, that God would hide him in his own pavilion*^d; that is, he would secure him from danger, and set him up above his fears: Which he could not, with any good reason, have rejoiced in, nor have prayed that God would restore him to the joys of his salvation, if the dread of

eternal

^a Jer. 30. 10. ^b Psalm 112. 7. ^c Prov. 1. 33. ^d Psalm 27. 14. ^e John 5. 24. ^f Matth. 19. 28. ^g 1 Pet. 1. 4, 5. ^h 2 Cor. 7. 1. ⁱ Psalm 23. 4. ^j Neh. 8. 10. ^k Psalm 43. 3, 4. ^l Psalm 37. 5, 6.

eternal fire had been so good a friend to perseverance. Scriptures might be multiplied: But, besides these, it is evident in experience, that nothing so elevates the spirit and courage of a man in great undertakings, as *assurance of success*; but while he is wavering, and doubtful *how* he shall speed, especially while he meditates *terrors*, and of them the *dreadfullest*, his hands are infeeble, nor has he his wits about him (as we use to speak) to discern and improve them, as otherwise he might. That which tends really to make a man *stedfast, unmoveable, and always to abound in the work of the Lord*, is not the fear of miscarrying, and losing all at last; but *faith*, and a certain knowledge that his labour shall not be in vain in the Lord, 1 Cor. xv. 58.

Object. If a man once believing cannot lose his faith; why is it said, *Let him that standeth take heed lest he fall*? and, *Look to yourselves, that we lose not the things we have wrought*? If no possibility of losing, what need such caution, and so great circumspection?

Answer. The maker of this objection hath elsewhere granted, that the obtaining of *Canaan* was sure to *Abraham's* seed, so as their unworthiness could not deprive them of it: And yet we find their induction and actual possession yoked (afterwards) with as many conditions, cautions and limitations, as the promise of salvation to believers anywhere is; and yet nevertheless certain. But, for more particular answer,

1. That a righteous man *may fall*, is evident; and as evident it is, that he *cannot fall finally*: For tho' he falls *seven times in a day*, as often does he rise again ^e; and this, because the Lord *upholdeth him with his hand* ^f: And again, the Lord *upholdeth all that fall* ^g; i. e. either he stays them when they are falling, or so orders and limits the matter, that they fall not into mischief, as others do; and to be sure he'll set them on their feet again: The absolute promise cannot be null'd or made uncertain by cautionary words elsewhere delivered. It cannot therefore be meant of a total and final falling-away, which the *scripture-current* expressly runs against.

2. There are considerations of great weight to make believers take heed of falling, without supposing their final apostasy, (as the danger of breaking a man's bones is ground sufficient

^a Prov. 24. 16. ^f Psalm 37. 24. ^g Psalm 145. 14.

sufficient for caution, tho' sure that his neck shall be safe; the dishonour done unto his father; the shame that is put upon Christ; grieving the Comforter; scandalizing the good ways of God; stumbling the weak; strengthening the wicked; the unfitting of him for his duty; interrupting his peace and communion with God, &c. every of which will weigh deep with a soul that is born of God.

3. The Lord does ordinarily bring about his purposes by means: Of which cautions are a part; and by which, as a means, he keeps off the evil caution'd against. In the 1 *John* ii. 28. the apostle exhorts them to *abide in Christ*; whom certain professors had relinquish'd, v. 19. And, as purposely intending to obviate this objection, he tells them, that *they shall abide in him*, ver. 27. whereby he strengthens them to their duty.

For the other place objected, (*viz. Look to yourselves, that we lose not the things we have wrought*;) it is one thing to lose for a time the *sense* and *comfort* of our state, as *David*, *Heman*, and others did; and another thing to lose the state itself, which a believer shall never do, as is shewn before. Of much like import is that in 2 *Pet.* i. 5, 6, 7, 8, 9. verses; where he exhorts them to *give all diligence, to add one grace to another*: And, to help them in their work, he tells them, 1. What advantages they shall have by their so doing; *They shall not be unfruitful in the knowledge of Jesus Christ, i. e.* it shall evidence to them that the knowledge they have is a *real* knowledge; which cannot be known from that which is *formal* only, but by such an effect. That also by this means it shall be increased; the using of things well, and to their proper end, being the readiest way to their improvement, according to *John* vii. 17. *He that will do my will, shall know of my doctrine.* 2. He then sets before them the loss they shall have in case of neglect, *They will become blind*, unable to see afar off, and forget that *they were purged from their old sins*: Remission will bring *obscurity*: That which was clear before, will now become clouded, and be as if it were not: It may *seem* to them, that they are short of that rest, which yet is sure to them; and so they'll be put to begin their work *anew*: Whereas, *if they do these things, they shall never fall, i. e.* they shall not fall from their *steadfastness*,

nor lose that clear sight and assurance which they now have, touching their good estate, viz. as being partakers of the divine nature, and purged from their old sins; which those neglects might put out of their sight, and so lose them the sense and comfort of what they had wrought.

Object. We read in John vi. 66. that many of Christ's disciples forsook him: In Timothy, of some, who, as concerning the faith, had made shipwreck: And of Simon Magus, who once believed, and was afterwards found in the bond of iniquity.

Ans^r. The objection has an answer sufficient made ready to its hand, in 1 John ii. 19. They went out from us, because they were not of us: For, if they had been of us, they would [no doubt] have continued with us. Seeming faith may really be lost, as theirs was; and real faith may seemingly be lost, as was the apostle's, Luke xxiv. 21. Seeming faith is lost really, because it was but seeming; real faith cannot be lost, because it is real. Yet we shall find, that that which is but seeming, is frequently call'd by the name of that it seems to be; as in Matthew xiii. 12. it is said, That which he [hath]: In Luke viii. 18. (speaking of the same thing) it is rendred, That which he seemeth to have. So those who forsook Christ, they were disciples but in shew; they never believed in truth, as appears by John vi. 64. Jesus knew from the beginning, who they were that believed not: And this (viz. because it was but a seeming faith they had) he gives as the reason of their now forsaking him. And for Simon Magus, the answer is as clear concerning him: Where let us consider,

1. That a man may be said to believe, and yet not be a believer; as a righteous man to sin, and yet not be a sinner, 1 John v. 18. To be a believer, is to be thorow-paced in faith, to believe all that is to be believed, and to have the heart united to it: Thus Simon believed not; and, if he had, he could not have thought the Holy Ghost vendible for money.

2. His faith seems to be only such a belief concerning Philip, as the Samaritans lately had concerning Simon, viz. that he was the great power of God. For finding himself over-matched by Philip, who cast out the spirits which he, perhaps, had possessed them with, he could not now but give the precedency to Philip, as having a greater power than himself;

self; and therefore he continued with Philip, wondering at what he did.

3. *Simon's* believing seems to be no more than an outward professional faith, taken up for by-respects, to preserve his interest and repute among the people, who now began to fall from him, and to follow *Philip*; whose disciple he himself will profess to be, rather than to be quite cashier'd. Besides, this profession of his might (in his conceit) be a step towards purchasing the gift of the Holy Ghost, which if he could obtain, he had been again in as good a condition both for reputation and profit as before.

If any shall say, We read not of this distinction of faith, into true and false; I answer, The scripture frequently speaks of persons and things, according to vulgar esteem, or what they profess'd themselves to be. *Abaz* is said to sacrifice to the gods of *Damascus* that smote him ^a; and yet neither were they gods, nor did they smite him: But 'tis spoke according to his own superstitious opinion of them. So those four hundred men, who prophesied before *Ahab*, they are called prophets ^b; not that they were so indeed, but because they so professed themselves, or because so reputed by *Ahab* and the people. A Prophet is one that is inspired by the Holy Ghost; which those men were not, but by a lying spirit ^c. Now, *Simon Magus* was no more a true believer, than those true prophets; nor his faith any more of the right kind, than their predictions true prophecies. We also find that the scripture makes the coming to pass of the thing foretold, to be the evidence of a true prophet: According to which rule, perseverance to salvation must demonstrate the truth of faith; and, wheresoever this follows not, there faith was but pretended; they profess to know God, but in works deny him ^d: As of the Samaritans before-mentioned, it is said, They feared the Lord; and presently after, that they feared [not] the Lord ^e: They feared him in show, but not in truth.

4. The foundation of God standeth sure; having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his ^f. He brings it in to comfort believers touching the sureness of their standing; when others, of as glorious out-sides, make shipwreck of the faith:

It

^a 2 Chron. 28. 23. ^b 1 Kings 22. 6. ^c Jer. 22. ^d Tit. 1. 16. ^e 2 Kings 17. 32, 34. ^f 2 Tim. 2. 19.

It stands sure, because *the Lord knoweth them that are his; he knows whom he hath chosen; for whom he hath received the atonement; whom he hath called, and caused to take hold of his covenant: And these shall surely be kept, notwithstanding the woful backslidings of others.*

Object. If one that believes not now, may have faith hereafter; then one that is now a believer, may lose his faith, and turn apostate.

Ans. It follows not, That because Christ can bind Satan, and cast him out; therefore Satan can do so by Christ. He can come into the devil's nursery, when he will; take a crab-stock, and transplant it, and graft it with a noble cyon: But Satan cannot come into God's vineyard, (which is a garden inclosed) and take thence what he pleaseth. One who is now dead in sin, may be quickned; but, being once alive, can die no more: It is Christ's own assertion, *He that liveth, and believeth in me, shall never die*, John xi. 26. which cannot be meant of any other but a *spiritual* death, which is all one with losing his faith.

Object. A righteous man may turn away from his righteousness; and that so, that he shall die for it, Ezek. xviii. 24.

Ans. There's a twofold righteousness, 1. Moral; such as Paul had before his conversion; *this* a man may continue in to the last, and yet not be saved. 2. There is a gospel-righteousness; (1.) *Imputed*; this is the righteousness of Christ, by which we are justified. (2.) *Infused*; this is the divine nature communicated by the Spirit of Christ, whereby we are sanctified. These two go inseparably, and can never be lost. But the righteousness, spoken of in the place objected, seems to be of the former sort, *viz. moral or outward* righteousness; for outward conformity to the law was the condition of their possessing the land of Canaan, with long life and prosperity in it: This (if retained) gave them a legal right to those promises; if they turned from it, they ran into a forfeiture: And lose it they might, for they had no promise that they should abide in it. But the new covenant undertakes for *that*, as is evident by comparing Jer. xxxi. 31, 33. with Chap. xxxii. 40. But if any will yet suppose the righteous man, spoken of in that 18th of Ezekiel, to be meant of a true believer, there is, I hope, in the answers foregoing sufficient to solve it.

But

But suppose a believer be taken away in his sin, (as perhaps *Josiah* was) and hath not time to repent of it. 1. It cannot be proved that this was the case with *Josiah*: He had time sufficient between his wounding and his death; as is evident by the story, 2 *Chron.* xxxv. 23, 24. But, 2. There was *that* in him that *would* have repented; and God reckons of a man according to what he *would* do. It being in *David's* heart to build him an house, it was accepted as if he had done it. The root of the matter is in every regenerate person, which, if it had time, would put forth itself in fruits: And therefore they shall not be dealt with as barren trees, which have not *that* substance in them.

Obj. *The promise of perseverance is not made to faith, that that shall not fail; but in reference to the favour of God, viz. that, if men go on to believe, they shall abide in his love.*

Ans. Thus to give the sense of the promise, is to enervate it, and make it speak but according to the covenant of works: It bereaves it wholly of that *betterness* the scripture ascribes to it in *Heb.* viii. 6,—10. It also renders the promise as speaking *fallaciously*, making shew of *that* it intends not: It would be as if he had said, You shall *keep* the favour of God, if you do not *lose* it. Besides, faith is the soul's coming to God: Unbelief its departing from him. The promise, therefore, that secures against departing from God, secures your *continuance* in believing; he that undertakes you shall be *crowned*, doth *virtually* undertake for your holding out to the end of your race.

Obj. *Others again, in interpreting the promises recorded in the 36th of Ezekiel, and 32d of Jeremiah, touching mens not departing from God, restrain them to the Jewish nation, and to the last days.*

Ans. To this I shall only say, That altho' some particular times and persons are more immediately concerned in the promises of the Old Testament (especially such as refer to temporal things) yet is there not one promise, but, in the spirituality of it, belongs to every one that belongs to Christ; that is, *Jews* in spirit. No scripture is of private interpretation; and therefore not to be confined to those particular times or persons, when and to whom they were delivered: They were

were written for the use of all ^a; and we find them accordingly applied in the New Testament. The promise made to *Josua*, touching the success of his warfare in *Canaan*, is by the apostle applied to believers in general, as an argument against over-much carefulness in a married estate, and for contentedness with our present condition ^b. So likewise the prophecy of *Isaiah*, touching the hypocrites of his time, is by Christ applied to the *Pharisees* ⁱ: And the promises made to the *Jews* in *Isa.* liv. 13. are applied to the *Gentiles* in *John* vi. 45.

Obj. *The doctrine of absolute perseverance lays the reins of security on the neck of the flesh, and of the old man in believers.*

Ans^r. For answer, 1. This objection is in effect the same with the first, only it speaks broader; which shews, that the farther men go in opposing the truth, the worse language they give it. That many who disbelieve the doctrine of perseverance, have given the flesh its full range and liberty, needs no proof: But, that any believer hath made the same impious use of it, will never be made out. 2. The objection deserves no quarter, because it highly reproaches the goodness and faithfulness of God, as if for a fish he had given his people a scorpion; for so it would be, if his giving them absolute promises would prove an indulgence to the flesh. 3. It also contradicts the known and constant way of holy mens arguing and inferring from absolute promises, and the highest assurance. See a few instances of this: *When Christ our life shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory*: The result of it is, *Mortify [therefore] your members which are upon the earth* ^k. Again, *[We know] that when he shall appear, we shall be like him*. And what is the fruit of this knowledge? *Every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself even as he is pure* ^l. The like ye have in the *Corinthians*: *For we [know] that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens*: Now, see the effect of this assurance; *[Wherefore] we labour, that whether present or absent, we may be accepted of him* ^m. In the next chapter he repeats the sum of the new covenant; *I will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the*

^a 1 Cor. 10. 11. ^b *Josb.* 1. 5. with *Heb* 13. 5. ⁱ *Isa.* 29. 13. with *Mat.* 23. 15, 16, 23. ^k *Col.* 3. 4, 5. ^l 1 *John* 3. 2, 3. ^m 2 *Cor.* 4. 5, 9.

the Lord Almighty ^a. Observe now the use he makes of it; (and all believers have the same mind) *Having therefore these promises, (absolute promises) let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God* ^o. Job [knew] that his Redeemer lived, and that he should live with him; and yet, as to holiness and integrity, *not a man like Job in all the earth*. And that holy man *Asaph* was fully assured of persevering infallibly; *Thou shalt guide me by thy counsel, and afterwards receive me to glory* ^p. This did not loosen the reins, but made him cleave closer to God, renouncing all but him and his service; *Whom have I in heaven but thee?* and, *It is good for me to draw near to God* ^q. The like frame of spirit we find in *David*, [*Surely*] *goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life*: His result also is, *I will dwell in the house of God for ever* ^r. And that these were not temporary fits and flashes, but from a settled principle, is further apparent by his manner of reasoning; *In time of trouble he shall hide me in his pavilion* (no safer place on earth nor in heaven) *and now shall my head be lifted up above mine enemies round about me* ^s. But what follows upon this mounted assurance? *Soul, take thy ease, eat, drink, and be merry?* O! no; but, [*Therefore*] *will I offer sacrifices of joy; I will sing, yea, I will sing praises unto the Lord* ^t! He was now upon his *high places*, out of the reach of danger; but did not grow remiss upon it, restrain prayer, and give over calling upon God; but falls the more fervently upon that which shall be the upshot of all in heaven: He would rather have been remiss *without* this assurance, as himself presently acknowledgeth; *I had fainted, unless I had believed to see the goodness of the Lord in the land of the living* ^u. So *Paul's* assurance of obtaining what he run for, was a mighty strengthening to him in his race: Who so crucified to the world as *Paul*? so abundant in all kind of service, or more ready to die for Christ, than he? who yet had the fullest assurance of holding out, and of receiving the crown of righteousness at last; and that nothing should separate him from it. By these ye may gather, that believers are of a nobler extract, than to love God *the less*, because he loves them *so much*; and

^a 2 Cor. 6. 18. ^o Chap. 7. 1. ^p Psal. 73. 24. ^q Jer. 25. 28. ^r Psal. 3. 6. ^s Psal. 27. 5. ^t Psal. 27. 6. ^u Jer. 13.

and that 'tis no trivial slander to insinuate, that believers (especially such as have assurance) are most exposed and given to backsliding: Which is, sure, an unnatural consequent of their being *sealed to the day of redemption*. Such objections do also argue the authors of them not well acquainted with the goodly ways of God, nor with that spiritual obliging sweetness that is found in them; which any one, who hath tasted thereof in truth, would not turn from, altho' his future happiness were not concerned in it. Nor do they consider the frame and nature of the new creature, which hath spiritual senses, fitted to discern what makes for its own preservation, and what against it. Had you fifteen years added to your life, and a *certainty* of it; would you therefore forsake your food, and disuse the ordinary means of preserving life? The *Jews* had an absolute promise, that God would save *Jerusalem* from the king of *Assyria*, who then besieged it: Did they set open their gates, and draw off their guards upon it? Sense and reason would teach them otherwise, which grace does not destroy, but perfect. 'Tis a spark of that heavenly fire, which cannot live out of its element, nor can all the waters under heaven quench it. 'Tis a participation of the divine nature, and so loves and hates, as the Father of it doth; and it would cleave to him in every state: *If he save me alive, I'll serve him; If he kill me, I'll yet trust in him*; in life and in death, I will be the Lord's. This is the natural disposition of the new creature, it favours only the things which are of God: And the higher tasted they are by assurance, the more is he aloft, and above the lure of carnal diversions, not to be governed or led by them. Therefore, let God be true, and his prophets and apostles be reckoned for faithful witnesses, and every one that speaks otherwise a liar.

The next thing in course is, to consider what improvement may be made of this doctrine; which one would surely conclude of very great usefulness, since the scriptures are so greatly concerned about it. In general, it affords matter of eminent support to believers, especially in *difficult* cases: It also evinceth matter of duty on the believer's part; and, from the examples fore-quoted, something of direction in reference to both, which I shall here put intermixedly.

Infer. I. Stand still, and behold the salvation of the Lord! and, at the sight of this great thing, say in your hearts with an holy astonishment, *What hath God wrought!* Let your souls be filled and enlarged with everlasting admirings of that grace (that sovereign grace) which has so impreguably secured the salvation of his chosen; that no manner of things, whether within them or without them, shall be able to defeat it, or hinder them of it; *no, not the gates of hell*: Nay, not so much as *one* of the stakes thereof shall be moved, and that for ever. *Shaken* you may be, and tossed with a tempest; but not *overturned*, because ye have an *eternal root*. *Election* is of that sovereignty, that it rules and over-rules all, both in heaven and earth: *Christ Jesus* our Saviour and Lord; the *Holy Ghost* our Sanctifier, Counsellor and Comforter; in all they have done, do, or will do, do still pursue that scope. All ordinances, providences, temptations, afflictions, and whatever can be named, (whether good or bad in itself) life, death, things present, and things to come, are all made subservient to the decree of election; and do all work together, to bring about its most glorious designment. If the course and conduct of *common* providences were lively delineated, it would yield an illustrious prospect: How much more the conduct, order, and end, of those *special* providences, which are proper to and conversant about election! When all the pieces thereof shall be brought together, and set in order, how beautiful will it be! Angels and men shall shout for the glory of it! Then it will be evident, God has done nothing in vain, or impertinent to your blessedness: That whatever hath befallen you here (however contrary to your present sense and opinion of it) was dispensed in very *faithfulness* to you: That if any of those manifold and seemingly cross occurrences, you have been exercised with, had been omitted, it would have been a blank in your story, a blot in your 'scutcheon of honour. When you shall see what contrivances have been against you; what art, subtilty, malice and power they were agitated with; how unable you were of yourselves to foresee, prevent, avoid, or repel them; and how all the attributes of God, and his providences, each one in its time and place (which was always most seasonable) came in to your rescue, retorting on your adversaries, and safe-guarding you; yea, how that which

was death in itself, was made to work life in you; how admirable and admirable will the story of it be! That, when your faith was weak, the Lord did not withdraw from you; that, when it was at its height and strength, he then did for you above all you could believe or think, and, through an unspeakable press of difficulties and contradictions, he carried on his work in you; even bearing you on eagles wings, until he had brought you to himself: How will you magnify his work, and admire it then! Begin it now.

Infer. II. Let us study more the knowledge and contents of this great truth of *believers invincible perseverance*; the rise, progress, and tendency of it, and what advantages it yields to us: Which are, indeed, many and very considerable.

1. As it is a part of the doctrine of election, which teacheth, that nothing in us, but grace and love in God, was the only original cause of our salvation: The knowledge whereof will work in the soul an holy ingenuity and love towards God, whom nothing offends but *sin*. *Simon* answered right, when he said, *He that had most forgiven him, would love most*, Luke vii. 43. whence it follows, that he who believes the free remission of all his sins from first to last, must *more* love God *more* than he who believeth only the pardon of those that are past, and *that* so as that they may all be charged upon him again; or if not, that yet he may possibly perish for those to come, perhaps in the last moment of his life: For he is not sure (nay, 'tis very doubtful, if dependent on his own natural will) that faith and repentance shall be his last act. Now, this grace of love being the strongest and most operative principle, he that is led by it must act accordingly, that is, vigorously and without weariness, as *Paul* did. And *Joseph* having received large tokens of God's love to him, and expecting more yet, argues against, and (with an holy disdain and sleight) puts by the temptation, *How can I do this, and sin against God, who hath dealt, and will deal so bountifully with me!* Divine love is of infinite efficacy,

2. As it teacheth the *soul* to depend upon *God* for its keeping, as having his almighty power absolutely engaged for it. Whereas, if the efficacy and event of all that *God* doth for us, should depend upon something to be done by myself, who am a frail creature, and prone to revolt; I should still be in

for, because still in danger of falling, and losing all at last : And this fear, being an enfeebling passion, must needs render my resistance, and all my endeavours, both irregular and weak : Whereas a magnanimous and fearless spirit, who sees himself clothed with a *divine power*, shall have his wits (as we say) more about him, to discern dangers and advantages ; and consequently, how to elchew the one, and improve the other.

3. As it gives assurance *our labour shall not be in vain*. This made those believing Hebrews to endure *that great fight of afflictions*, and to take joyfully the spoiling of their goods ; because they [knew] they had in heaven a better and more enduring substance. All manner of accomplishments put into one, and made your own, would not so invincibly steel your foreheads, and strengthen your hearts, as to be *sure of success*, and to come off conquerors at last : The apostle therefore brings it in as the highest encouragement in our Christian warfare ^a. And our blessed Lord himself (who of all others had the hardest task to perform) it made *his face as a flint*, because [he knew] he should not be confounded ^b.

Infer. III. Make it one and that a main part of your business, to foil and disprove the objections that are brought against this doctrine ; and your nearest way to it is by *growing in grace* ^c.

1. Lay aside and cast away every weight, especially the *sin* that doth most easily beset you ; your *bosom-sin*, whatever it be ; cast them to the moles and to the bats ; they are not fit mates for day-light creatures ^d. 'Tis a noble prize you run for ; therefore clog not yourself with any thing that may hinder or retard your pace. 2. Keep yourselves in the love of God ; maintain a spiritual sense of his love to you, and a lively answer of holy affections towards him. Whatever may tend to obscure or lessen your sense of it, have nothing to do with it ; keep yourself from idols : Let nothing have an interest in your love but God ; and all things else, but in subordination, and with respect to him only. 3. Watch against the beginnings and very first motions of *sin* ; nip it in the bud ; abstain from all appearance of evil ; and walk not on the brink of your liberty. 'Tis easier to keep out an invader, than

^a Rom. 6. 14. Chap. 8. 37. ^b Isa. 50. 7. ^c 2 Pet. 3. 18. with Chap. 1. from ver. 5. to 10. ^d 1 Thess. 5. 5, 6,

than to expel him being entred; to keep down a rebel, and prevent his rising, than to conquer him when he is up. Great and black clouds have small beginnings; the bigness of your hand, at first, may rise and spread so as to cover the whole heavens; therefore keep off *sin* at staff's end. 4. Be diligent and industrious in it. Think not, because it is God who performeth all things for you, that therefore you may sit still, or be remiss in your duty; your arms and armour were not provided to rust in your tent. There may be indeed such a juncture in providence, that it may be your duty, and consequently your strength, to sit still, as was theirs at the Red-sea^e: This is, when all farther motion is shut up to you; and then the Lord will do his work without you. But usually there's something to be done on our part. Tho' the Lord would go forth before *David*, and smite the *Philistines*, yet *David* must bestir himself^f. This thing is constantly to be affirmed, that *they who have believed in God, be careful to maintain good works*^g; And do it the rather, *to cut off occasion from them which desire occasion; that wherein they glory, they may be found even as we*^h. 5. Cleave to *Jesus Christ*, and to him only; and trust not to your holding of him, but to his holding of you. This did *David*, when he says, [*Thou*] *holdest me by my right hand*ⁱ. Follow him, as men follow the court, whose dependence is upon it. While following him, you cannot do amiss, nor want any good thing, whether for counsel, strength, or otherwise. 6. Forget what is behind, and press on towards perfection; that, if possible, you might attain to the resurrection of the dead, *i. e.* to be perfectly holy. Tho' perfectness, in the perfection of it, is not attainable here; yet the higher you aim, the higher shall your attainment be, and the farther off from losing what you have got. Keep the mark still in your eye, and shun whatever might intercept your sight of it. These are some of the ways to make your *calling* and *election* sure; and, if ye do these things, ye shall prove this doctrine to be true, and either prevent or retort those carnal and groundless calumpnies that are brought against it.

T 3

Infer.

^e Exod. 14. 13. ^f 2 Sam. 5. 24. ^g Tit. 3. 8. ^h 2 Cor. 11. 12. ⁱ Psal. 73. 23.

Exhort. IV. Since there are such arguments for believers perseverance, let us all so demean ourselves, that we may have them all stand on our side, for proof and evidence that we are of that happy remnant whom the *great God* hath set apart for himself, and whom he hath made and wrought for this self-same thing: And as it was his purpose, so let it be our spirit and practice, to glorify the riches of his *grace*.

1. If born of *God*, let us shew forth the virtues of our Father, and bear ourselves as his children, both towards him, and towards the world. Let us live upon him, and live to him; rejoicing always before him, first for *his* own blessedness, and then for *ours*, as derived from his, and by him reserved in heaven for us; and all, as designing to honour him as our Father. 2. If we have faith, let it appear by our works. It must be some *singular* thing that must distinguish us from other men: It is not profession, nor words, nor actions neither (as to the matter of them, and so far as visible to men) that will approve us believers; but the *principle* whence they grow, and the *end* they drive at: The result of *Abraham's* faith was, *to give glory to God*; and so will ours, if *Abraham's* seed. 3. Let us carry ourselves under all dispensations, not only quietly, but thankfully, and so as to answer *God's* end: Walk humbly; hate the thing that's evil; have the world under your feet; esteem precious of *Christ*; honour his ordinances; let every *grace* have its perfect work; and rejoice in hopes of that *glory*, which all these things are preparatory to. 4. If one with *Christ*, and he our Mediator, then let us walk as he walked; who held his own will always subject to his Father's, reckoning it *his meat to do his will*, and to *finish his work*: Let us also wait his advice and counsel in every business, and follow it; commit our cause to him, and interest him in all our concerns. 5. Apply yourselves to every attribute of *God*, according to the present occasion; and dwell upon them, and leave them not, until you have the *grace* and *help* intended by them. They are all made over to the heirs of *salvation*, to live upon: Let it not be said, that in the midst of our abundance we are in straits! 6. If made for the *glory* of *God*, make good your end: He is *glorious in holiness*, and by holiness only can you glorify him. Bear, therefore, on the forehead of your designs and con-

conversation, that royal inscription, HOLINESS TO THE LORD:] By this, you will set to your seal that God is true, and approve yourselves to be *children that will not lie*. 'Twill also be of singular use and service to yourselves, as to that other end of your being: That you have glorified God on the earth, will be a substantial argument that he will glorify you in the world to come ^k. For tho' your personal righteousness be not your title to the heavenly inheritance, yet your constant progression in holiness will be your evidence (next the immediate witnessings of the Spirit) that you have a title, and that your title is good. Since, therefore, we were made for and expect such things, *What manner of persons ought we to be in all holy conversation and godliness*? ^l 7. If under the covenant of grace, let us reckon ourselves strengthened with all might, and hold to it, as having all our salvation in it; both keeping, support, recovery and settlement, grace and glory: Not minding so much how any thing looks or feels at present, as the end it tends to; for, if the end be good, the means (as such) cannot be otherwise. And truly we cannot have a better evidence of our interest in this covenant, than a total devolving and casting ourselves upon it ^m.

And well it is for us (who find in ourselves so great a proneness to backslide) that our eternal condition doth not depend on ourselves, but upon that foundation of God mentioned in *Timothy*, where the apostle speaking of some who had made shipwreck of the faith, (lest true believers should faint in their minds, at the sight and apprehension of it) he tells them, that *nevertheless* (that is, notwithstanding this woful backsliding of some, perhaps of eminent profession, yet) *the foundation of God standeth sure*; *q. d.* They that are of this foundation are sure to be kept: And he confirms it with this seal, *The Lord knoweth them that are his*: He knows whom he hath chosen, and concerning whom he hath covenanted, that *they shall not depart from him*; and therefore he will not let them go (they shall be kept, as those seven thousand were, from bowing the knee to Baal:) Adding this caution withal, *that every one which nameth the name of the Lord, should depart from iniquity* ⁿ; Which, as it is a means

T 4

^k *John* 17. 4. ^l *2 Pet.* 3. 11. ^m *Isa.* 56. 4, 6. ⁿ *2 Tim.* 2. 19.

of God's appointing, to keep from apostasy; so it will be to them an evidence that they are of that foundation, and shall be kept. For, it being his *scope* to comfort believers against their misgivings, which arise from a sense of their own weakness, and a like aptness in themselves to revolt, he needs must use an argument suitable to such an end: And therefore, in saying [*The foundation of God standeth sure,*] he must intend believers standing sure upon it; for the standing sure of the foundation would be small comfort to us, if yet we might be blown off it, or sink besides it. Does God take care for *sparrows*? for *owen*? for *ravens*? much more for believing *souls*, who have committed themselves to his keeping. Let the *fowler* do all he can, not a *sparrow* shall fall to the ground. You'll say, Without the will of God they cannot: And the will of God is, that they shall not; *A thousand may fall at his side, and ten thousand at his right hand, but it shall not come nigh him* *. He that determined such a *sparrow* shall not fall, determined also to prevent that which would cause him to fall: And therefore, either the *fowler* shall not find the bird, or the bird shall discern his approach, or smell the powder, and be gone; or, if he shoot, he shall miss his mark; or, if he hit, it shall light on the feathers that will grow again, or on some fleshy part that may be licked whole; or perhaps it shall open an ulcer, that could not otherwise be cured. A believer's *heel* may be bruised, but his *vital parts* are out of reach, and therefore safe.

Infer. V. Let this doctrine of believers invincible perseverance in faith and holiness, strengthen our hearts against all sorts of doubts and fears which may arise from the presence of *indwelling sin*, with its frequent and sturdy insurrections; since *he that hath begun, will also perfect his work with power* †. Judge righteous judgment: Of *ourselves* indeed we cannot think worse than we deserve, but of our *state* we may: Therefore, for help in this case, consider,

1. That, tho' the new nature shall certainly expunge the old at *last*, the work is not perfected here. But take this for your present relief, that the best principle is still predominant,

and

* Psalm 91. 7. † Phil. 1. 6. ‡ 1 Thess. 1. 11.

and getting ground; and the old party shall never recover its wasting condition: For, the kingdom of God once in the heart, will surely work and spread itself, 'till the whole lump is favoured by it ^a. *To him that [bath] shall be given ^c: [He that bath life] shall have it more abundantly ^c: As it was God who girded you with strength, so he will make your way perfect ^c. Tho' faith and holiness be at present but as two little flocks of kids, and sin (like the Syrians army) fills the country, be not dismay'd; the king of Israel will clear the country of them, his Spirit shall lift up a standard against them ^a; and, tho' they come in like a flood, by him shall their proud waves be stayed ^a. The Lord says to you in this case, as he did to *Jeremy*, *I have made thee a defenced city, an iron pillar, and brazen walls against the whole land; they shall fight against thee, but [they] shall not prevail against thee ^d: Or, as once to his people, concerning the giant Og; Fear him not, for I will deliver him, and all his people, into thy hand ^e.**

2. This sickness is not unto death. The conflict is not to weaken or destroy, but for trial and improvement of, your faith and other graces; the very trial whereof is precious ^a, and shall be found so at last, both to the glory of him that tries you, and yours who are tried. *Abraham, David, Job*, and others, are pregnant examples of this; they came forth like gold, more pure, solid, and flexible. *David* indeed, tho' he held fast his confidence a great while, yet still being pursued and over-press'd, every day involv'd in danger anew, and having once admitted carnal reason into his council, he began to flag in his faith; *I shall one day perish*,— and, *All men are liars ^b*: But it was in his haste, not considering the sureness of an absolute promise; and therefore, when he had better weigh'd it, he confesses his fault, and recovers from it; and his faith was improved by his trial: For, being come again to itself, he comfortably concludes, that *goodness and mercy shall follow him all the days of his life*; and, notwithstanding his present exile, *he shall dwell in the house of the Lord for ever ^c.*

3. Be

^a Mat. 13. 31, 33. ^c Ch. 25. 29. ^e John 10. 10. ^d Psalm 18. 32.
^a Isa. 59. 19. ^x Job 38. 11. ^y Jer. 1. 18, 19. ^z Deut. 3. 2. ^z 1 Pet. 1. 7.
^b 1 Sam. 27. 1, Psalm 116. 11. ^c Psalm. 23. 7.

3. Be it always remembered, that God reckons of a man according to what his *mind* is; and you ought so also to reckon of yourself. This was *Paul's* course in *Rom. vii.* where he thus reasoneth; *Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me*^a. Before conversion it was *Saul*, but now 'tis *sin*. Believers may be led captive (at times) even after they have sworn fealty to their true Lord; But *still* they are his in their *mind*, and that's their mark. It is the same with that in *John*; *Whoever is born of God, doth not commit sin; and he cannot sin, because he is born of God*^e; i. e. He does not, nor he cannot sin; as the devil's children do; for their wills are in it, (which also is their mark) according to *John viii. 44.* *The lusts of your father [ye will do:]* But a regenerate person, *the evil he doth, he [allows not.]* And this is a staying consideration, that, if *with our mind we serve the law of God*, it shall not ruine us that *with our flesh we serve the law of sin*^f. But how shall I know it? If you be forced, you will cry out; and, if you cry, it is a *rape*, and shall not be charged to your account: Ye have the law for it, in *Deut. xxii. 25, 26, 27.* So he that kills a man *against his will* is not reckoned a murderer, nor worthy of death; albeit the act itself be the same that another man, whose *will* was in it, shall die for^g.

4. Believers are *trees of righteousness, and of the Lord's own planting*; and therefore *they shall not fear when beat cometh*^h. They have their autumns indeed (too often) and blighting winds, (perhaps in the spring-time too) and also luxuriant branches and suckers, proceeding from the old stock, which rob the good ones of their sap, and make their fruit less, both in bulk and beauty: But still their substance is in them, and therefore they revive and flourish again. And, while those suckers are nip'd and prun'd off, the true branches are preserv'd and cherish'dⁱ: *They shall bring forth fruit in their old age*^k. *They that are now (i. e. once; they that are once) the children of God*, shall never be otherwise, save only in a greater likeness to their Father^l. And tho' their living on him, and their likeness to him, be very weakly

same-

^a *Rom. 7. 20.* ^e *1 John 3. 9.* ^f *Rom. 7. 25.* ^g *Exod. 21. 13.* with *Deut. 19. 4, 6.* ^h *Jer. 17. 8.* ⁱ *John 17. 2.* ^k *Psal. 92. 14.* ^l *1 John*

^{3. 2, 9.} *Ch. 2. 27.* ² *John ver. 2.*

Sometimes, (as the natural life of infants is) yet, being *born*, they must be *kept*; and the *will* and *care* of their Father is to nurse them up to a *perfect man* ^m.

You'll say, perhaps, That they never had any such cause of complaint as you; and possibly it may be so. To be sure, you know not that they had: And those you compare yourself with, may have said as much of themselves; and they had the like cause, for our hearts are fashion'd alike; only, each one bests knows the plague of his own. *Agur*, a man of great wisdom and holiness, says of himself, that he was *more brutish than any man* ⁿ. But suppose it be true, that *others* corruptions have not broke out as yours have done; yet may not this put your faith to a stand, much less make you weary, recoil, or to faint in your minds: For the same grace that *prevented* them, can *pardon* you; and will, if you cast yourselves upon it. Ye may indeed be allowed to complain of your sins, for nothing else have ye to complain of; therefore complain and cry out as loud as you will, *O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from this body of death?* But withal, betake you to the same refuge that he did, and abide by it; *I thank God thro' Jesus Christ our Lord!* Rom. vii. 24, 25. Here you may triumph over all, both complaints and the causes of them.

It must always be granted, that to deal with sin, *comb'd*, *intrench'd* and *fortify'd* as it is, is a great undertaking, and yet must be undertook, and gone through with too; there is no retreat to be sounded, nor armour provided for your back; every child of *Adam* must either kill or be kill'd in this combat; there's no compounding the difference, nor discharge in this warfare, 'till the day be perfectly won: But what a recruit is there levied, and always stands ready, as a sure reserve! that, *tho' the conflict be sharp, the success is sure*. And, in order thereto, (amongst other rules and articles of war) bear in mind these few following. (1.) Intangle not yourself; but shun and avoid whatever may prove a clog, or unfit you for duty. (2.) Exercise yourself in handling your spiritual arms, especially that of your faith. (3.) Stand on your guard watchfully; that ye be not surprised by sudden excursions, or under pretence of friendship. (4.) Arm yourself

self with the same mind that was in Christ ; set your face as a flint, and conclude that *ye shall not be confounded.* (5.) Submit to the place your General hath set you in : It must have been some-body's lot, and why not yours ? and the hotter it is, the more honourable : Remembring withal, that when the *temptation* was appointed, then also was ordained *a way to escape* ; and this you are told of before-hand, that you *might be able to bear it.* 1 Cor. x. 13. (6.) Look that ye fight with *proper* weapons ; which are only to be had at the covenant of grace, and the cross of Christ ; and *there* they are never wanting : And be sure you go not down to the *Philistines*, either to forge or sharpen. (7.) Fight not as one that beats the air ; but as having indeed a sturdy adversary to deal with, whom yet you are *sure to overcome.* (8.) Look still on your Captain, to observe what he *says* and *does*, and *do* likewise : To take up the cross, and endure hardship, are necessary accutements for a soldier of Christ. (9.) Wait on the Lord to renew your strength ; who then bestirs himself most, when your strength is gone ; he then lays hold upon shield and buckler, and stands up for your help, *Psal. xxxv. 2.* (10.) *Lastly*, (and to influence all) Mind the Lord of his *covenant* ; even *then*, when yourself perhaps think on it with trouble, as doubting your interest in it. Pray him to remember it for you, and with the same good-will wherewith he made it : Beseech him to look on his bow in the cloud, which himself hath set there, as a sure sign between him and you, that tho' the skies be red and lowring, the clouds return after the rain, and the billows go over your head, you shall not be deluged by them : By this it is that ye are hedged about, and walled up to heaven. Therefore stand not like men in suspense, as unresolved to fall on, or doubtful how to come off ; but on, on, the day is your own ; the Lord of hosts pursues them ; and *let all the sons of God shout for joy.*

Infer. VI. Since believers only are interested in the covenant, and that faith is a necessary instrument which the covenant will not work without, and without which you cannot work with it, nor see your interest in it, look well to your faith : First, that it be of the right kind, such as renounces self, and lives upon grace ; and then, having found it such, be

be sure ye keep it well, and improve it to the utmost. Two uses, especially, are to be made of it; 1. As your *shield*, to supply the place of all other pieces of your armour when broken or loose, as well as to safeguard them when they are whole and tight about you. If your helmet be out of the way, and fiery darts come pouring down, hold up your faith between your head and them: Faith is the truest quench-coal to the fire of hell. If your sword be forgot, or laid aside, or wants an edge, &c. your shield, if well applied, will retort your enemy's weapons on his own head. 2. Faith is your spiritual optick, which shews you things of *greatest* moment, and *not otherwise* visible: Even chariots and horsemen of *fire* are not discernible without it. If temptations from the world do endanger you, turn your faith that way, and thro' it view and consider how shallow and short-lived the pleasures of it are, and how momentary your sufferings. Then look at the world to come, the glory of it, and your interest in it, and how much your crown will be brightned by the trials you have passed under here; and dwell on the contemplation of it. Bend not your eye so much on the peril and length of your passage, as on the long'd-for shore that lies beyond it; and reckon the surges of that dreadful gulph, which is yet betwixt you and it, but as so many strokes to waite you thither. This was the course that *Moses* took °, and Christ himself °. Nothing so blunts the edge of Satan's temptations, or the world's, as this faith of God's elect: Therefore see that you hold fast your faith, keep it as your life, (keep that, and it will keep you) and let it not go until you die. Then indeed it will leave you, because then it will have done you all the service it can, even the whole of what it was ordained for. But, shall faith then be dissolved and go to nothing? I would rather express it as the apostle doth the state of the saints that shall be found alive at Christ's coming, *They shall not die, but they shall be changed* ¶. Faith shall then be turned into *fight*, and we shall have the real presence, full possession, and perfect fruition of that blessedness we have believed and hoped for. And then shall we say to our glorious Redeemer, Thou art the God that hast fed me all my life long: Thy flesh has been meat indeed, and thy blood drink indeed: Many a good

° Heb. 11, 26. ° Chap. 12, 2. ¶ 1 Cor. 15: 51,

meat have I had, upon it in the valley of *Bach*; even feasts of fat things, and wine on the lees: Other bridegrooms and favourites have done worthily, but thou excellest them all; they set forth their best at *first*, but thou hast kept the good wine until *NOW*!

Infer. VII. Gather hence, both the *reason* and *rationality* of the *saints* desires to be dissolved ^r. They *knew*, that when this earthly tabernacle went down, they had a better and more *capacious* building in heaven ^r: They also found, that *spirits* dwelling in *flesh* are too much straitned and infirm, either to bear the glory they were made for, or to express an answerable thankfulness for it; and for this they groined, not to be unclothed, as weary of their present state, but to be clothed upon with their house from heaven ^r. They were *NOW* the *sons of God* ^u; but what they *should be*, and fain would be, did not appear to them, nor could, till the vail was rent, which hung (as yet) between them and the *holy of holies*. The first-fruits of the *Spirit* ^x, which were both an *earnest* and *foretaste* of future glory ^y, inspir'd them with fervent desires of *liberty*; that *glorious liberty* which belonged to them, as being the *sons of God* ^z. They had by faith laid hold on eternal life: This they had still in their eye, and earnestly pursued; and so intent they were upon it, that they even *forgot* what was behind ^a, tho' very memorable in its time: The *much* they had attained, they counted for *nothing* to what was coming; nor reckoned for any cost, to gain that inestimable pearl, *viz.* the *prize of the high calling of God in Christ* ^b. This they knew was a thing too big for mortal senses, tho' as highly refined and sublimated as capable of while mortal; and therefore longed for that day when immortality shall be their clothing. The love of God, shed abroad in their hearts ^c, had given such a divine tincture, and so transformed and widen'd their *souls*, as nothing could satisfy but that immense deep from whence it came. They knew, that, *when Christ their life should appear, they should be like him, and should see him as he is* ^d; Not under *shadows*, as of old; nor in a *state of humiliation*,

33

^r Phil. 1. 23. ^s 2 Cor. 5. 1, 2. ^t Ver. 4. ^u 1 John 3. 2. ^x Rom. 8. 23. ^y 2 Cor. 1. 22. ^z Eph. 1. 24. ^a Rom. 8. 21. ^b Phil. 3. 13. ^c Phil. 3. 14. ^d Rom. 8. 5. ^e Col. 3. 4.

as when upon earth; nor, as since, under *memorials* and *representations*; but in his *state of glory*: The *light* of which would transform them into his image *indeed*; and 'till then they could not say, *It is enough*. They knew, that the very quintessence of heavenly beatitude consists in the vision of God; and that heaven itself, with all that innumerable company of angels, and spirits of just men made perfect, (tho' a very glorious and desirable society) would not satisfy heaven-born souls, if the Lord himself were not there in his glory: Hence those holy exclamations and outcries, *When have I in heaven but thee* *! and, *When shall I come and appear before God* †! Good Jacob would go and see his beloved Joseph before he died; and these would die, to go and see theirs. Thus does the kingdom of heaven (as it were) *suffer violence* a second time from the heirs of *salvation*; they know it is theirs, and that they were wrought for that self-same thing; and, being theirs, they might lawfully take it by force upon all carnal impediments ‡.

Infer. VIII. To close all, you have seen what Paul and others did; go you and do likewise: *Hasten to the day of God* ^h, and wait for it, as they that watch for the morning.

1. *Affectionately*, as a thing greatly desirable, especially after a dark and toilsom night.
2. *Patiently*, and with *quietness*; not precipitating, but as knowing it will come, and that in the fittest time.
3. *Attentively*, as not willing to lose the smallest sound of your Master's feet.
4. With *diligence* also and *preparedness*, that neither oil nor *lighting* may be to seek when the cry is made. Be always ready, and then grone: Grone (I say) for that day of glory, when life and immortality shall be brought to light in perfection; when yourself, with all the elect of God, meeting in that great and general assembly, the church of the first-born which are written in heaven ⁱ, may be entirely, universally, and everlastingly taken up in admiring *electing love*, which so gloriously and happily shall have wrought all our works for us, and brought us to the ultimate end it designed us for; which was, to be ever with the Lord; to see him as he is; and to experience the sum of that great petition in the 17th of John, *They*

* *Psal.* 73. 25. † *Psal.* 42. 2. ‡ *Mat.* 11. 12. § *Cor.* 5. 5. ^h 2 *Pet.* 1. 12. ⁱ *Heb.* 12. 23.

A Practical Discourse, &c.

*And they may be one in us ¹. And, in your way thither, carry the assurance still before you, that the same hands which laid the foundation, will also lay the top-stone, and that with *flourings*; and you shall lift up to eternity that loud and joyful acclamation, *Grace, grace unto it ¹. Happy art thou, O Israel; who is like unto thee, O people saved by the Lord, the shield of thine help, and the sword of thine excellency! All thine enemies shall be found liars unto thee, and thou shalt tread upon their high places ²! And, which is more than angels and men can utter besides, GOD shall be all in all ³! To proclaim which, was the end of this work. Amen.**

¹ John 17. 21, 26. ¹ Zech. 4. 7, 9. ² Dent. 33. 29. 2 Sam. 22. 1, &c.
³ 1 Cor. 5. 28.

FINIS.



